RECONSTRUCTING THE NEW MODEL ARMY

Volume 2: Regimental Lists 1649 to 1663

MALCOLM WANKLYN

Century of the Soldier 1618-1721

No.8

RECONSTRUCTING THE NEW MODEL ARMY

Volume 2

Regimental Lists 1649 to 1663

Malcolm Wanklyn

'This is the Century of the Soldier', Falvio Testir, Poet, 1641

Helion & Company

Helion & Company Limited
Unit 8 Amherst Business Centre
Budbrooke Road
Warwick
CV34 5WE
England
Tel. 01926 499619
Email: info@helion.co.uk
Website: www.helion.co.uk
Twitter: @helionbooks
blog.helion.co.uk/

Designed and typeset by Farr out Publications, Wokingham, Berkshire
eBook conversion by Mach 3 Solutions Ltd (www.mach3solutions.co.uk)
Cover designed by Paul Hewitt, Battlefield Design (www.battlefield-design.co.uk)

Text © Malcolm Wanklyn 2016
Cover artwork by Peter Dennis © Helion & Company Ltd 2016

eISBN 978-1-914377-71-6

British Library Cataloguing-in-Publication Data.
A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form, or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the express written consent of Helion & Company Limited.

For details of other military history titles published by Helion & Company Limited contact the above address, or visit our website: http://www.helion.co.uk.

We always welcome receiving book proposals from prospective authors.

Contents

Acknowledgements 6
Corrections to Volume 1 of *Reconstructing the New Model Army* 7

Part I Introduction
1 Context 11
2 The Regimental Listings 14
3 Cromwell's Armies – the Imperial Dimension 19
4 The New Model Army and the End of the English Republic 28

Part II The Regimental Listings: England and Scotland 1650-1656
Company and Troop Commanders: 30 June 1650 43
Company and Troop Commanders: October 1651 60
New Model Army Regiments in circa November 1656 84

Part III The Regimental Listings: England and Scotland 1658-1660
Company and Troop Commanders: October 1658 101
Company and Troop Commanders: Late September 1659 116
Company and Troop Commanders: 17 February 1660 133
Company and Troop Commanders: Late April 1660 (A) and after (B) 151

Part IV The Regimental Listings: Ireland
Company and Troop Commanders June 1649-May 1650 179
Company and Troop Commanders June 1650 to October 1653 198
Company and Troop Commanders November 1653 to September 1655 228
Company and Troop Commanders October 1655 to June 1659 238
Company and Troop Commanders July to December 1659 247

Part V Appendices

I	Colonel Robert Overton's Regiments	253
II	Colonel John Okey's Regiment	255
III	Regiments raised for the Scottish Campaign disbanded in 1651-2	256
IV	The Irish brigade in England and Scotland in 1654-5	260
V	The Irish Brigade in England 1659-60	261
VI	The Army in Ireland in 1660-63	263
VII	Company and Troop Commanders in Post Late October 1659 to Mid-February 1660	273

Select Bibliography 275
Index of Army Officers' Names 276

Dedication

To Jean, Jon, Julia, Luka, Norman, Cagney and Lacey, the other members of my immediate family. I include the three cats as from time to time they distracted me whilst I was working by demanding food or doing unmentionable things to papers elsewhere in the room. I thank them for breaking my chain of thought and thus unwittingly giving rise to insights which might not otherwise have come into my mind.

Acknowledgements

My thanks to colleagues and friends who have helped me complete this volume: Professor Peter Gaunt, Dr. Stephen Roberts, Charles Singleton, Simon Marsh, and Alan Turton. I am also most grateful to the staff of The National Archives, the Bodleian Library and the British Library, but most particularly to Dr. Joanna Parker, Librarian of Worcester College, Oxford for lending me the library's microfilms of the Clarke Papers during the spring of 2013 when my wife's illness made it impossible for me to visit archives at any distance from Wolverhampton. Finally I thank the History Research Committee of my university for its generous support.

I would also like to thank Dr. Mark Bainbridge, who succeeded Dr Joanna Parker as librarian of Worcester College, Oxford on her retirement in 2015, for the excellent welcome I receive when I ask to look yet again at the Clarke Manuscripts, and also to Steve Ede-Borrett and the late Bill Braham of the Pike and Shot Society for their assistance with source materials post 1660.

Corrections to Volume 1 of *Reconstructing the New Model Army*

Research for volume two has enabled me to remove some of the uncertainties from Volume 1 which were indicated by the bolding of an entry in the tables or a question mark. They are as follows:

The following officers' names should not be bolded in the listing of junior officers for 1647-50 as they are known to have served in their respective regiments in the early sixteen-fifties: John Miller 1st regiment of foot; Roger Lewis 10th regiment of foot; Thomas Gibson 2nd regiment of horse; Edmund Tapp 3rd regiment of horse; Nathaniel Phillips 4th regiment of horse.

William Collinson's name should be removed from the captain lieutenants on pages 103 and 136. He had served at that rank in the regiment which George Fenwick commanded before being transferred to the 11th regiment of foot in succession to Robert Overton. The follow-up to this is that Matthew Fenn's name should be unbolded.

In the same table Robert Anderson's name should be unbolded as his service in the regiment extended into the sixteen-fifties.

The name of the lieutenant in the 7th regiment of horse on pages 15, 143 and169 was Edmund, not Edward Lisle.

William Hubbard did not become a captain in the 16th regiment of horse until after the Scottish campaign of 1650-51. There was a vacancy in the 6th troop in 5/49. For this see Worcester College, Oxford, Clarke Manuscript 67, forces for Ireland, unfol.

It is highly likely that Henry Whittle of the 7th regiment of foot served as Captain Crosse's lieutenant: Spring, *Eastern Association*, p. 97. He probably took over Crosse's company when he was killed at the siege of Sherborne in September 1645.

It is highly likely that Henry Whittle of the 7th regiment of foot served as Captain Crosse's lieutenant. He probably took over the company when Crosse was killed at the siege of Sherborne in September 1645. For this see L. Spring, *The Regiments of the Eastern Association*, p. 98.

Part I

Introduction

1

Context

When I began writing *Reconstructing the New Model Army* I had no intention of going beyond the summer of 1649. The issues which caused me to shift the direction of my research from generalship in the British Wars to the officers of the New Model Army were only germane to the first four years of that army's existence. However, a new incentive emerged from reading that excellent book, Henry Reece's *The Army in Cromwellian England* (Oxford, 2013). When discussing the reasons why the army failed in early 1660 to spring to the defence of the republic it had created eleven years earlier, Reece emphasised the deleterious effects of successive purges of the officer corps beginning with the fall of the Protectorate in May 1659.[1] However, it was clear that some of the evidence that he used to underpin this section of his argument was limited and therefore possibly unrepresentative.[2]

At the time, however, creating army listings on the same lines as those in Volume 1 seemed out of the question, as the principal sources I was using did not extend into the sixteen-fifties. Entries in Sir Thomas Fairfax's commissions' book ceased when he resigned as lord general in late June 1650 and Oliver Cromwell's commissions' book has not survived.[3] The claims for pay arrears in the E 121 series in the National Archives only covered the years 1642-1649. Thereafter they were settled in different ways. Finally, pay warrants in the Commonwealth Exchequer papers (TNA, SP 28/30-119), though very useful for the first three years of the New Model Army's existence, were lacking in detail from the spring of 1648 onwards. That this was also characteristic of the sixteen-fifties was seemingly confirmed by a reading of TNA, SP 28/111 (September to December 1656).

A second volume of listings of officers might also add little to what was already in print. The principal gaps in the coverage of the officers in post in the sixteen-forties in Firth and Davies's *Regimental History of Cromwell's Army* were caused by the fact that their principal source, the Clarke Manuscripts at Worcester College, Oxford, contained nothing on the first two years of the New Model Army's existence, and that they were unable to make full use of the Commonwealth Exchequer Papers. It therefore seemed logical to think that, material in the National Archives for the sixteen-fifties being so sparse, their account of the troop and company commanders in post during the last eleven years of the army's existence would be as full as the surviving sources permitted.

1 See below pp. 33–4.

2 On page 216, for example, he provides evidence to illustrate the extent to which regimental coherence was damaged by the commissioning of outsiders as company commanders. However, it derives from only two regiments of foot, those I classify as the 6th and the 10th, and they were untypical of the foot as a whole as he acknowledges in a footnote. The true extent of their unrepresentativeness can be seen in Appendix Seven below. What the table also shows is that there is little or no information about the previous posts, if any, held by seven of the ten new company commanders commissioned in the two regiments in early 1660. Some could therefore have been junior officers removed in June 1659 and subsequently reinstated and promoted. In addition when discussing change in two of the cavalry regiments Reece gives the number of commissioned officers per regiment as 18 when in fact it was 24.

3 Worcester College, Oxford (Worc. College), Clarke Manuscripts 67, fos. 1-44.

Two things changed my thinking about the feasibility of carrying forward the listings of the New Model Army officers into the sixteen-fifties. First, it turned out that I had hit on an untypical file in my only foray into the SP 28 series post-1650. Evidence concerning the company and troop commanders in regiments stationed in Ireland, for example, was surprisingly full for captains and above from the departure of Oliver Cromwell in May 1650 until well on into the mid-sixteen fifties, first in the form of pay warrants and then in documents associated with the slimming down of the army in 1653 and in 1655. There was also copious information about the regiments which fought in the Scottish campaign of 1650-51 in terms of claims for pay arrears, and useful, though scattered evidence of captains and above serving in regiments stationed in England

There was, however, a disappointment. The sources for the sixteen-fifties contained little information about junior commissioned officers under the rank of captain. In the first volume of *Reconstructing the New Model Army* I assembled sufficient material to produce two listings of junior commissioned officers, and in the introduction I promised to include a third in volume two covering the period June to September 1659. However, it transpired that one if not two lists of the commissioned officers in post in the period June 1659 to February 1650 existed for almost all the New Model Army regiments in the pages of the Journal of the House of Commons. Putting them together as a listing seemed an unnecessary labour given that volume vii of the Journal was not only well indexed but also easily accessible electronically via British History on Line. Moreover, I could add little in terms of supportive information about promotions during the sixteen-fifties because of the disappearance of Cromwell's commissions' book, and the failure of the London weeklies to name officers under the rank of captain in their infrequent reports of activity in and by the army.

Second, it quickly became apparent that those parts of Firth and Davies's regimental histories which covered the sixteen-fifties were not as comprehensive as I had supposed they would be. They were very largely free from errors as had been the sections on the sixteen-forties, but the massive amount of information in the Clarke manuscripts and elsewhere which underpinned the mini-narratives had been used selectively insofar as troop and company commanders were concerned. What they had chosen to include was therefore both incomplete and inconsistent. It could not be taken out of the narratives to form a database from which to draw comparisons between regiments or sets of regiments or between the officer corps of the New Model Army in, say, 1651 and 1658. This is not a criticism. They were of their time. Historical writing in the nineteen-thirties like fiction or biography was an art, not a science, and complete uniformity in the use of sources would have rendered *Regimental Hist*ories formulaic and thus less attractive as a piece of literature.

What was surprising in all of this was that nobody since *Regimental Histories* was published in 1940 had tried to fill out the information it contained so as to create a complete data set, which could be used amongst other things as a starting point for an analysis of the social origins of the officer corps that was systematic rather than anecdotal or for assessing the likely impact of change over time on the army's impact on the political narrative of the Commonwealth. However, in this respect it was unfortunate that the window of opportunity when historians of the mid-seventeenth century were enthusiastic about systematically collecting data in the expectation that it would shed light on major historical problems was closing at precisely the time when the source Firth and Davies were unable to use in its entirety, the Commonwealth Exchequer Papers, was becoming more easily accessible.

The dispute between R.H. Tawney and High Trevor-Roper over the former's quasi-Marxist explanation of the English Revolution, which had resulted in their followers and their critics hurling insults at one another from behind barricades composed of increasingly complex statistics, had drawn to its close by the early-nineteen seventies, and quantification fell out of fashion. The next generation of professional historians, the so-called revisionists, threw cold water on their elders' modus operandi. The classifications which they had devised for organising their numerical data were simplistic, whilst their units of account were frequently too imprecise to be used as the basis for calculations. The twenty

manors owned by one gentlemen, for example, were not twice as valuable as the ten owned by another because manors varied in size and also in the income they yielded. But instead of trying to improve on what had gone before, the revisionists tended to stress the difficulties of categorisation in political history and the lack of clarity that this imposed on exercises in number-crunching. If they used tabulated data it was something to be got out of the way before beginning the really serious business of looking at diaries, letters and so forth which would hopefully yield more nuanced explanations. Quantification could serve at best as a crude pointer towards a line of investigation it might be worth pursuing through archival research, at worst as a dead end.

Twenty years later the pendulum swung still further away from quantification. The post-modernist critique of historical method, which questioned to a greater or lesser degree the ability for anything that has survived into the present to be regarded as factual, seemed to deliver the death blow to the pretension that amassing data in the hope of that it would somehow or other provide an understanding of what had happened in the past was a task worth undertaking. What historians should be concentrating upon was deconstruction, namely the way in which each generation has created its own representation of the past through the distorting spectacles of the fads and obsessions of its own time period.

This fundamental attack on how historians practiced their craft gave rise first to a measure of despair and then to a spirited counterattack. Whilst conceding that most historical problems will remain unresolved, with each generation drawing on its own experience to add a further level of complexity to the issues involved, its St. Michael in the form of Professor Richard Evans has made nonsense of the notion that there is no such thing as historical fact. I would go further claiming that factual information found in historical sources is strong enough to do more than just be recognised as such. That is why I chose to use the word reconstructing in the title of this publication rather than something more anodyne. It is my contention that provided one is very careful in appraising what is placed in a data set, and that strict attention is given to chronology, factual constructs of the past are possible, and even if completely watertight conclusions cannot be drawn from analysis of the material they contain, it will raise new questions and open up new lines of investigation.

What I therefore hope I have produced in volumes one and two of *Reconstructing the New Model Army* is something that is complementary to the work of Firth and Davies. It has no claims to be definitive, but I have no doubt that in the future gaps will be filled in and errors rectified causing the database to edge ever more closely towards a completely accurate factual record of movements into and out of the officer corps of the New Model Army between 1645 and 1660.

2

The Regimental Listings

As in Volume 1 of *Reconstructing the New Model Army* my method of presenting information about the military careers of captains and above has been to use a table for each regiment with the regiments being placed on the page in what approximates to an order of seniority. The resulting listings portray something approaching the totality of such officers in post at a specific moment in time in the case of regiments based in England and Scotland (for which I use the term snapshot) and within a specific time period in the case of those stationed in Ireland. The term Army List is deliberately not used, as my focus is exclusively on regimental officers. Those who served in the artillery or in a staff capacity have not been included.

In volume two it has been possible to provide such snapshots of the company and troop commanders in regiments quartered in England and Scotland, though on the rare occasions when a major change in personnel of a regiment occurred between two snapshots I have added an intermediary list. As in Volume 1 the snapshots are not set out at regular intervals. The dates have been chosen either because they mark the end of a period during which a significant movement into and out of the officer corps took place, or because a document or set of documents provide very full information about the officer corps at that point in time. The reasons for choosing the eve of the invasion of Scotland in late June 1650, the end of the fighting in Scotland in late September 1651, and the end point of three of the major purges of the officer corps in late September 1659, mid-February 1660 and late April 1660, are self-evident. The third listing, that for December 1656, is the date of the first schedule of the winter quarters of troops and companies in the army in Scotland. The fourth shows the officer corps as it was in late October 1658 when the Protectorate was coming to an end. As such it provides essential background for the first of the purges that followed soon afterwards.

Snapshots are out of the question in the case of the regiments stationed in Ireland. There are no full, or indeed partial, army lists, and the haphazard survival of pay warrants often makes it impossible to ascertain within six months one way or the other when one officer left a regiment and another replaced him. So, stretching the metaphor farther than perhaps it ought to be stretched, I have been forced to use a longer time exposure. Instead of snapshots there are time slots covering in most cases a number of years with the first and the last possible occasions on which officers are known to have been in post being recorded in column three of the regimental lists.[1] As with the snapshots of the army in England and Scotland, the time slots are not of equal length, but their duration is determined by the most important landmarks in the narrative of the New Model Army's occupation of Ireland, most notably successive disbandments and purges.

1 I use the word possibly with good reason as the pay warrant on which their name appears for the last time may have been written a month or so after they left the regiment.

The Regiments of Foot and Horse

One consequence of the time slot method of organising the regimental data is that some regiments appear to have more than the conventional number of troop and company commanders, often with the same name appearing twice if an officer was promoted or demoted during the period concerned. However, departures from the pattern laid down in the New Model Army ordinance of February 1645, that is ten companies per regiment of foot and six troops per regiment of horse, were sometimes real rather than fictions created by my methodology.

Most infantry regiments, whether of the 1645 vintage or units raised subsequently, were indeed ten companies strong. Some, however, such as the 10th regiment of foot in the army in England between 1651 and 1654, had only seven companies whilst the 5th, which garrisoned the Tower of London between 1651 and 1660, had only six companies between 1653 and 1659. Similarly John Clarke's regiment in the army in Ireland subsequent to the remodelling of the summer of 1655 had only six companies. On the other hand the 11th regiment of foot which garrisoned Leith and Edinburgh for much of the sixteen-fifties had eleven companies.[2]

With cavalry regiments six troops continued to be the norm with additional troops occasionally being seconded to a regiment for a limited period of time such as Captain Acklam's, which rode with the 8th regiment of horse in Scotland for eighteen months or so.[3] The principal exception, however, relates to the army in Ireland. When organising the expeditionary force in the summer of 1649 Cromwell briefly reverted to the double regiment like the one he had commanded in the Eastern Association Army.[4] These comprised two divisions of six troops the first commanded by a lieutenant colonel, the second by a major. The experiment, however, was short-lived. By January 1650 the second division of Cromwell's regiment had become an independent unit under the command of Thomas Shelburne, the lieutenant colonel.[5] A second double regiment commanded by Lord Broghill, drawn from commanders in Munster who had changed sides in the winter of 1649, lasted a little longer, but the divisions are no longer mentioned in pay warrants after January 1651.

The dragoon regiment in the New Model Army at its birth in 1645 had been different from the rest of the horse with ten troops rather than six. When it became necessary to expand the size of the army for the invasion of Ireland four years later, it was disaggregated with the troops which remained under Colonel Okey's command being converted from mounted infantry into cavalry. Its successor was a completely new regiment created for Colonel Thomas Morgan, which formed part of the army of occupation in Scotland from 1651 until 1660. At its inception this had eight troops, but the number was reduced to four in the army establishment agreed by Parliament in late September 1651. When fighting broke out in the Highlands in 1653 dragoons were seen as necessary for operations in difficult country. They were as mobile as cavalry but armed with carbines or short-barrelled muskets rather than pistols, and therefore invaluable for moving ahead of the main body to seize bridges and passes and to defend them against attack until help arrived. Several additional troops were therefore raised, but they were disbanded once fighting came to an end.[6] A different practice prevailed in Ireland in that the two dragoon regiments stationed there commanded by Daniel Abbott and Henry Ingoldsby both appear to have been six troops strong like the rest of the horse. Ingoldsby's was disbanded in 1655, but Abbott's remained on the army payroll until six months after the restoration of the monarchy in 1660.[7]

An additional complication in volume two of *Reconstructing the New Model Army* is the existence

2 See below pp. 87, 245.
3 See below p. 69.
4 The Eastern Association double infantry regiment, however, does not seem to have been revived, but Henry Ireton's regiment of foot clearly had more than ten companies in 1650 and 1651. For this see below p. 205.
5 See below p. 192.
6 See below p. 82.
7 See below pp. 234–5, 244, 249.

of unattached troops and companies. These were most commonly found in the army in Ireland where they continued to exist into late sixteen-fifties.[8] The army in Scotland, on the other hand, had many independent troops of cavalry and dragoons attached to it during the most active period of campaigning, but the cavalry and most of the dragoons were disbanded immediately the fighting had died down and do not therefore appear in the new establishment passed by Parliament in late September 1651.[9] Some of the troops of dragoons, however, found a place in the new regiment created for Colonel Thomas Morgan, whilst Colonel John Humphreys' troop seems to have enjoyed an independent existence in England until sometime after its commander had been commissioned as colonel of a regiment of foot in the Caribbean expedition.[10] In this volume my practice has been not to record independent troops and companies, though they are mentioned in the regimental lists or the footnotes if they were subsequently attached to a regular regiment.

The Tabulation of Data

Columns One: I have continued to use numbers for the regiments which were stationed in England and/or Scotland and for New Model Army regiments selected for service in Ireland in 1649.[11] Other regiments serving in Ireland are not numbered. The dates on which they were commissioned, and therefore their precedence, cannot in most cases be determined.

Column Two: If an officer had served in the regiment but may have already left it his name is bolded. If there is some doubt as to an officer's first name, it is followed by a single question mark. Those officers with a single question mark against their surname served in the regiment at a later date but were already almost certainly troop or company commanders, whereas a double question indicates that the officer may never have served in the regiment.

Column Three: This is used to record the officer's military career immediately before and after he was in post in the regiment, and the date and circumstances of his leaving the regiment. In the case of officers who had served in a regiment in the New Model Army in England, and who moved with it to Ireland, I do not indicate the date of their first appointment as this can be easily found in volume 1 of *Reconstructing the New Model Army*. I do, however, record the rank and regiment of junior officers who had served in England and who were subsequently raised to the rank of captain in the army in Ireland.

In a few cases where the incompleteness of the data means that there are more candidates for troop and company commander than positions to be filled, the names of the officers who are less likely to have been in post at the time are given in a separate section at the end of the regimental list headed **Possibles** and/or **Replacements and Possibles**.

Abbreviations used throughout the volume.

The following abbreviations are used in the regimental lists

1. Armies

NMA	New Model Army

2. Officers

Capt.	Captain
Capt. Lt.	The lieutenant commanding the colonel's company or troop.

8 See, for example, the National Archives (TNA), SP 28/115, fos. 28, 32, 42 for Colonel Leigh's and Colonel John Bridges' companies of foot and Lord Broghill's troop of horse in early 1658.
9 Journal of the House of Commons (CJ) vii, p. 24.
10 TNA, SP 28/107, fo. 149; *A Collection of the State Papers of John Thurloe*, T. Birch ed. (7 vols., 1742) iv, p. 153.
11 For an explanation of the system of numbering used, see *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 39.

Col. Full Colonel
Cor. Cornet
D. Died
Dr. Dragoons
Ens. Ensign
F. Foot
H. Horse
Lt. Col. Lieutenant Colonel
Lt. Lieutenant
c. circa
co. company
X killed or mortally wounded
garr. garrison
gov. Governor
prob. Probably

In the foot notes I have only used abbreviations to record dates.

Symbols used in the Regimental Lists

Throughout the Listings

In both lists and footnotes XXX is used to indicate a gap in knowledge.

In column three the dividing line | is used to indicate the end of an entry but also, where necessary, to separate information about an officer's arrival in a regiment from that relating to his departure.

Part II England and Scotland

December 1656 + in the regimental lists for 1656 indicates that the source is the transcription of the quarters of most of the troops and companies stationed in Scotland printed in volume 10 of the *Scottish Historical Review* for October 1923, pages 63-7. It is undated but must be after Thomas Talbot was commissioned as colonel on 30 August. There is another such list in Worcester College Library in Clarke Ms 43 dated September 1656, which provides the names of the company commanders belonging to other units quartered in Scotland at the time such as the 2nd and the 24th regiments of foot.

September 1659

** indicates that the officer had served in the regiment earlier in the 1650s but had resigned or been dismissed before April 1659.

Part III Ireland

In the listing for 1655-59 * indicates that the troop or company commander was in post in 10/58 and after the restoration of the monarchy, but that he was not necessarily in continuous service.

Concerning Seniority in the Regimental Lists

There is no doubt that seniority within the regiment was a concept that was recognised both by the New Model Army and by its political masters. On occasions, for example, when the words senior or eldest captain appear in a text it is as if it were a term in general use, not one devised for that particular occasion.[12]

12 See, for example, J. Akerman ed., *Letters from Roundhead Officers written from Scotland*, Bannatyne Club (Edinburgh, 1856), p. 149.

In Volume 1 the only complete or nearly complete contemporary army listings, those of February and March 1645 and January 1647, do not rank captains in each regiment in accordance with their seniority. However, there was sufficient information in other sources as to the dates when they received their commissions for me to be reasonably confident that I had placed them in the correct order of precedence.

In the case of volume two there are no contemporary sources which list the captains of every regiment in order of seniority. For the regiments formed in 1645 the final listing in Volume 1, that for April 1649, forms the template for the listing of June 1650. In subsequent listings new captains' names have been added below those of captains already in post. If there were two or more, the order in which they were placed is determined by the date on which they were first recorded as serving as captain in the regiment. However, as explained in Volume 1, this is not an infallible way of determining seniority. Men who had been captains in one regiment and were transferred to another at the same rank could theoretically claim precedence over those already in place if their first commission as captain was earlier in date than those of captains already in post. In Volume 1 this has been logged as a possible reason why captains towards the bottom of my regimental lists became field officers before their seemingly more senior colleagues.

With regard to the regiments raised after 1647 that were stationed in England and Scotland I have used the earliest occasion on which an individual's name appears with the rank of captain in the regiment as my touchstone, whilst bearing in mind that captain lieutenants were frequently described as captains. The order in which names appear in regimental lists is therefore no more than an approximation. In the case of regiments stationed in Ireland, the order in which the captains' names appear, though not random, may not be much of an improvement on that, but it is likely to be more accurate in the case of regiments that had belonged to the New Model Army in England from 1645 onwards than it is with the remainder.

3

Cromwell's Armies – the Imperial Dimension

The New Model Army's theatre of operations for the first four years of its existence was England and Wales. Admittedly when a Scottish army invaded England in August 1648 following an alliance between King Charles I and a section of the Scottish aristocracy, the New Model did cross the border in pursuit of elements not caught in Cromwell's net after the battle of Preston, but it marched no farther north than the outskirts of Edinburgh. Its objectives were limited and political rather than military in nature. Once Scotland was firmly under the control of men who had vigorously opposed the agreement with the king it had fulfilled its purpose. By the end of the second week in November all units had returned to England.[1]

However, a sea change followed less than nine months later with the invasion of Ireland the circumstances of which are discussed below. This was the first stage in the army's assuming an imperial role, which was to increasingly dominate its activities during the sixteen-fifties. The upshot was that the mass demobilisation of New Model Army regiments in England and Wales that occurred in the autumn and winter of 1660 within months of the restoration of the monarchy was to some extent an illusion. At least 10,000 former New Model Army soldiers and their officers were still on the government's payroll in the summer of 1661 stationed in Scotland, Ireland, Flanders and Tangier.

The New Model Army in Ireland

Fighting had broken out in Ireland in late 1641 with an uprising against English hegemony and the flood of English and Scots who had settled there in the aftermath of the suppression of the previous mass uprising in the last years of Queen Elizabeth I's reign. In the months before civil war broke out in England, military resources were dispatched there from both kingdoms. As a result some headway was made against the insurgents, but it could not be sustained. In August 1642 regiments intended for Ireland were requisitioned for Parliament's field army (which partly explains its poor performance at the battle of Edgehill)[2], whilst a year later the king made a truce with the Irish in order to enable him to withdraw troops to help progress the war in England. For the next three years such fighting as there was in Ireland was primarily undertaken by the Scots, but they achieved little. Resources were limited. The English Parliament had none to spare, and neither did the Scottish government because it was being forced to fight for the first time on home ground against the Marquis of Montrose and a brigade of Irish

1 Wanklyn, *The Warrior Generals; Winning the British Civil Wars* (2010), pp. 203-4.
2 Amongst the infantry regiments on the Parliamentary side which ran away was Lord Wharton's which had been raised to fight in Ireland: P. Young, *The Battle of Edgehill* (Kineton, 1967), pp. 248-9; Bodleian Library, Oxford, Carte Ms 80, fo. 176.

Catholics. No sooner had Montrose given up than the Scottish field army in Ireland was badly mauled at the Battle of Benburb in June 1646.[3]

By then the civil war in England and Wales was in its final stages and the victors could turn to the pacification of Ireland. The obvious solution was to employ the New Model. The last of the king's field armies had been destroyed and the few remaining royalist garrisons were falling over like ninepins. However, a motion to send a brigade there was defeated by a single vote in the House of Commons on 31 July 1646 one of the tellers for the nays being Oliver Cromwell.[4] The justification was that England was not sufficiently secure to spare them, but there was a hidden motive. Cromwell and his allies in Parliament, who are conventionally labelled as the Independents for their support of religious toleration rather than a Presbyterian state church somewhat similar to that in Scotland, saw the dismemberment of the army as weakening their position in the contentious debates taking place within the victorious coalition as to the principles to be embodied in the post-war constitutional and religious settlement.[5] When the issue of the New Model invading Ireland came up in a more extreme form in the following year Cromwell and his associates in the army were able to tap into a groundswell of grievances in all ranks, which included being forced to fight overseas against their will, to put their friends in control of the House of Commons in what I like to term the First Army Coup.[6] Ireland, however, was not totally neglected. In late 1646 and in 1647 new regiments of horse and foot were sent there raised in part by officers who had fought for Parliament in the provincial forces in the First Civil War.[7] They enabled the commanders in Leinster and Munster, Michael Jones and Lord Inchiquin, to win impressive victories at Dungan Hill and at Knocknanuss, but exploiting them was impossible due to lack of resources.

The situation worsened dramatically in the following year. Renewed fighting in England and Wales in the early spring occasioned a second cutting off in the supply of recruits, arms and ammunition similar to what had happened in 1642. At the same time Inchiquin abandoned his commitment to Parliament and the Munster Protestant regiments following him.[8] Within a year an alliance had come into being brokered by the marquis of Ormond, the sole element binding it together being defence of the Stuart monarchy. Comprising Irish of all religious persuasions, English and Scottish settlers, and Royalist exiles from England it came close to overrunning the entire country in the summer of 1649.[9] Only Dublin seemed secure under Lieutenant General Jones's command, but his position was untenable in the long run without a substantial input of military resources, and once Dublin had fallen the victorious coalition would doubtless launch an invasion of England in the king's name.

Whilst Ormond was cobbling together his improbable alliance, the New Model Army had carried out a second coup. Its objective was to prevent Parliament coming to an agreement with King Charles who many of the officers and men held personally responsible for the bloodshed of the Second Civil War. The coup began in early December 1648 with the military occupation of London and Westminster and the forcible exclusion from the House of Commons of MPs who had favoured accommodation. It was swiftly followed by the trial and execution of the king, the abolition of the House of Lords, and the establishment of a Council of State to perform the executive functions of government. Although a veneer of constitutional propriety was preserved with former members of the House of Lords being chosen to serve, the Council did not enjoy an independent existence.[10] It was there to carry out the orders of a House of Commons made up of men whom the leaders of the coup had deemed worthy to

3 J. Wheeler, *The Irish and British Wars 1637-1654* (2002), pp. 150-4; D. Stevenson, *Scottish Covenanters and Irish Confederates* (Belfast, 1981), p. 128.
4 Journal of the House of Commons (CJ) iv, pp. 631-2.
5 Wanklyn, *Warrior Generals*, p. 191.
6 I. Gentles, *The New Model Army in England, Scotland and Ireland* (1992), p. 192.
7 See below for the regiments of Chidley Coote, John Moore and Roger Fenwick. In addition John Kynaston's regiment, disbanded in 1649 by Cromwell, was officered largely by men who had fought in North Wales under Major General Mytton's command: F. and D.
8 Bulstrode Whitelock, *Memorials of the English Affairs* (1732), p. 300.
9 For a very thorough account of the Ormandist takeover in Protestant Ulster, see K. McKenny, *The Laggan Army in Ireland 1640-1685* (Dublin, 2005), pp. 89-99.
10 Calendar of State Papers Domestic (CSPD) 1649-50, p. 6.

continue as MPs.

The process of converting England from kingdom to commonwealth was over by the middle of March 1649, and this coincided with the surrender of Pontefract Castle, the last garrison holding out for Stuart cause. With the country at peace there was the opportunity to deal for once and for all with Ireland. Moreover, there was a powerful incentive to do so. Although relations with the Scottish government were bad as the English had executed their king without consulting them, Ireland clearly posed the most immediate threat to the security of the new republic given Ormond's remit. The first reinforcements General Jones received, which crossed the Irish Sea between April and June, consisted of newly raised regiments. They were followed in the late summer by an army corps consisting of four veteran regiments of foot (the 4th, the 7th, the 12th and the 13th) and two of horse (the 2nd and the 11th) and at least five additional newly raised regiments of horse and foot. It was commanded by Oliver Cromwell who, as Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, became Jones's superior officer. A third element in the forces dedicated to reconquering Ireland were what Cromwell found when he arrived in the country, an eclectic mix of regiments which he speedily reorganised into a smaller number of units. Some were officered by men who had changed their allegiance on several occasions but were pronounced trustworthy by Oliver's trusted collaborator amongst the Protestant settlers, Lord Broghill. That was not all. As the months passed, more newly raised regiments arrived from England and also a battalion of the 3rd regiment of foot. As a result by the summer of 1650 there was a New Model Army in Ireland between 10,000 and 20,000 strong.[11]

By the cunning exploitation of fissures within the coalition facing him and some terror tactics when capturing garrisoned towns, Cromwell succeeded in overrunning the east and south of Ireland by May 1650 at which time worsening relations with Scotland caused Parliament to recall him to England. However, it took the army in Ireland under the command of his deputy Henry Ireton another eighteen months to secure the surrender of all the principal enemy strongholds. Once again resources being diverted elsewhere were part of the problem, but the effect of this can be exaggerated as almost all the new regiments and their equipment were in Ireland before the New Model Army's invasion of Scotland began.[12] Other factors were Ireton's lack of flair, and the understandable unwillingness of his opponents to stake all on a battlefield confrontation after the strongest of the Irish armies based in Ulster had been destroyed at the battle of Scariffhollis in June 1650. As a result New Model Army units from then onwards were scattered across the country besieging the plethora of towns and castles still under enemy control. Occasionally, however, they banded together to set siege to larger enemy garrisons such as Limerick, or to fight ad hoc assemblages of enemy units intent on relieving one or other of their besieged garrisons or on re-occupying territory when fighting moved elsewhere.[13]

In the early sixteen-fifties guerrilla warfare continued in many parts of the country, but famine sapped the energy of the Irish. As a result fighting died down helped by the decision to allow enemy units to join the Spanish army. The improved security situation changed the New Model Army's role from an active to a passive one as it re-configured itself into an army of occupation. Many units were disbanded in the summer of 1653 and again in 1655 leaving a force of eleven infantry regiments and seven regiments of horse. The dominant group was the six veteran New Model Army regiments, four foot and two horse, sent to Ireland in 1649-50 and two others, Sadleir's and Abbott's, which included veteran New Model Army formations in their ranks, whilst five of the remaining regiments of horse and one of the regiments of foot had been raised by Oliver Cromwell's family and kin in 1649.[14] Three

11 For a full record of the elements that came together to create the army in Ireland, see the listing for 1650-53 on pp. 198–227.

12 The exception was Colonel Daniel's regiment raised in Cheshire and Lancashire, though most of Colonel Lytcott's recruits were siphoned off for the Scottish expedition, whilst units intended for Henry Cromwell's regiment of horse were not allowed to cross the Irish Sea. For this, see below pp. 185–6, 193; CSPD 1650, p. 138.

13 P. Lenihan, *Consolidating Conquest: Ireland 1603-1727*, pp. 132-3 citing primarily R. Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* (2 vols., Manchester 1913) i, pp. 27-74.

14 Two more regiments of foot had been raised in England with one clearly raised in Ireland by Protestant settlers. The remaining two were probably of mixed origin.

years later another reduction in the military establishment was planned but it was overtaken by events across the Irish Sea.[15]

Thus despite the disbandments there was still an army over 10,000 strong in Ireland in 1659, but despite the dispatch of so many troops to Ireland between 1649 and 1652, there was only a slight connection between the regiments there and those stationed in the other two countries that made up the Commonwealth. Brigades drawn from the army in Ireland were ordered back to the mainland in 1654 and again in 1659 to assist in the suppression of uprisings against the regime, but bar a small number of companies of foot retained to create a second regiment for Colonel Hewson in 1656, they returned whence they had come once the danger had passed.[16] Second, there was no rotation of regiments between England and Ireland as there was between England and Scotland, and very few officers, having taken service in Ireland, returned to take up commands in England or Scotland. Similarly officers from the Irish army rarely took up positions in England or Scotland. For these reasons I have kept the army in Ireland distinct from the rest of the New Model in the listings in volume two of *Reconstructing the New Model Army*.

The removal by force of the Long Parliament in the third army coup of April 1653 and the proclamation of the Protectorate a few months later does not seem to have been caused any concern in the officer corps in Ireland. A letter of congratulation to Oliver Cromwell signed by over a hundred officers with the rank of captain and above dating from 1654 included names of several people such as Colonel Daniel Axtell and Major Henry Jones who later became opponents of the Cromwellian regime.[17] The campaign of Henry Cromwell, Oliver's younger son, against religious radicals, most particularly Baptists, when he was Deputy Lieutenant in Ireland in the mid to late sixteen-fifties, resulted in a number of dismissals and resignations amongst senior officers.[18] All that is known about the purge that followed the fall of the Protectorate in May 1659, is the changes in the colonels and field officers and in the captains in a couple of regiments,[19] but they appears to have been on a similar scale to those taking place at the same time in the regiments quartered in England and Scotland with opponents of the Protectorate being reinstated or promoted to fill posts previously held by dyed-in-the-wool Cromwellians.

In Ireland further purges followed in the early months of 1660 as more conservative elements increasingly took control. However, once again little can be said directly about their effects on the officer corps. Many officers' names appear in letters written at the time to the authorities in England together with their ranks, but some at least appear to have been men discharged in 1653 and 1655 who continued to use their titles and who had been reinstated.[20] It was not until April 1662 that a full list of the commanders of the 60 companies of foot and 30 troops of horse in the army in Ireland appeared in print.[21] Many were ex-Royalists, but roughly a third had held military commands under the Commonwealth or the Protectorate. This is clear evidence of the impact of the financial transactions of the mid-1650s, by which pay arrears were settled by the redistribution of land confiscated from the former insurgents. The changes in landownership that ensued, compounded by the officers buying up of land from the lower ranks, were largely respected by the restored monarchy, and they helped to establish the framework of imperial power and authority through which the subsequent Protestant Ascendancy would operate.[22] Interestingly the baleful influence on military solidarity of newly acquired assets was making its effect felt before the Restoration. Colonel Brayne was highly critical of the impact of the land redistribution in Ireland on army solidarity when discussing the shortcomings of the kind of officers who were arriving in Jamaica from Ireland in 1657. If any more soldiers were sent there from

15 Calendar of State Papers Ireland (CSPI) 1647-60, p. 856.
16 See below pp. 87, 240 and Appendices IV and V.
17 J. Nickolls ed., *Original Letters addressed to Oliver Cromwell* (1743), pp. 144-5.
18 See below p. 30.
19 CSPD 1659-60, p. 12; CSPI 1647-60, p. 700.
20 See, for example, British Library, Thomason Tracts, 669 f24 (26); ibid, E 1013 (14).
21 CSPI 1660-5, p. 530.
22 Lenihan, *Consolidating Conquest,* pp. 138-9, 146.

Ireland, they should be officered by Englishmen or Scots. Officers from the army in Ireland were more interested 'in their great estates there' than in the business of soldiering, and were anxious to return home as quickly as possible.[23] This is good evidence for army unity being undermined by self-interest which, it will be argued, was an important factor in the way the army in England and Scotland reacted to the events of 1659-60.

The New Model Army in Scotland

Insofar as Scotland was concerned, the imperial role of the New Model Army was as intensive as it was in Ireland but it did not establish a tradition. Although there were a few cases of Scottish estates being conferred on Englishmen they were few in number. Scotland was different because the ruling elite was Protestant and, although it had been twice at war with England between 1648 and 1651, this had not been accompanied by massacres of either soldiers or civilians. Nevertheless Scotland was to be an occupied country for eleven years following Cromwell's destroying its army at the battle of Worcester in September 1651.

The second Anglo-Scottish war was probable by the spring of 1650 as negotiations between the Scots and Charles, Prince of Wales moved towards a successful conclusion, and became inevitable when the Scottish government recognised him as king and he was allowed to take up residence in Scotland in June. Charles did not keep secret his intention of ruling his other two kingdoms in due course. A pre-emptive strike was therefore seen by the House of Commons and the army as the correct response in the circumstances. Only General Fairfax had misgivings and he was allowed to resign

The creation of a second expeditionary force in less than a year was well under way by early May. As at the outbreak of the First English Civil War in 1642 regiments intended for service in Ireland were stopped in their tracks, whilst new ones were added to the army. Most were to take part in the invasion of Scotland, but some remained at home to help deter an uprising in support of the Scottish king and to serve as a reserve of manpower to recruit the regiments in the field army as the campaign progressed. A novel expedient was to draw on an existing regiment to provide a nucleus for a new one. In some cases this was done by subdivision, in others by siphoning off a certain number of men. Thus a regiment was created for George Monck in July 1650 by combining half of the 11th regiment of foot with half of the 8th, whilst companies were taken from the garrisons of Carlisle, Boston, Scarborough and other places to bring the 2nd regiment of foot up to strength and to help create a regiment for Colonel Fitch. In contrast the 5th regiment of foot provided 1,000 recruits and some officers but no companies for the new 24th regiment of foot raised in the London area in the summer of 1651. Amongst the regiments raised from scratch were Oliver Cromwell's in Lancashire and George Gill's, later Matthew Alured's, in Yorkshire.

The expeditionary force consisted of 8 regiments of foot and 8 of horse. By the summer of 1651 its strength had risen to 15 regiments of foot and 15 regiments of horse supplemented by numerous independent companies of cavalry and dragoons.[24] Although Cromwell won a major victory over the Scottish army at Dunbar in September 1650, he failed to exploit it quickly enough, thus allowing the Scottish generals to save much of their cavalry and to set up a defensive line centred on the castle at Stirling, which guarded the narrow piece of flat land between the Scottish mountains and the Firth of Forth. There followed a stalemate lasting ten months at which point an amphibious landing on the north side of the Firth bypassing the pass at Stirling became feasible with the arrival from England of 50 or so flat-bottomed boats capable of landing men and horses straight onto an open shore.[25] The landing

23 Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, p. 392.
24 D. MacKinnon, *Origins and Services of the Coldstream Guards*, (2 vols., 1833) i, pp. 29, 37.
25 For a discussion of the steps in cracking the problem see M. Wanklyn, 'Cromwell's generalship and the conquest of Scotland', *Cromwelliana,* 3rd ser. iv (2015), pp. 36-50.

in Fife duly followed on the night of 17/18 July followed by a battle between elements of the English and Scottish armies of corps strength at Inverkeithing a few days later in which the Scots were defeated. Cromwell then moved the bulk of his army into Fife by sea intent on capturing the next pinch-point at the crossing of the river Tay, thus cutting off the Scottish retreat north from Stirling. This left the door to England wide open which, after some hesitation, the Scottish army passed through in the hope that numerous Royalists would join them as they marched into King Charles II's largest kingdom

When Cromwell set out in pursuit, he took most of his army with him. Left behind in Scotland under George Monck, by now his Major General of Artillery, were three veteran regiments of foot, the 2nd, the 11th and the 20th, which were to form the core of the army of occupation throughout the sixteen-fifties, though none was quite what it seemed, as has been explained above. The rest of the force, apart from John Okey's regiment of horse which was in the process of changing from dragoons to cavalry, had been raised in 1650 or 1651, but nevertheless Monck took the offensive. By the time Cromwell destroyed the Scottish army at Worcester on 3 September the Scottish government had been taken prisoner and Stirling Castle captured, whilst the storm and subsequent plunder of Dundee was a warning to the Scots of the consequences of carrying on the struggle in the face of the determined English army. Well before the end of the year fighting had stopped apart from low key guerrilla activity which did little damage but was embarrassing when an English officer was killed or taken prisoner.

In a cost-cutting exercise in the autumn of 1651 affecting all the forces in England and Scotland Monck's brigade was decreased in size from a corps to a brigade with the demobilisation of several of his newly raised regiments.[26] However, the cuts are best seen as part of a redistribution of military resources agreed by Parliament and the army high command in which Parliament was slightly ahead of the game. Although Scotland was quiet for the moment, it would soon recover from the shock of Monck's campaign and the disaster at Worcester. To keep order and to nip future uprisings in the bud garrisons would need to be established throughout the country, and this required far more manpower than Monck had at his disposal. One of Cromwell's first acts after his victory at Worcester was therefore to bring Monck's force up to corps strength and beyond. By December 1651 one regiment of Lambert's former northern brigade of 1647-9, Charles Fairfax's, and six of 1650-51 vintage which had marched south in August, were back in Scotland having been shipped there from Hull and London.[27] Only one regiment, the 25th created for Colonel Robert Overton, appears to have been raised in late 1651, though, as was customary by now, this was achieved by the inclusion of companies that had previously served in garrisons.

The 11th regiment's first task was to build a citadel, the seventeenth-century version of a castle keep, at Leith, the port through which most military supplies were shipped into Scotland. There it remained until 1660 and beyond with two companies in garrison at Edinburgh Castle. The 18th, 19th and 23rd regiments of foot occupied Perth, Ayr and Inverness respectively where they too were to build citadels.[28] The 17th took its station behind the walls of Stirling Castle, whilst other regiments occupied the larger towns, the 20th Edinburgh, the 24th Dundee and the 25th Aberdeen. Of the remaining regiments of the permanent garrison of Scotland, the 16th was stationed for the most part of the time in Fife whilst the 21st appears to have been quartered in the south of Scotland. However, individual companies from almost every regiment were quartered in more remote locations including Orkney and Shetland and the Inner and Outer Hebrides.[29]

Whereas the foot regiments permanently based in Scotland between the autumn of 1651 and the

26 These are listed in Appendix III.

27 The arrival of one regiment after another at Dundee to supply garrisons north of the Firth of Forth can be seen in the names of the officers who attended courts martial held there between late September and late December 1651: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 21, unfol.

28 Contemporary descriptions of these new fortifications at Inverness and Ayr can be found in C. Firth ed., *Scotland and the Protectorate* (Edinburgh 1899).

29 For the dispersal of New Model Army throughout Scotland see G. Davies, The Quarters of the English Army in Scotland in 1656, *Scottish Historical Review* 10 (1923), pp. 63-7.

winter of 1659/60 were largely new ones, the horse were not: only one of the cavalry regiments raised for the war with Scotland was still part of the army establishment after the autumn of 1652. Another difference was that no single regiment was stationed permanently in Scotland between October 1651 and January 1660. Instead a kind of rota system operated in that all except the 6th regiment of horse commanded by General Disbrowe, which was permanently quartered in the southwest of England, spent periods of time there of between one and seven years with two regiments being stationed north of the Border more than once. A third difference from the infantry was the way in which they were quartered. Although a few companies of foot were stationed at a distance from their colleagues in such isolated spots as the Orkneys and Inverary in the Western Highlands, this was normal practice insofar as the cavalry were concerned. In the winter of 1656, for example, the six troops of the 4th regiment of horse were quartered in localities as far apart as Kelso, Jedburgh, Burnisland and Dumfries, whereas the six troops of the 15th regiment were at Peterhead, Dundee, Glasgow and Hamilton.[30]

In operational terms a more significant difference between horse and foot was that, although between five and seven cavalry regiments were quartered in Scotland at any one time between September 1651 and April 1659, the number had fallen to two by September 1659. The worrying security situation in England culminating in Sir George Booth's uprising of August 1659 was the probable reason according to Monck's chaplain rather than suspicions about Monck's loyalty, but it did make for problems in converting the army of occupation into a field army.[31] As it was, Monck only felt strong enough to march into England in the winter of 1659-60 after he had converted Morgan's dragoons into cavalry.

When General Lambert's faction prevented Parliament from meeting on 13 October 1659, Monck refused to countenance what they had done. Many of his officers objected or refused to take sides, but they were removed before they could make common cause against him. There followed a two month standoff between Monck's army stationed to the south of Edinburgh and Lambert's at Newcastle as negotiations over a compromise took their leisurely course in the hands of men who had no wish to fight old comrades. As a result it was only after Lambert's army had disintegrated that Monck crossed the border into England and marched to the outskirts of London to provide military support for the restored Parliament should Lambert attempt a second coup. Even so it is surprising that Monck took almost all the regiments quartered in Scotland with him, the only exceptions being the 11th regiment of foot guarding Edinburgh and Leith and two other regiments in the far north and the far southwest of the country charged with defending the citadels at Inverness and Ayr. Discussion of the reasons why he was able to do so without the Scots rising in revolt is outside the remit of this volume, but the deal he is known to have struck with the Scottish aristocracy before marching south gave vague but convincing, reassurances for the future.[32] However, once England was deemed reasonably secure, three further regiments of foot and two of horse were sent back to Scotland as a precaution under the command of Major General Thomas Morgan. There may have been another reason. A force that strong north of the border could serve as a strategic reserve capable of rapidly intervening in England should Lambert's former regiments become unmanageable.

The New Model Army outside the British Isles

The period 1651 to 1660 saw the New Model Army assume a wider imperial role as the Republic became involved first in war against the Barbary pirates, then the Dutch, and finally Spain. Such operations were largely the work of the navy, but it is easy to forget that soldiers were involved in the incursions of the

30 Ibid, pp. 63-4.
31 T. Gumble, *The Life of General Monck, Duke of Albemarle* (1671), pp. 103, 107-8.
32 Price, Monck's chaplain, mentioned the fears that Scots had of the Quakers and also that the general had declared himself a Presbyterian in 1659: F. Maseres, *Select Tracts relating to the Civil War in England* (2 vols., 1815) ii, pp. 722, 724. For the agreement see A. Woolrych, *Britain in Revolution* (Oxford, 2002), p. 746, 751-2.

English fleet into the Baltic and the Mediterranean and into the Atlantic as far as the Canary Islands.[33] Although they did not man the ships or operate the cannon, the fire-power of the musketeers was essential for close combat work in fleet engagements, whilst pike men, though less frequently employed at sea, had their uses in repelling boarders. This was not new. What was new was that they were employed farther afield than had been the case in the Armada war or in the wars of the sixteen-twenties.

Second, the war against Spain, which began informally in 1654 and lasted beyond the end of the Protectorate, involved fighting on land, with New Model Army brigades operating in the Caribbean and in Flanders. As the landscape in both theatres of war did not favour the deployment of cavalry, almost all the regiments sent overseas were infantry, and as with some units raised in 1650-51 the tendency was to take a nucleus of soldiers from existing regiments with the officers being drawn from the New Model Army in all three countries of the Commonwealth and from veterans whose regiments had been disbanded.[34] In total there were 17 additional regiments of foot and one of horse engaged in Jamaica and in the Spanish Netherlands by 1659.[35]

The Survival of the New Model Army

It has been customary to see the New Model Army's story coming neatly to an end in the winter of 1660/61 with only the 20th regiment of foot (General Monck's, later known as the Coldstream Guards), and Monck's lifeguard of horse surviving, the rest of King Charles II's standing army being made up of forces which had been in his employ on the Continent. However, Scotland remained an occupied country for two further years. The 9th and 18th regiments of horse and the 11th, 23rd and 30th regiments of foot which returned there in February 1660 were disbanded during the late autumn of 1660 like the vast majority of the New Model Army regiments quartered in England, Morgan having advised that they were surplus to requirements. However, the 18th, 19th and 25th regiments of foot and Morgan's lifeguard remained in post until the late spring of 1662 by which time a small force of regulars raised in Scotland and officered by members of the Scottish nobility was seen by the government as sufficient to maintain security there.[36] Many of the men who had been demobilised returned to civilian life, but the high hundreds took service in an English brigade under Morgan's command which was to be shipped to Portugal to assist King Charles's father-in-law, who had been fighting a war of independence against Spain since 1641.[37] Their contribution to the final success of the House of Braganza in 1667 was remarkable as shown in the battle narratives in Jonathan Riley's *The Last Ironsides*.[38]

What is remarkable in the list of officers who fought in Portugal which Riley has compiled is that, apart from Morgan himself, none had served in a senior or indeed a middling capacity in the New Model Army.[39] What brings this point home is the example of Henry Pearson, colonel of one of the infantry regiments, who had been a mere lieutenant in 1659. Riley has also reminded us that some of the survivors of the expedition continued their military service beyond 1667 in the English garrison at Tangier. Additionally he has shown that others who returned to England were incorporated into the Portsmouth garrison or into King Charles II's growing army. These are unimportant in the nature of things given the small numbers involved, but any idea that the New Model army was dead by 1661, 1662

33 During the First Dutch War, for example, soldiers of the 1st and the 5th regiments of foot were serving on board ship: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Weekly Intelligencer, 21-28/6/52.

34 The only exceptions were two regiments raised as reinforcements for the Jamaica expedition from settlers in Barbados and other islands already occupied by the English.

35 F. and D., p. vii.

36 For the raising of the first Scottish units after the Restoration see C. Dalton, *The Scotts Army 1661-1685* (1909), pp. 4-6.

37 F. and D. assume wrongly that two of the regiments went straight to Portugal whilst the third was disbanded with its private soldiers being used to fill up the gaps in their ranks. Riley accepts this narrative, but the appendix to his book tells a different story: J. Riley, *The Last Ironsides* (Solihull, 2014), pp. 185-88.

38 Ibid, pp. 105-12, 140-7.

39 Riley claims that Francis Moore, another infantry colonel, was an ex-Commonwealth officer. If so, he too had been below the rank of captain.

or 1667 must be hit firmly in the head. A force at least nine thousand strong, and thus of army rather than brigade strength, survived into the late sixteen-sixties and beyond.

In Ireland, unlike in England and Scotland, the Commonwealth army of occupation was not disbanded. Instead it metamorphosed almost effortlessly into the Stuart army of occupation. The most compelling evidence of this comes from documents dated 1664 in the manuscript collection preserved by Ormond's family and placed in the public domain by the Historical Manuscripts Commission 150 years ago. These show that many officers received pay arrears for a continuous period from September 1658, the last month of Oliver's reign, to early 1662.[40] Moreover, quite a number were to be found amongst the 60 company commanders and 30 troop commanders in post in 1662.[41] They slowly disappeared over time with some falling foul of the government and being cashiered or worse, whilst others retired to enjoy their newly acquired estates, but a significant number of officers who had served the Lord Protectors remained in the army in Ireland for many years to come. As late as the mid-sixteen eighties when Roman Catholic officers, ineligible for service in the army in Ireland in the sixteen-sixties for security reasons, were given commissions, they were described as taking the place of former Cromwellians.[42]

The army in Ireland was reduced during 1660 from eleven regiments of foot and seven of horse to six regiments of foot and four of horse, and by the middle of 1661 the regimental structure had apparently been abandoned altogether in a reversion to the structure of the pre-Civil War army of occupation.[43] However, this was a temporary arrangement at best. By late 1663 the army in Ireland had the same number of regiments of horse. Three of the colonels had been in post in early 1661. The fourth, the earl of Ossory, replaced the earl of Mountrath who had died in early 1661. All of this suggests that the regiments in existence in 1660 had not been broken down into troops. By 1673 the infantry was organised in 11 regiments of various sizes, but this may have been a new arrangement.[44] Nevertheless by that date the Irish army on paper looks like a body which could be converted reasonably quickly into a small field army which, given sufficient notice, would be able to intervene in any of Charles II's kingdoms should that prove necessary.

40 Historical Manuscripts Commission (HMC), Marquis of Ormond's Manuscripts ns iii, pp. 424-36.
41 See above, p. 22. F. and D.'s claim that they were the exception is erroneous insofar as the infantry are concerned. However, by 1664 only four of the twenty-four troop commanders appear to have been ex-Cromwellians.
42 Lenihan, *Consolidating Conquest*, p. 167.
43 F. and D., p. xxxv. For units in existence in June 1661 see Appendix VI.
44 Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fos. 563, 565.

4

The New Model Army and the End of the English Republic

Contemporaries were amazed at the behaviour of the New Model Army in the spring of 1660. Its brutal intervention in the political life of the nation in the second army coup of December 1648 had culminated in the proclamation of the English republic. Yet less than twelve years later it failed to take any meaningful action to prevent the restoration of the Stuart monarchy. Royalists and Neo-Royalists saw this as a miracle; those who had enjoyed power during the sixteen-fifties as punishment for their sins. In the words of General Fleetwood 'God had spat in their faces'.[1] A more mundane explanation favoured by historians is that the army had become de-radicalised and professionalised in the intervening years. As a result it possessed neither the will nor the inclination to take action when the Commonwealth came under threat.

The purpose of this chapter is to use the listings in Parts II and III to describe the changes that took place in the ranks of the commissioned officers during the sixteen-fifties, and then to discuss the light that such changes shed on the army's behaviour at the death of the English republic. It will be argued that this cannot be whittled down to two short-term factors, shortcomings in leadership at the top following Oliver Cromwell's death in September 1658 and the disruptions in the chain of command caused by purges of the officer corps between June 1659 and May 1660.[2] Instead it will be suggested that there were also longer term issues at work connected with the institutionalisation of the army which produced an ethos that affected both officers and men, and which paradoxically inclined them to react to events in their self-interest as individuals rather than collectively in defence of a higher cause.

Managing the New Model Army

Radicalism in the army in the sixteen-fifties had two principal strands, though they were frequently linked in the minds both of the individuals who espoused them and of those who detested them. First was a determination to resist the threat to the pure spirit of republicanism summed up in the phrase The Good Old Cause. This had been enshrined in the Commonwealth constitution put in place after the king's execution in 1649, and it was being threatened by the increasingly monarchical nature of the Protectorate which replaced it five years later. Such radicals preferred the House of Cromwell to the House of Stuart, but only marginally so and only in the person of Oliver himself. This was because of their personal regard for him and his past achievements, as they were opposed to government by one person as a matter of principle.

1 His words are quoted in Maseres, *Select Tracts* ii, p. 747.
2 This is the nub of the argument in Reece, *The Army in Cromwellian England*.

The second strand was support for extreme Protestants sects such as the Fifth Monarchists, the Quakers and the Anabaptists, some of whose beliefs threatened or appeared to threaten the social hierarchy of seventeenth-century England in which the power to exert political authority over others was synonymous with wealth, and most particularly with wealth that derived from the ownership of land. The link between landownership and the military in 1642 had been very strong, but it weakened dramatically over time. Of the 28 colonels in the earl of Essex's army at the time of the battle of Edgehill 13 were English peers or their sons, 9 great landowners, with the most of the rest being their hirelings, namely professional soldiers both English and Scots. Of the 30 colonels in post in early 1649 none were peers or sons of peers and only four knights or baronets. A quarter came from other sections of society, most notably trade and industry, whilst many of the remainder had only tenuous connections with landed society. None could be classed as a professional soldier.

However, the link between landownership and power was being re-established incrementally from the late sixteen-forties onwards as senior and middle-ranking officers acquired estates that had formerly belonged to the established church, the royal family and the most notorious Royalists. It is not therefore surprising that the vested interests thus created saw religious radicalism as a new enemy in that all three of the most fashionable radical sects in the late sixteen-fifties, the Baptists, the Quakers and the Fifth Monarchists, had egalitarian associations. The first had historical connections with communism, the second would not acknowledge social superiors, whilst the third sought to place all authority in the hands of those chosen by God to prepare the way for the second coming of Christ. There were also more immediate threats. Outbursts of religious zeal in the community were a nuisance, even a scandal, but if religious radicalism was condoned in the army, and the army split into warring factions as a result, there could be no security for property-owners. Also egalitarianism as practiced by the Quakers was bound to undermine military discipline. It is therefore unsurprising that those officers whose radicalism went so far as public opposition or the threat of direct action were clear targets for dismissal provided, of course, that they had not already resigned in disgust at the way the tide was flowing.

In the first three years of the Protectorate seven colonels were removed from the army in England and Scotland or resigned because they could no longer in conscience serve the regime, but only a similar number of captains and field officers. The blatantly regal nature of the regime put in place after Oliver Cromwell's not very convincing rejection of the Crown in the spring of 1657 led to the resignation of General Lambert followed a few months later by the cashiering of all six troop commanders in Cromwell's own regiment of horse. The Protectorate had abandoned the Good Old Cause of 1649 and they could not in conscience give it their allegiance, though their departure was represented as being due to their Baptist affiliations.[3]

North of the Border the light touch also prevailed when officers were not involved in plotting against the regime, though successive commanders in Scotland could only recommend dismissals. George Monck did, however, succeed in persuading Cromwell to remove a small number of Quakers, but probably no more than two captains of horse and his own captain lieutenant. This was not merely because their egalitarian behaviour was a threat to discipline. Their denial of the authority of church ministers was likely to lead to violent reactions amongst the Presbyterian majority in Scotland and to inflame public opinion against the army. However, he left the more numerous Baptists officers alone as they were not politically active.[4] This in the end may have worked to his advantage. When Monck decided to involve himself in the political upheavals in England in October 1659 in opposition to Lambert's coup against the Long Parliament, the number of officers in Scotland who supported Lambert or would not commit themselves was considerable, but they were too fragmented in a confessional sense to make a united front against him. In Ireland, however, Henry Cromwell as Lord Deputy had powers Monck and his predecessors did not possess and he did get rid of Baptist officers. This was

3 CSPD 1657-8, p. 288. C. Firth ed., The Clarke Papers, *Camden Society* 2nd ser. (4 vols. 1891-1901) iii, p. 141
4 Ibid iii, p. 122; F. and D., pp. 272, 493.

against his father's advice, but Henry's argument for doing so was not so much the men's religion as their intriguing against him. This in turn was in reaction to the loss of the influence they had enjoyed under his predecessor Charles Fleetwood. However, once again the numbers seem to have been small and in this case probably confined to field officers and above.[5]

Turning to the other side of the coin, army appointments made between April 1653 and April 1659 in all three countries were not such as to suggest that the regime was following a clear and consistent policy of replacing radicals with more amenable officers. Admittedly the vacancies at the level of colonel in the army in England were filled with Cromwellian loyalists with little or no military experience, including members of Oliver's own family, but when the six officers in Cromwell's regiment of horse were removed in 1658 great care was taken to assure the country via the press that their replacements were worthy men with an excellent military record. In Ireland lack of information about the troop and company commanders in place whilst Henry Cromwell was lord deputy makes it difficult to say exactly how many radicals were removed and who replaced them, but some officers were brought in from England to fill the gaps such as Edmund Temple and probably John Gorges.[6] More detail is known about new officers in Monck's forces in Scotland, but there is no evidence from their subsequent behaviour that they were chosen for their loyalty. Of the new captains appointed when he was in command from mid-1653 onwards at least half turned against him in October 1659 when he broke with the army leaders in England who had just closed Parliament down in what can be described as the fourth army coup. However, as mentioned above, appointments in the regiments stationed in Scotland at the rank of captain and above rested ultimately with the Lord Protector and then after April 1659 with the restored House of Commons.

A good sign of a regime worried about the loyalty of its army would have been if dissidents or potential dissidents at the level of captain and above had been replaced by professional soldiers whose loyalty could be relied upon provided they received their pay, but there is very little evidence of Oliver Cromwell going down that particular path. Admittedly there were few opportunities to employ such men once he had given vacant posts to family members, but not even Thomas Morgan, despite his vast experience of fighting abroad, fits comfortably into this category.[7] Only in the expeditionary forces sent to Flanders were men appointed whose military careers had not been in their nation's army. Of the seven colonels four were professionals who had never served in the New Model Army, and an informer's account of the defects and eccentricities of the captains and field officers suggests a similar background.[8]

All this is evidence of what Reece has described as Oliver Cromwell's determination that the New Model Army should remain a broad church with a spectrum of opinion ranging from out-and-out supporters of a single-person executive with quasi-monarchical trappings to radicals who were unhappy with developments since 1653 but were prepared to keep their opinions to themselves. Moreover, the survival of radical sentiment in the New Model army is clearly shown by its behaviour after Cromwell's death. In April 1659 radical officers were sufficiently organised to overthrow the Protectorate and to restore the Long Parliament in alliance with out-and-out republican MPs, and in October they had sufficient command of the army in the London area to lock their erstwhile allies out of Westminster Hall for being insufficiently radical in devising a constitution that would enshrine the principles of the Good Old Cause.[9] In addition, if Cromwell had inadvertently made some headway towards de-radicalising the army from 1653 onwards, it was thrown into reverse by the purge of the army carried out by the restored Long Parliament between May and July 1659. In the process almost all the officers cashiered in the previous six years were given commissions, often in their former regiments, whilst officers most closely associated with the House of Cromwell were cashiered.

5 Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, pp. 670-1, 710, 729.
6 P. Gaunt ed., Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, *Camden Society* 5th ser. 31 (2007), pp. 52-4. For John Gorges see below p. 240.
7 Oxford Dictionary of National Biography 39, pp. 146-8.
8 F. and D., pp. 680, 690-1, 696 citing Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 59, fo. 210.
9 Reece, *Army in Cromwellian England*, pp. 196, 206.

All of this is well known, but what is remarkable about the process by which opponents of each round of constitutional reform during the sixteen-fifties disappeared from the army is not so much the small numbers involved as the lack of evidence that it provides of regimental solidarity. When Colonels Haselrig, Harrison, Alured, Saunders, Overton, Okey and Lambert were removed from their commands, their field officers and captains remained in post as did the junior officers of the 1st regiment of horse when Oliver Cromwell dismissed its troop commanders in February 1658. Only in the case of Colonel Nathaniel Rich's regiment of horse does it appear that the colonel's dismissal for his aggressive religious radicalism in December 1654 was followed by the departure of his major.[10] However, Azariah Husbands' dismissal or resignation need not necessarily have been because he shared Rich's opinions or was motivated by knee-jerk loyalty, as he did not leave the regiment immediately afterwards. A warrant issued three months after Rich's dismissal shows Husbands being entrusted with the regiment's pay as major of 'formerly Colonel Rich's regiment'.[11] Instead Husbands' departure coincided with the appointment of the new colonel, Charles Howard, commander of Cromwell's lifeguard. What we may be seeing here, then, is not Husbands showing solidarity with Rich but thwarted ambition. It may also be significant that Husbands was not re-commissioned when the Long Parliament was restored in 1659 unlike most officers who were no longer in the army because of the stand they had taken against the Protectorate.

In his appraisal of Cromwell's handling of discontent in the army Reece claims that the failure of junior officers to resign or to protest if their colonel was removed should be looked at from a completely different angle, namely that it was policy on the Lord Protector's part not to dismiss such men if they shared their colonel's opinions.[12] This may well have been the case but it takes no account of the mind-set of the officers concerned. If honour or loyalty had been their guiding principle in life, anything else would have been inconsequential. They would have resigned whatever the clemency or inducement extended to them. Reece also notes George Monck's advice to Richard Cromwell on becoming lord protector, namely that dismissing officers was unlikely to provoke trouble with their subordinates because 'there is not an officer in the army, upon any discontent, that has interest enough to draw two men after him, if he be out of place'.[13] This he takes – in my opinion wrongly – as evidence that the professionalization of the army meant men's loyalty was to the rank, not to the individual,[14] but there are other explanations. Reverting to Major Husbands, if his reason for leaving was as suggested above, it clearly emphasises one characteristic of military life in the sixteen-fifties which has been previously explored but without its consequences being fully investigated. This is the possible effect that the lack of opportunity for promotion might have had on the mind-set and subsequent behaviour of the officers and indeed the men serving in the peacetime army.

Change and Continuity in the Officer Corps in England and Scotland[15]

In the first six years of the New Model Army's existence it had been possible for a fortunate individual to rise from non-commissioned officer to captain or from junior commissioned officer to field officer or even colonel. Death took its toll both on and off the battlefield, and officers were removed or removed themselves most strikingly at the time of the First Army Coup in 1647. Opportunities had also increased

10 F. and D., p. 149.
11 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 4/4/55; TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 368.
12 Reece, *Army in Cromwellian England*, pp. 68-74.
13 Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, p. 387.
14 *Army in Cromwellian England*, p. 70.
15 The army in Ireland will not be included in the discussion. Its direct involvement in the events in London and Westminster which brought the Commonwealth to an end was slight. However, the actions of some of its officers during the winter of 1659, first seizing Dublin Castle and then petitioning for Parliament to readmit MPs excluded in the Second Army Coup, set in motion the process by which the republic was done to death: Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, pp. 817-20. There were no regiments, or indeed troops or companies, stationed in Wales after 1654 when the 10th regiment of foot was remodelled and the 3rd regiment of horse sent to Scotland. For the 3rd regiment of horse, see F. and D. pp. 189-90. For the 10th regiment of foot see above pp. 64–5.

as the New Model Army in England and Scotland grew from 24 regiments in 1645 to 35 by the autumn of 1651, whilst in Ireland there were 40 or so regiments ten of which had been raised during the past two years.

But that marked the end of the good times. No completely new regiments were created between the winter of 1651 and the summer of 1654, whilst five regiments of foot and three regiments of horse in England and Scotland and 18 in Ireland were disbanded completely, and several others reduced in size. New opportunities arose in the mid sixteen-fifties with the creation of the Caribbean and Flanders brigades and the addition of two new infantry regiments to the English establishment. Unemployed officers, however, tended to be preferred as captains for the brigades fighting abroad, whilst one of the two new regiments stationed in England was made up entirely of companies from the army in Ireland, both officers and men. Nevertheless gaps did appear in the officer corps between 1651 and 1659, and with them opportunities for promotion. It was their incidence and unpredictability that was the problem.

Mortality continued to take its toll. Troop and company commanders were killed in guerrilla warfare in Ireland and Scotland, but this had largely petered out by the end of 1653.[16] Others met their deaths in different circumstances. A few were lost at sea between England and Ireland or between England and Flanders, one was drowned crossing a river in the north of Scotland, one was killed by a highwayman and another in a naval battle. Some must also have died of natural causes. Well-known examples are Colonels Sir William Constable, Thomas Pride and Stephen Winthrop not forgetting Oliver Cromwell himself, but below that level it is impossible to tell how many of the troop and company commanders who disappeared from the regimental lists did so because they had died or because they had simply decided to leave the army.

There is a little anecdotal evidence of the circumstances that might have led to a resignation. John Hodgson, for example, stationed in London with the 1st regiment of foot preferred a demotion in rank from captain to lieutenant in 1654 so as to be able to live near his family in Yorkshire; Amor Stoddard seems to have had enough of soldiering; whilst John Barker was accused of leaving the army in the 1650s not through principle but because he did not like the idea of his regiment being chosen for a spell of duty in Scotland.[17] In addition, at least three officers are known to have left the army in England and Scotland on religious grounds, two probably by choice.

The exact extent of the vacancies thus created in the infantry is impossible to say because of lack of information about the succession of company commanders in some regiments, but at least half of those who were in post in October 1651 were still in post in April 1659. In the case of the cavalry regiments, however, the information is almost complete. Of the 84 troop commanders in the army in October 1651 42 were still in post in April 1659. Of the 42 who were not half had resigned or died or been dismissed. The circumstances under which the remainder left the army is unknown as yet, but over half of them were still alive in 1659. All that can be said for certain is that their departures were scattered through time in a seemingly random manner. Thus there was no mass resignation or government purge which contemporary accounts failed to mention.

Such a level of wastage seems to provide plenty of scope for promotion, but even so at least half of the lieutenants in post in 1651 would still have been lieutenants in 1659 if their patience had been sufficient to stay the course and if they had not died or been dismissed in the intervening period. Moreover, bare numbers conceal more than they reveal. First, opportunities for promotion varied markedly from regiment to regiment. In three of the infantry regiments there were between six and eight vacancies at the level of company commander; in four there were only two. In two of the cavalry regiments there

16 Those known to have perished at this time were Colonel George Cooke of the 13th regiment of foot and four or so captains in Ireland, and Captain William Powell of the 20th regiment of foot in Scotland. See below pp. 76, 202.

17 J. Hodgson, *Memoirs Written by Himself* (1994 reprint, Pontefract), p. 30; Akerman, Letters from Roundhead Officers, p. 75; CSPD 1659-60, p. 238.

was a clean sweep of troop commanders between 1651 and 1659, but six only lost one or two. Second, progression in the regiment from lieutenant to captain, or from captain to major, or from field officer to colonel was certainly not automatic. In the cavalry 24 of the 44 vacancies at the level of captain or above between late 1651 and the spring of 1659 were filled by outsiders, only 16 by more junior officers in the regiment. The origins of the other four new officers are not known, but they too are likely to have been outsiders. In the case of the infantry regiments this kind of calculation cannot be made across the board because there is so little information about the junior officers in post in regiments raised in 1650 or later.[18] However, there were 24 vacancies in the seven 1645 vintage regiments which were not drastically remodelled during the sixteen-fifties. Of these only 11 were filled by promotions within the regiment.

The slow and very uncertain mechanism for upward movement in the officer corps driven by such random factors as death, disgrace and personal choice changed with the fall of the Protectorate in the spring of 1659 and the return of the Long Parliament. There followed a succession of purges the first of which began in late May and ended with the coup against the Long Parliament undertaken by General Lambert and his many supporters in the army on 13 October. The common front against government by one person had fallen apart as the officers' resentment against subordination to Parliament in military matters was stoked by fears that it would do nothing about putting in place a new representative assembly which would guarantee that the ideals of the Good Old Cause were firmly embedded in the constitution. More gentlemanly than Pride's Purge of December 1648 and Cromwell's expulsion of Parliament in 1653, the officers simply stopped the speaker's coach on its way to Westminster and locked the doors of Westminster Hall.[19]

It is from the first purge that Reece dates the beginning of the decline in the army's ability to intervene in the politics of the nation. Its morale and esprit de corps depended on the long-standing association between officers and men. The disorganisation and insecurity caused by the removal of officers at the regimental level and their replacement by others who had often not previously served in the regiment or been out of the army for a number of years began the process of undermining its professional organisation and seemingly its ability to act in unison.[20] This argument, though copiously illustrated, seems to originate in Edmund Ludlow's observation that the newcomers were mostly not known to the soldiers and had little or no recent military experience.[21] However, the impact of the first major replacement of company and troop commanders since 1647 cannot have been as profound as it has been painted.

A contemporary observer wrote of 160 officers being cashiered before the end of July. The accuracy is impossible to check, but there is no doubt that if the figure is correct it must have included junior officers and possibly non-commissioned ones as well, as the revising committee had only just begun to remodel the regiments stationed in Scotland. My calculations show that a maximum of 50 company and troop commanders out of 330 were not re-commissioned between June and October 1659, and that figure is almost certainly an overestimate as it assumes that every company commander in post in April whose name is not known was cashiered in the purge. Moreover, as Reece recognises, the effect on the army as a whole was very patchy. Changes made since April were heavily concentrated in regiments in which colonels expelled by Oliver Cromwell were reinstated, or in those whose officers had been the staunchest supporters of the Cromwellian regime.

It could be argued, however, that the first purge was damaging in that it brought an end to the Cromwellian model of the army as a broad church, Oliver's preferred mechanism for keeping in check

18 Of the original twelve regiments four, the 3rd, 4th, 7th and 12th, were in Ireland from 1649 onwards and experienced the loss of at least a third of their company commanders in two years, whilst the 10th was drastically remodelled in 1651.

19 Whitelock, *Memorials*, pp. 685-5.

20 *Army in Cromwellian England*, pp. 202-4.

21 *The Memoirs of Edmund Ludlow*, C. Firth ed. (2 vols., Oxford 1894) ii, p. 204. Ludlow also mentions that the newcomers were not sufficiently committed to the Good Old Cause. This is explained by the fact that he was writing not about the purges of June to September 1659 but those of January and February 1660.

its potential to run amuck politically. Reece is quite right to argue that this would only work if there was somebody in place to act as ring master who had Cromwell's stature and Cromwell's political skills. However, without such a ringmaster the army was more likely to retain the ability to act decisively in the political arena if it was less of a broad church and expelling the Cromwellians helped by removing one faction. It also gave the army a more radical ethos but it can be argued that this was more than offset by the freedom that the lack of a ringmaster gave to the remaining factions to intrigue against one another.

The army in Scotland came under greater scrutiny after the suppression of Sir George Booth's uprising in Cheshire in August 1659.[22] Monck argued against the changes the vetting committee wished to impose and on occasions he managed to persuade Parliament to allow an officer to remain in post.[23] This caused delays. Additionally he refused to acknowledge new appointees who had to travel from England to Scotland to take up their posts.[24] As a result it is impossible to ascertain which of the changes authorised by Parliament had taken effect by the time of the October coup. Nevertheless when Monck opposed the coup and declared his support for Parliament, many of the officers in the army in Scotland refused to back him, and the listings show how many of these were not new appointees but officers of long standing. His response was decisive. He cashiered the lot imprisoning some, but allowing others to leave for England. He also removed officers who wished to remain neutral or who were otherwise suspect. Thus, by the time he led a small army of six regiments of foot and three of horse into England on 1 January 1660 the forces in Scotland had been thoroughly remodelled, 8 colonels, 13 field officers and over 22 company and troop commanders having been removed. A further 10 officers were cashiered when he encountered the 2nd regiment of foot and the 13th regiment of horse on his march south. There was no armed resistance as by that time the army's bid for power had collapsed. The forces that gathered at Newcastle under the command of John Lambert to oppose an invasion had melted away as Parliament's supporters staged a counter-coup in the south-east of England that steadily gathered pace as December progressed, but possibly the most important factor was lack of pay for Lambert's rank-and-file caused by the refusal of London merchants and financiers to loan money for that purpose. Monck, on the other hand, had made good use of his control over tax collecting in Scotland to make sure that his men received what they were due.

The second stage of the second purge began in January when Parliament removed Lambert's supporters from the regiments stationed in the part of the country it controlled. It was quite as traumatic as Monck's, and Reece's estimate that half the colonels and field officers and two-thirds of the captains in England and Scotland were replaced between October 1659 and mid-February 1660 is a fair one. There is also no doubt that the New Model Army officer corps that resulted comprised a much more disparate set of men than had emerged from the first purge ranging from Monck loyalists and a few restored Cromwellians at one extreme to doctrinaire republicans who had opposed the Fourth Army Coup at the other. There was nothing much in between apart from a few timeservers and those who had managed to keep their heads down during the two months of non-Parliamentary government.

The final stage in the transformation of the officer corps of the New Model Army came about once a stand-off between Monck and Parliament over control of the army had been resolved by Monck's responding to petitions from far and wide asking for MPs excluded from the Commons in the Second Army Coup of 1648-9 to be readmitted to the House. His reward was to be appointed Captain General with authority to remove and reappoint officers without first seeking Parliament's approval.[25] Monck's tinkering came about in three stages. Within hours of receiving his new powers, he began removing staunch republicans from the regiments Parliament had purged between late December and mid-February. The second spate of appointments and dismissals, a much smaller one, occurred in late April

22 It was fuelled by rumours that Monck might have supported the uprising had Sir George gained mass support: Gumble, *Life of Monck*, p. 103.
23 F. and D. pp. 135-7, 349-40, 494-5; Gumble, *Life of Monck*, pp. 101-2.
24 Sir Richard Baker, *A Chronicle of the Kings of England* (1665), p. 685.
25 CJ vii, p. 852; Gumble, *Life of Monck*, pp. 264-5.

following the suppression of a revolt led by Lambert, which had attracted little open support from the New Model Army officers and men but revealed a lot of sitting on hands by senior officers waiting on events. Taken together the two operations saw the disappearance from the army of about 80 troop and company commanders and the disbandment of two whole regiments of infantry.[26]

The final stage occurred between late June and mid-August when all the army officers' commissions were renewed under the king's signature. This saw ex-Royalists being brought into the army but in relatively small numbers and in a limited number of regiments. Some were replacements for time-servers like Francis Hacker, who looked out of place in an army pledged to defend the monarchy when he had signed the old king's death warrant. However, many of those who lost their positions as a result of the new influx were not cashiered. Instead they were re-commissioned at a lower rank in the same regiment with colonels becoming field officers and field officers captains.

The process of reforming the officer corps came to an end in September 1660 with Parliament's decision on Monck's advice to disband almost the entire New Model Army in England and Scotland, which included a provision that no new commissions were to be issued when vacancies occurred.[27] Within four months the number of infantry regiments fell from 24 to 4 and the number of cavalry regiments from 15 to two troops of horse.

Given the fact that by September 1660 under10 percent of the company and troop commanders who had been in the army a year and a half earlier were still in post makes it scarcely surprising that the salami treatment of purge following purge has attracted so much attention as an explanation of how the army lost its place as the most powerful piece on the board in mid seventeenth-century British politics. I do not reject this argument. The Restoration would have been impossible without the removal of so many troop and company commanders who had come out in opposition to government by one person in the shape of Protector Richard. However the disruption their removal caused in the army's ability to take political action by destroying the hierarchy of command and obedience may have been exaggerated.

The effect of the first purge of the summer of 1659 was been questioned earlier in this section on the grounds that the number of captains and above cashiered were less sweeping than a contemporary pamphlet claimed. Moreover, in quite a number of cases it put back in place officers removed during the Protectorate. Similarly the more numerous changes of the winter of 1659-60 were not necessarily as disruptive as has been claimed, as the following table shows:

Company and Troop Commanders in England and Scotland in mid-February 1660[28]

Total	In post in 10/59	Promoted or reinstated	Transfers from other regiments	Non-NMA Personnel	Insufficient data/ Unfilled posts
298*	121	70 + 10 = 80	32	13	30
	201		45		30

* 22 infantry regiment with 10 companies, 15 regiments of horse with 6 companies, and a regiment of dragoons with 4 troops. The number of vacancies in late February 1660 was probably five but may have been as high as fifteen.

Although officers moved from one regiment to another whilst others were brought into the army from outside, by far the larger number of new troop and company commanders in post on 24 February

26 The appointments and dismissals in regiments from 25 February onwards are listed in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53 under the names of their colonels. Some entries are undated but in many cases the dates are given in issues of weekly journals amongst the Thomason Tracts, most particularly Mercurius Publicus.

27 CJ viii, p. 143.

28 The figures are for the actual troop and company commanders, that is excluding the colonels but including the captain lieutenants. They exclude officers in the Irish brigade that had left England by late February, and the single infantry regiment from Flanders, also transferred to England during the summer of 1659, which formed part of the army stationed in Scotland.

1660 before Monck began his purge of the army in England were former junior officers in the regiment who had been promoted. To these should be added a much smaller number of men reinstated in a regiment in which they had previously served, making a total of 201 compared with 45 who came from outside the army or had previously been serving in another regiment. In addition there are presently 30 unknowns, but even if all were to turn out to be transfers from other regiments or complete outsiders, those company and troop commanders in post in mid-February 1660 who were 'of the regiment' would still be more than double their number. But this will almost certainly not have been the case. I have little doubt that some of the unknowns had been 'of the regiment' before the first purge of June to September 1659 when a considerable number of officers under the rank of captains are known to have been cashiered.[29] They are not currently recognised as such because, as mentioned in Chapter One, there is so little information about junior officers in post in the army between June 1650 and April 1659.

I would therefore conclude that changes in the officer corps conducted by parliament in May to October 1659 and in January-mid-February 1660 were significant, but that their scale has been exaggerated and their nature distorted. Continuity within the regiment and the troop and company insofar as the commissioned officers was concerned, should not be under-estimated. Monck's reforms in Scotland and the North of England between October 1659 and January 1660 and in other parts of England between late February and late May require more investigation. They were probably more significant, but the introduction of Royalists from mid-June onwards, though important for some regiments, had limited impact overall.

Peace-Time Soldiering and the Good Old Cause

So far in this chapter discussion has focused on short-term factors that may explain why the rallying cry of the Good Old Cause failed to call forth a powerful response from the army in the dying days of the English Republic. Such has been the fashion in studies of the politics of the mid-seventeenth century England written since the revisionists got into the driving seat in the nineteen-seventies.[30] However, in my opinion it is important not to neglect long-term factors. Some were the product of the New Model Army's origins and historical development. Others stem from the new role it took on in the sixteen-fifties. It is almost axiomatic that when an army changes from an instrument of war to a guarantor of peace (or an army of occupation, depending on one's viewpoint) so does its ethos and its internal politics.

First, army unity at the level of colonel and above, from the king's execution in 1649 to the death of Oliver Cromwell nine years later, may have ultimately been no more than an illusion created by Cromwell's skills of management. As pointed out above, the army was a coalition throughout its existence. Although some colonels such as Edmund Salmon of the 15th regiment of foot have been seen by Firth and Davies as administrators with no political axe to grind,[31] others had their own political and/or religious agendas which they would liked to have pursued during Oliver Cromwell's Protectorate. Having bottled up their anxieties or their aspirations during his lifetime, it seems reasonable to assume that his death, and the shortcomings of those who found themselves in his shoes, encouraged such men to speak out. This led them into disputes with their fellow officers and the forging of alliances outside the army with constituencies that were not necessarily the army's best friends.

Second, the extent to which senior officers were capable of using the army for their own ends was determined ultimately by trust, and the grandees, the derisive term used to describe the army leadership, had a long-standing reputation for using their men's grievances to further their own ends beginning with the lead-up to the First Army Coup in 1647. The experience of discontent in the lower ranks being

29 See above p. 33.
30 See above pp. 12–13.
31 F. and D., p. 534.

first welcomed by the grandees and then suppressed may have cut little ice after twelve years, but the more recent debentures' scandal, by which a much larger number of officers used their men's need for instant cash to deprive them of part of what they were owed in pay arrears to create large landholdings, was surely not forgotten. It cannot be known how many of those in the lower ranks who had been exploited were still in the army in late 1659, as muster rolls no longer exist, but even if the numbers were comparatively small, the knowledge of what had happened in the past would have been widely known, and the possibility that soldiers might lose out again became an increasingly vocal issue in England as arrears mounted up once more during the course of 1659.[32]

Third, there was the matter of absenteeism. Insofar as the army of occupation in Scotland in particular was concerned, a perennial cry of its commanders was that too many officers had managed to obtain leave from their regiments and were living for months at a time in England. When George Monck took charge in April 1654 after a lapse of over two years caused by ill-health and his duties as a fleet commander in the First Dutch War, he was given strict instructions as to how many company and troop commanders per regiment were allowed to be absent at any one time and for how long. However, there were ways of evading it, and it is very clear from his correspondence that he found it impossible to carry out his instructions to the letter, whilst William Clarke's warrant books covering the years 1654 to 1658 give a good indication of the scale of the problem.[33]

In the formations concerned prolonged absence was bound not only to erode the comradeship which bound together officer and officer and officers and men during lengthy military campaigns, but also to cause resentment amongst junior commissioned officers, non-commissioned officers and private soldiers, who did not have the influence to secure a break from duties in a cold and distant land. Sadly the recording of permissions for absence in the case of regiments quartered in England ceased when Fairfax resigned as lord general in June 1650.[34] However, the army's address to Richard Cromwell in September 1658 shows not only the presence in London and its environs of troop commanders and above whose regiments were stationed in distant parts of England but also considerable absenteeism amongst the company commanders of regiments of foot quartered in or close to the capital.[35]

I do not doubt that matters like this help to explain why Monck was able to retain the support of many of those in the lower ranks of his regiments during the stand-off between the armies in England and Scotland when their officers sided with Lambert.[36] However, there was one other factor that was the perennial curse of peacetime soldiering throughout human history, which has been discussed at length in the section two of this chapter. Although wartime conditions might force army units to campaign in distant parts of the British Isles in atrocious conditions for months at a time, there was a good chance that some of those who lasted the course would be rewarded by promotion as men senior to them died of wounds or disease or became physically incapable of continuing in service. In peacetime vacancies were less frequent and, as pointed out above, promotion within the regiment was certainly not guaranteed. Indeed considerably more vacancies were filled by outsiders than by internal promotion, and officers brought in from other regiments undermined regimental coherence in a similar way to prolonged

32 CJ vii, p. 791. Reece in *Army in Cromwellian England*, p. 197 tends to belittle pay arrears as driving a wedge between soldiers and their commanders, but the argument he makes is not convincing. The fact that very little was said about arrears in the two printed defences of the army's action in dissolving Parliament in October 1659 does not take into account the audience they were addressing. It would not have been tactful for the writers to put into the minds of their civilian readers the idea that yet another set of tax demands would be required to raise the money to pay the arrears. By the same token satisfaction of pay arrears looms large in letters sent by Monk to all the regiments in the army in February 1660 when MPs excluded in 1648 were readmitted to the House of Commons: Gumble, *Life of Monck,* pp. 263-4. Such an assurance was absolutely essential as the soldiers' first thought was likely to have been that the restored MPs would be hostile to the army's interests because it was the army that had expelled them from Parliament in the Second Army Coup.

33 CSPD 1654, p. 85; Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, pp. 93-109, passim; Worc. College, Clarke Mss 45-49.

34 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.

35 Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 178. All signed it in town except for two or three: Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, p. 406.

36 Examples are given in contemporary publications of units who followed their commanding officer into England or who just deserted, but they can be counted on the fingers of one hand, and are thus massively outnumbered by the units that remained with Monck: British Library (BL), Thomason Tracts, E 1010, (25); ibid, Mercurius Politicus, 15-23/11/59, 24/11-1/12/59.

absences. This conflicts with the impression that Reece gives that it was newcomers appointed after May 1659 who disrupted the normal process of promotion.[37] The bottleneck in promotions may also help to explain the intrigues of junior officers against their seniors for breaches of the law or moral turpitude, perhaps even more disturbing to regimental cohesion, but I do not wish to emphasise the point. Such happenings had been a characteristic of the New Model Army from the beginning.[38]

A stronger sign of the effects of thwarted ambition may perhaps be seen in the failure of junior officers to follow their superior officers into civilian life when the latter were removed during Oliver Cromwell's Protectorate. I have discussed this already, but at this point it is apposite to cite the first piece of evidence that questions the picture of sunny equilibrium in the officer corps prior to the purges that Reece has presented. In the memorandum of advice sent to Richard Cromwell soon after his father's death General Monck used words that can only be explained by the weakening of the bonds between seniors and junior officers once hostilities had ceased, with the implication that in the army of late 1658 officers and soldiers put their own interests before those of the men who commanded them. In order to get rid of officers hostile to the regime he recommended combining two regiments into one as a way of removing dissidents from the army. This, he continued, was not dangerous for, whatever the reason for an individual being cashiered, 'there is not an officer in the army that has interest enough to draw two men after him if he be out of place, as His Highness may remember by a recent example'.[39] Reece sees Monck's statement as evidence of the increasing professionalization of the army, with obedience being given to the rank not to the individual holding it. However, if that was indeed the case, the removal of officers during the purges that followed would have been a three-day wonder followed by business as usual, with obedience being transferred to the newcomers whoever they were; and this challenges the entire line of argument that the purges damaged the ability of the army to act as a unitary body by causing dislocation and uncertainty.

The following figures suggest initially that Monck may have been exaggerating a little. In 16 of the Model Army regiments quartered in England and Wales it is possible to calculate how many lieutenants, cornets, ensigns and quartermasters left the army between December 1659 and mid February1660 in troops and companies whose commanders had been cashiered.[40] They are as follows:

Junior Commissioned Officers in Post in October 1659

Arm	In post in 2/60 or promoted	No longer in post
Foot	53 (46 + 7)	24
Horse	39 (37 + 2)	49
Total	92 (83+ 9)	73

However, those junior officers who disappeared from their regiment will not necessarily have followed their troop and company commanders for reasons of solidarity. They are more likely to have been dismissed by Parliament because they too were under suspicion, whilst some may have decided to leave the army of their own accord.

In the case of the army in Scotland General Monck's commission books do not provide sufficient detail about junior officers in post in mid-February 1660 to make it possible to draw comparisons with those appointed by Parliament between July and September 1659, but a list does exist of commissioned

37 Reece, *The Army in Cromwellian England*, p. 203.
38 See for example *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 61-2, 72.
39 Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, p. 387. There is no doubt that Monck is referring Protector Oliver's purge of his own regiment of horse earlier in the year.
40 These are the regiments with full lists of commissioned officers copied down in the Journals of the House of Commons between June and October 1659 and 1 January and 15 February 1660.

officers of all ranks who deserted Monck in October and November 1659.[41] In most regiments the numbers of junior officers who followed the path of their troop or company commanders was very small indeed. Far more left or were removed in companies and troops whose captain had sided with Monck. Both point to a lack of empathy between officer and officer in the regiment as well as in the troop or company. However, it was not necessarily matters of principle that broke the chains of command forged out of duty and honour. Although some of those who left the army in Scotland of their own accord were clearly opposed to the stand Monck had taken, I cannot avoid the feeling that others acted with an eye to the main chance as the odds were at first heavily in his opponents' favour. John Lambert, who commanded the force sent against him, outnumbered Monck by at least three to two, and the latter was desperately short of cavalry.[42]

If the reason for not following their commanding officer's lead was because there was a chance that by so doing they would be able to fill his shoes, many junior officers made the right decision. Between October 1659 and February 1660 at least 100 junior officers are known to have gone up a rank or more in the New Model Army in England and Scotland. Moreover, this figure does not include information about men who became commissioned officers for the first time in the winter of 1659-60. As has already been stated, there is precious little information about the identity of those at the top of the non-commissioned hierarchy, sergeants (in the case of the infantry) and corporals (in the case of the cavalry). As a result a direct link cannot be made between the men in such positions in April 1659 and the new names that appear as ensigns of foot and quartermasters of horse in the year that followed. However, this is almost certainly where the new officers came from, and in Monck's army there is a pointer as to how they gained their promotion. His chaplain Thomas Gumble, in what is almost certainly a paraphrase of the general's own words, wrote that the method used to win the support of the rank and file for the stand Monck took against the army in England was for the senior non-commissioned officers to be encouraged to promote it, for 'these have more opportunity to observe discourse and inclinations of the soldiery and authority to make good impressions on them; these were particularly charged to do their duties with promises of preferment (a motive that never fails)'.[43]

It seems logical that the tendency to look to themselves rather than to follow their superior officers into oblivion would have become more pronounced in all ranks during the course of 1659. The prospect of advancement improved after Oliver Cromwell's death, but first the Protectorate must be overthrown and vacancies created by expelling the Cromwellians from the officer corps. In the months that followed opportunities for promotion multiplied with first the regiments in England and then those in Scotland being remodelled. Finally, a large number of vacancies were created between mid-October 1659 and mid-February 1660 as Monck and the restored Long Parliament removed Lambert loyalists. I would suggest, but very tentatively, that the new climate for advancement may help to explain why the lower ranks were more radical than their troop and company commanders and the troop and company commanders than the colonels and more senior officers, most particularly during Richard Cromwell's final weeks in power, but also why disruptive behaviour stopped short of the kind of direct action that had characterised the high points of Leveller influence in the army twelve years earlier.

Taking part in demonstrations or signing petitions intended to push their superiors into action can possibly be seen in the case of some, possibly many individuals, as evidence of opportunism rather than genuine radicalism. The more noise a junior or non-commissioned officer made the more likely was he to attract the eye of those in authority over him and thus to benefit from the purge that would follow the next putsch. But it was all a gamble. If the putsch failed those who had shouted loudest in its support would be the first to be expelled from the army. The alternative was to lie low, but even that was dangerous. In the words of one junior officer writing at the time: 'neither I nor any man else can so walk

41 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus 24/11-2/12/59.
42 Woolrych, *Britain in Revolution*, p. 745.
43 Gumble, *Life of Monck*, p. 141.

as to please all men'.[44] In such an atmosphere of insecurity which prevailed in the winter of 1659-60 it is scarcely surprising that army disintegrated as a political force with only those who had stood with Monck from the start serving as an island of stability in a sea of chaos.

Moving the argument a stage farther forward, perhaps the failure of the junior and non-commissioned officers to react negatively to the rush towards the restoration of the monarchy from late February 1660 was because the boil of blocked promotions had been lanced, with some officers having gained their desires and others cast into outer darkness. Few of the former would have considered that their good fortune might be short-lived that early in the year, but the cards were soon on the table when Monck browbeat the Council of Officers into accepting that Parliament, not the army, was to decide on the form of the new constitution. The army's future was therefore out of its hands. If Charles Stuart became King Charles II, it would not be through their action. All they could hope was that he would show some gratitude for their forbearance.

Conclusion

Reece rejected most previous explanations of the collapse of the New Model Army as either not useful or irrelevant. Instead he prioritised indecisive leadership and the succession of purges beginning in June 1659.[45] I agree wholeheartedly with the first point and accept that the second round of purges, but not the first, had a deleterious effect on the army's ability to act as one. However, I am not at all convinced by the inference he draws from Ludlow's remarks about the background of the new officers brought into the army, because the changes in the officer corps were not as Ludlow depicted them. The commissioning of rank outsiders with little or no recent military experience was a trickle during the Protectorate and little more than that in the purges of June to October 1659, January to February 1660 and February to early May 1660. It was not until the summer of 1660 that the trickle became somewhat bigger when the king gave commissions to a relatively small number of men who had fought for him and/or his father, but even so the newcomers were concentrated in a small number of regiments almost all of which had been disbanded by the end of the year. Instead many of the new captains and lieutenants were extremely well-known to the men they were to command as they were junior officers who had merely moved a rung or two up the ladder of promotion.

I would therefore argue that the collapse of the army as the most powerful piece in mid-seventeenth century British politics began in October, not June 1659. Alongside that I would place Sir Charles Firth's claim that pre-existing tensions within the army played their part, but they were institutional as well as religious,[46] and not just those between officers and men but also within the officer corps itself. Beyond that I have considerable regard for Christopher Hill's reminder that the army's existence depended in the last resort on taxes paid by the propertied classes the implication being that he who paid the piper eventually called the tune.[47] Moreover, the New Model was tethered by a rope that was pulling the interests of the two together as officers became landowners through the acquisition of the estates of the Crown, the Church and the most intransigent of the Royalists. In Ireland the synthesis of the two landed elites, civilian and military, created the Protestant Ascendancy that lasted for 250 years. Possibly something similar would have happened in England had Oliver Cromwell lived into the early sixteen-seventies.

44 Akerman, Letters from Roundhead Officers, p. 155.
45 *The Army in Cromwellian England*, pp. 191, 233.
46 Firth, *Cromwell's Army* (1962 ed.) p.380.
47 C. Hill, *God's Englishman: Oliver Cromwell and the English Revolution* (1970), p. 143.

Part II

The Regimental Listings: England and Scotland 1650-1656

Company and Troop Commanders: 30 June 1650

Infantry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Thomas Fairfax	Succeeded briefly by Oliver Cromwell, who was succeeded by Lt. Col. Goffe when Cromwell became col. of the new 22nd regt. F. in 10/50|
Lt. Col.	William Goffe	Col. 27/09/50[1]|
Major	Francis White	Lt. Col. by 12/50[2]|
Captains	James Priest	
	James Pitson	Succeeded by John Drake by 1/51[3]|
	Clement Keene	
	William Farley	
	Robert? Hammond	XXX. Took over Capt. Charles Bolton's co. | X at siege of Edinburgh Castle 12/50[4]|
	Richard Combes[5]	Succeeded by Capt. Miller before 9/51. Prob. transferred to 17th regt. H.[6]|
	XXX Straghan	Prob. took over Capt. George Hadfield's co. who D. c.1/50[7]|
Capt. Lt.	Robert Luson	Prob. took over Fairfax's co. in 6/50[8]|

1 BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer of the Commonwealth, 8-15/10/50.
2 Ibid, A Perfect Diurnal, 30/12/1650-6/1/1651.
3 Pitson was taken prisoner by the Scots in 10/50, but survived his captivity and was applying for pay arrears in late 1653: F. and D.; TNA. SP28/97, fo. 113. He lost his company early in 1651: BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Passages, 25/10-1/11/ 1651.
4 TNA, E 121 2/9/46, entries 502, 510. Hammond's first name is not yet known, but it was probably Robert: Chequers Court, Buckinghamshire, Ms 782, fo. 5. If so he may have been the Captain Robert Hammond who had served in Colonel Richard Shuttleworth's Lancashire regiment: TNA, SP 28/39, fo. 541.
5 Captain Combes's company is mentioned in 12/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 17, unfol; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 6/12/49. He probably succeeded Captain William Leigh who had secured a commission as major in a regiment serving in Ireland: TNA, E 121/2/9/46, entry 375. Combes had risen from trooper to cornet in James Sheffield's regiment in Essex's army, subsequently the 3rd regiment of horse in the New Model army: ibid, E121/2/9/46, entries 195, 412. Presumably he seized the chance to change regiment during the first army coup of 6/47 when Fairfax's regiment of foot lost so many of its original officers.
6 TNA, SP 28/93, fo. 430; ibid, SP 28/105, fo. 54. It is possible that Combes had transferred to the 17th regiment of cavalry as early as 12/50. For this see below p. 81.
7 Straghan was in command of a company in the regiment in 1650-52 and possibly later. He is mentioned for the first time in 5/50: ibid, E 121/2/9/46, entry 130; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 10/5/50. The officer cannot yet be positively identified as there were several Strachans in Parliament's armies. The most likely is the captain who had served in the earl of Manchester's regiment of foot in the Eastern Association army and been discharged at the formation of the New Model Army. Subsequently he had some connection with the garrison at Abingdon in Oxfordshire: Davies, 'Army of the Eastern Association', p. 92; L. Spring, *The Regiments of the Eastern Association* (Bristol, 1998), p. 65; TNA, SP 28/42, fo. 1066. If this was he, his first name was James: ibid, SP 28/301, fo. 803. James Strachan's arrears were purchased by Major Richard Beamont, who like the Captain Strachan in this regiment was in the army in Scotland in 1650-1: CSPD 1656-7, p. 298; TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 259.
8 CSPD 1650, p. 448. Luson had served as ensign and lieutenant in Fairfax's company: TNA, E 121/2/9/46, entry 65. He may be the man described as Robert Lawford who was commissioned as ensign in Fairfax's company c. 6/47 in succession to Charles Bolton: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 3.

2nd Regiment: 1st Battalion[9]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Alban Cox	Col. in Herts. Succeeded William Sydenham 6/49[10]|
Lt. Col.	Richard Ashfield	Col. of the regt. by 4/51[11]|
Major	John Barber	Succeeded John Cobbett as major c. 7/49| Left 7/50[12]|
Captains	William Symonds	Succeeded Barber as major by 12/50[13]|
	James Mayer	Lt. to Lt. Col. Ashfield. Succeeded Major Cobbett as captain[14]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Heyrick[15]	
New Companies		
Captains[16]	Lionel Lingwood	Commissioned 17/5/50[17]. Possibly capt. in Francis Russell's regt. F. Eastern Association army|
	Robert Baynes[18]	XXX
	XXX Fowlis[19]	
	XXX Newhouse/ Newman[20]	

9 The regiment was quartered in southern England between 10/48 and 6/50 when five companies were ordered to join the force about to invade Scotland. The composition of the battalion so formed is confirmed by TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 68 and ibid, SP 28/70, fos. 366-75. The other five companies could not be spared as they garrisoned those parts of the Channel Islands under Commonwealth control at a time when Jersey was in royalist hands: TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 123; CJ vi, p. 557.

10 See TNA, SP 28/60, fo. 34 for the earliest mention of Cox as colonel. Cox's Hertfordshire regiment appears to have shrunk to a militia troop of horse by 6/48: CSPD 1648-9, p. 115. For his company being in Scotland in 4/51, see TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 19.

11 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 19.

12 Barber had served as a captain in the earl of Manchester's regiment of foot in the Eastern Association army and then as major in Cox's regiment in Hertfordshire: TNA, E 121/4/8/72, entry 1. He appears to have taken over Captain Rogers's company. He refused to take part in the invasion of Scotland: Whitelock, *Memorials,* p. 466.

13 TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 18.

14 Ibid, SP/28/133/1, fos. 55-6; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 4.

15 Heyrick was commissioned in 11/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 4.

16 When the first battalion was ordered to join the Scottish expedition in 6/50, it was increased in size by the addition of four companies, two newly raised and two from the Hull garrison: CSPD 1650, pp. 163-5.

17 His and Baynes's companies seem to have been newly raised as all their officers were commissioned at the same time: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 4; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. A Captain Lingwood had been listed in the 7th regiment of foot in 3/45 but does not appear to have taken up his command. For this, see M. Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* vol. i (Solihull 2015), p. 46.

18 The three commissioned officers in this company are named in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 2. It may have belonged to Colonel Bright's regiment of foot in the Northern Brigade, which joined the New Model Army in 1648 and is designated as the 14th regiment in my enumeration. Baynes apparently took over Captain John Lawson's company in that regiment in 5/50: TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 540. However, at almost the same moment Captain Richard Rokeby was commissioned to succeed Lawson: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 1/5/50. I do not know the answer to this conundrum, but my hunch is that Baynes's company was newly raised and had never belonged to the 14th regiment of foot.

19 Fowlis's company had been initially assigned to Colonel Overton's regiment, but it marched with Cox's regiment in 6/50: TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 43.

20 Newhouse was described as commander of another company of Colonel Overton's regiment 'now marching with Colonel Cox's regiment' and in the charge of Captain Robert Baynes. At the time Overton was governor of Hull.

2nd Battalion	Name	Military career
Captains	James Harrison[21]	
	John Clarke	
	Arthur Helsham	
	James Symcock	Lt. to Capt. Thomas Butler. Capt. in 11/49[22]|
	Samuel Clarke	Ex capt. lt. Succeeded Capt. Maurice Bowen[23]|

21 In 4/51 or thereabouts Harrison was promoted to major (or possibly acting major as the most senior officer in the battalion). He commanded it in the capture of Jersey in 10/51, and was in Ireland with what was left of the battalion in 1/53: CSPD 1651, pp. 124-5, 161; F. and D.; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 309.

22 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 4; TNA, E 121/3/3/129, entry 6; ibid, E 121/2/49, entry 1.

23 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 4.

3rd Regiment 1st Battalion[24]		

24 This battalion was shipped to southern Ireland during the winter of 1649-50: CSPD 1649-50, pp. 399, 429, 593. Its subsequent history is recorded in Part IV.

2nd Battalion[25]	**Name**	**Military career**
Lt. Col.	John Clarke	Ex capt. and major in the regt. Succeeded Thomas Smith D. 1/50, who had succeeded Lt. Col. Salmon|
Major	Phillip Ebzery	Ex capt. in the regt. Major by 5/50 in succession to Clarke[26]|
Captains	Richard Aske	
	Nathaniel Chase	
	Lewis Northcott	Lt. to Lt. Col. Edward Salmon[27]|
Additional Companies[28]		
Captains	Robert Smith	Lt. to Lt. Col. Clarke[29]|
	XXX Hooper	In post in 9/51|
	XXX Davison	XXX
	Henry Davies	Almost certainly capt. in the 12th regt. F.[30]|
	Maurice Bowen	In post in 9/51. Formerly capt. 2nd regt. F.[31]|

25 The second battalion was stationed in the southwest of England between 1649 and 1652 where it took part in the capture of the Scilly Isles in 4/51: R.L. Bowley, Scilly at War, pp. 39-62. In 4/50 five companies were raised to replace those that had left with Waller, but Clarke was not promoted to colonel. Waller remained nominal colonel until late 1651: TNA, SP 28/47, fo. 552; ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 494; CSPD 1651-2, pp. 22, 47.
26 Ebzery, Aske and Smith, the company commanders in Clarke's brigade and later in Clarke's regiment, had their arrears settled in the form of Irish land in 1655: BL, Additional Ms 35102, fos. 49, 71.
27 Ibid, E 121/1/6/unnumbered, entry 5; ibid, E 121/1/6/63, entry 76. He was in post before 2/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.
28 These were the five captains commissioned in 4/50. Those who were gazetted in from other regiments did not bring their companies with them: ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 5; CSPD 1650, p. 144, 540.
29 Smith was the commander of the first of the new companies listed in the commissions' book: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 5. His commission was dated 7/5/50: ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.
30 Ibid, E 121/1/2/36B, entry 3. See also Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, note 411.
31 TNA, SP 28/67, fo. 476.

4th Regiment[32]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Isaac Ewer	

32 The regiment was shipped to Ireland in 8/49. See below Part IV for its subsequent history.

5th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Barkstead	
Lt. Col.	Ralph Cobbett	Col. 24th regt. F. by 8/51|
Major	John Biscoe	
Captains	Arthur Young	Transferred to the 24th regt. F. as major by 8/51|
	Richard Pooley[33]	
	John Miller	
	Henry Dorney	Transferred as major to the 2nd regt. F. by 8/51|
	John Groome[34]	
	Thomas Buckner	

	William Read	Prob. left regt. by 9/51[35]|
Capt. Lt.	Roger Jones	Lt. to Major Ralph Cobbett. Succeeded William Bayly[36]| Capt. 24th regt. F. by 8/51|
Possibles Captains	Jeremy Campfield	Lt. to Major Robert Cobbett 5th regt. F. and prob. to his successor John Biscoe, but he may have become capt. before transferring to the 24th regt. F. with Lt.Col. Ralph Cobbett[37]|
	Richard Hatt	Ens. to Capt. Pooley and then lt. to Ralph Cobbett c. 2/50[38]| Capt. 24th regt. F. by 8/51|
	William Jones	Lt. to Capt. Dorney[39]| Capt. 24th regt. F. at the battle of Worcester in 9/51 where he was killed|

33 Pooley was in the regiment in 2/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. I have not found sufficient evidence to identify him as the Captain Pooley serving in Conway Castle in the early 1650s, but as the castle came under the aegis of the 10th regiment of foot, which by that time included some units which had been in the 5th regiment of foot, there is a tenuous connection: CSPD 1652-3, p. 355; ibid 1654, p. 397.

34 It is not known when John Groome left the regiment, but it may have been as early as 15/3/50 when entries in William Clarke's papers suggest that he had been succeeded by Lieutenant Richard Hatt of Lieutenant Colonel Cobbett's company: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 8; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. Groome was captain in the 10th regiment of foot in 1654. For the close link between the two regiments from 1651 onwards see below pp. 62, 64, 86.

35 Read's ensign was commissioned in 1650: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 2/2/50; ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 13. Read's own commission is not recorded in Fairfax's commissions' book. His name does not appear amongst the officers of either the 5th or the 24th regiment of foot in late 1651.

36 TNA, E 121/2/11/17B, entry 8. Jones was commissioned either as captain or as captain lieutenant on 2/2/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 8; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. He had previously been ensign to Major Richbell in Colonel Cunningham's regiment in Essex's army and then lieutenant in the 5th regiment of foot: TNA, E 121/2/11/17B, entries 8, 78.

37 Ibid, E 121/2/11/17B, entry 83; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 41, fo. 102; ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 8.

38 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 385 (19); Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 8; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. See also p. 79 below.

39 Ibid, fo. 8. This Captain Jones was killed at the battle of Worcester in 9/51 serving in the 24th regiment of foot . See p. 80 below.

6th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Richard Ingoldsby	
Lt. Col.	Thomas Kelsey	
Major	John Mill	
Captains	Francis Allen	
	John Grime	
	Richard Wagstaffe	
	John Hunt	
	Francis Messervy[40]	
	William Duckett	
	XXX Davies	Capt. Lt. in the regt. Prob. succeeded Capt. John Shrimpton in 9/49[41]|
Capt. Lt.	Consolation Fox	Lt. to Capt. Grime 7/47. Succeeded Abraham Davies[42]|
Possible Captain	Thomas Ingoldsby	Prob. succeeded Capt. Messervy[43]|

40 Messervy was issued with a pass to go to France in 4/50 suggesting that he had left the regiment: CSPD 1650, pp. 534, 543.

41 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 13. This man was probably Abraham Davies, captain lieutenant in the regiment in 6/47 or soon afterwards, who was a full captain in the early 1650s, but he could have been John Davies, Shrimpton's lieutenant: ibid, Clarke Ms 41, fo. 103; ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 13; TNA, SP 28/86, fo. 191.

42 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 13.

43 Thomas Ingoldsby was captain in the 6th regiment of foot by 6/50: ibid.

7th Regiment[44]		

44 The whole regiment was shipped to Ireland in 8/49. For its subsequent history, see pp. XXX.

8th Regiment[45]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Sir Arthur Haselrig (H)	
Lt. Col.	**Paul Hobson (H)**	Hobson had been replaced by Major John Mayer of the 15th regt. H. by 7/50[46]|
Major	Jeremiah Tolhurst (H)	
Captains	Abraham Holmes (M)	
	Robert Hutton (H)[47]	
	Ethelbert Morgan (M)	
	James Hart (M)	X at the storming of Dundee 1/9/51 in the 20th regt. F.|
	John Topping (H)	
	Henry Mason (M)	XXX Succeeded Capt. Richard Deane 3/50|
	James Ross/Rose (M)	Lt. to Capt. Gabriel Earwood who he succeeded in 8/49| X storming Callendar House, Scotland in the 20th regt. F. 7/51[48]|
Capt. Lt.	John Mason (H)	Lt. to Capt. Robert Hutton[49]|

45 Five companies of the 8th regiment of foot were removed in 8/50 to help form a regiment for Major General George Monck. To Monck's regiment went the companies of Abraham Holmes (at the time promoted to major) and Captains Hart, Ross, Morgan and Mason. The last warrant for their companies' pay in the 8th regiment of foot occurs in TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 13. Those officers who remained with Haselrig are identified by the symbol (H). The other five companies that were incorporated into what will be described as the 20th regiment of foot came from the 11th regiment.
46 The two officers appear to have been allowed to change commands with Hobson becoming major of the 15th regiment of horse and Mayer lieutenant colonel of the 8th regiment of foot: ibid, SP 28/70, fos. 3, 385.
47 Hutton transferred to Haselrig's new regiment of horse in 8/50. His successor was probably Captain Lieutenant Mason.
48 TNA, SP 28/133/4, fo. 440; ibid, SP 28/125, fo. 19; F. and D. For Ross's rank in 1647, see LJ ix, pp. 153-6.
49 John Mason succeeded Henry Goodyear after 12/49 and before 2/50: TNA, SP28/133/4, fos. 59-61: CJ vi, p. 297. For his lieutenancy in the regiment, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 10.

9th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Pride	
Lt. Col.	John Mason	Lt. Col. 16th regt. F. in 6/51|
Major	Waldine Lagoe	Succeeded Mason as lt. col.|
Captains	Thomas Parsons	Succeeded Lagoe as major|
	Roger Alsop	Resigned his co. when appointed Adj. Gen. F. c. 9/50|
	Joseph Salkeld	Cashiered for buggery 11/50[50]|
	John Hawes	Prob. did not serve in Scotland. Replaced not by his lt. John Ward, a capt. in the regt. by 9/51, but by Nicholas Andrews[51]|
	Richard Mosse	
	John Pearson	In post in 12/50| Prob. moved to the 18th regt. F. as major before 9/51[52]|
	Richard Kemp	Lt. in the regt. in 4/47. Capt. by 11/49[53]|
Capt. Lt.	William Galhampton	

50 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 7-14/11/50.
51 TNA, SP 28/96, fo. 279. Andrews was Captain Pearson's lieutenant: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 12.
52 TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 12. For his probable move see below p. 74.
53 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 41, fo. 103; ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 12.

10th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir William Constable	
Lt. Col.	Wroth Rogers	Major in the regt. Succeeded Mark Grime c. 5/49. Gov. of Hereford by 5/50[54]| Left regt. possibly as late as its remodelling in 10/51. Succeeded by Roland Dawkins by 12/52|
Major	John Wade	Major 11th regt. F. Transferred c. 12/49[55]|
Captains	Lawrence Nunney[56]	
	Giles Saunders	Possibly succeeded by Capt. Lt. Samuel Ross|
	Thomas Disney[57]	Replaced by William Draper , capt. in the Oxfordshire militia, in 7/51[58]|
	William Style	
	Matthew Cadwell	
	John Nicholas	
	Roger Lewis	In post in 7/51[59]|
Capt. Lt.	Samuel Ross[60]	
Possible Capt. Lt.	Henry Hedworth	Ens. 10th regt. F. 3/47, Lt. c.6/47[61]. Full capt. 54|
Attached Cos.		
Captains	Thomas Pury	In the regt. in 6/50| Co. sent from Bristol to Ireland 4/51[62]|
	Richard Bamford	XXX. Major in Jamaica where he died[63]|

54 CSPD 1650, p. 150.
55 A Major Wade was commissioned in the regiment in 9/49. The clerk wrote down his first name as William but this was a mistake: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 7. That John Wade was truly major in Constable's regiment is shown by his soldiers' claims for pay arrears: TNA, E 121/2/10/49, passim. He later became governor of the Isle of Man and served as administrator of the state's Forest of Dean ironworks throughout the 1650s. It therefore made sense for him to command a company in the 10th regiment of foot which garrisoned Gloucester until 1652.
56 Nunney was in the regiment in 1650: ibid, E 121/2/10/49, entry 130.
57 Disney commanded the company in 5/51 when it was moved from Wallingford to Oxford: CSPD 1651, p. 188: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.
58 CSPD 1650. p. 505. Draper's commission in the 10th regiment of foot was signed by General Cromwell early in 7/51: W.C. Abbott, *The Writings and Speeches of Oliver Cromwell* (4 vols.,Harvard, 1938) ii, pp. 431-2.
59 TNA, SP 28/79, fo. 509.
60 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 102-3.
61 BL, Thomason Tracts E 390 (26); Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 7. A John Hedworth claimed for pay arrears having served as ensign and lieutenant to Captain Style in the 10th regiment of foot: TNA, E 121/5/7/21, entry 195. John may be a clerical error.
62 Ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 570; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 370.
63 This loose company, which had been commanded by Captain Lillingston, was taken onto the army payroll in 2/49: CJ vi, p. 139. Bamford took charge of it in 4/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 7; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 24/4/50. For Bamford's service in Jamaica, see C. Firth ed., Narrative of Venables, *Camden Society* (1900), pp. 67-9, 117, 125.

11th Regiment[64]	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Fenwick	
Lt. Col.	Thomas Read (F)	Col. 17th regt. F. 6/51. Succeeded by Timothy Wilkes, formerly lt.col. 13th regt. F.[65]
Major	Robert Read (F)	Prob. succeeded John Wade as major, who had transferred to the 10th regt. F. in c. 12/49 possibly because of his expertise in iron manufacture[66]
Captains	**Edward Orpin**[67]	
	Robert Anderson (F)	
	William Knowles (F)	
	William Gough (M)	
	Thomas Hughes (F)	
	XXX Andrews[68]	
	William Collinson[69] (F)	
Capt. Lt.	Matthew Fann	Capt. 17th regt. H. after 7/50 but before 4/51[70]
Possibles Captains	John Robbins (M)	
	Benjamin Groome (M)[71]	

64 The regiment was divided in 7/50. Five companies were combined with five from the 8th regiment of foot to provide a regiment for Major General George Monck. The officers who joined Monck were Gough certainly, and possibly Robbins and Groome. The two Reads, Knowles, Hughes and Collinson remained with Fenwick: F and D.

65 Wanklyn, *Reconstituting the New Model Army* i, p. 160.

66 F. and D. have Robert Read as captain in 7/50, but that is wrong. He was commissioned as major of Fenwick's regiment on 2/5/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 11; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. Presumably another officer acted as major in late 1649 and very early 1650.

67 Orpin probably left the regiment in c. 1/50: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 103. He appears to have served for a short time in the 5th or the 10th regiment of foot in 1/54: TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 17.

68 Andrews had a captaincy in 1649 when Major Wade was still in the regiment and Matthew Fann was still a lieutenant: ibid, E 121/5/7/18, entries 72-5. Two other claims have Andrews as captain before 5/5/49 when Overton was colonel: ibid, E 121/1/1/61, entry 5; ibid, E 121/2/9/39, entry 3. If Andrews's first name was Francis, he had transferred into the regiment from the 6th regiment of foot: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 132.

69 Collinson had previously served as lieutenant and captain in Lord Grey's Leicestershire regiment and as captain lieutenant in Fenwick's previous regiment: TNA, E 121/1/7/57, entries 98-9; ibid, SP 28/125, fo. 196; ibid, SP 28/113, pt. iv, fo. 36. He was a full captain in the 11th regiment of foot by 2/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 25/2/50.

70 See below p. 81.

71 Robbins and Groome have been described as serving as captains in the 11th regiment of foot in 7/50: F. and D., pp. 535-6. I have no record of this or of their serving as junior officers in the regiment. However, they could well have been junior officers. A petition from the regiment presented in 11/49 only gives the names of five of the nine lieutenants: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 16, fo. 9.

12th Regiment[72]	Name	Military career

72 The whole regiment was shipped to Ireland in 8/49. For its subsequent history, see pp. 181, 202, 232, 241, 248.

Dragoons

Regiment[73]	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Okey H	
Major	Tobias Bridge H	
Captains	William Neale Dr	Must have D. before 1/12/50. Succeeded by Capt. Combes[74]
	Francis Freeman Dr	Left regt. 7/50[75]. Succeeded by Capt. Matthew Fann
	John Daborne Dr	Lt. to Capt. Garland late 47. Succeeded him c. 6/49[76]
	Richard Castle Dr	Presumably took over Francis Bolton's troop[77]
Capt. Lt.	George Leigh	Succeeded Richard Nicholetts[78]

73 The regiment was in the process of being converted from dragoons to cavalry in 6/50. For the various stages in the change from a

ten troop regiment of dragoons to a six troop regiment of cavalry see Appendix II. The troop commanders in the summer of 1650 are confirmed by a warrant issued in mid-August: ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 19. A warrant issued in the following month names Freeman's replacement: ibid, fo. 389.

74 See p. 82 below.

75 Cromwell removed Freeman from his command just as the army was about to cross the Scottish border because of tension between the captain and his colonel. Subsequently Freeman was to publish a long account of Okey's year-long attempt to get him to resign because he disapproved of his unorthodox religious beliefs: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 615 (7). For a brief resume of the publication, see F. and D.

76 Daborne had presumably taken over Garland's troop. His career had begun as a surgeon in Sir Arthur Haselrig's regiment of horse in Waller's army: TNA, E 121 1/1/26, fo. 57; ibid, E 121 1/1/26B, unfol.

77 Castle's junior officers were mentioned in entries in the commissions' book in 1650, and he conducted 100 recruits to Scotland for Okey's regiment in 1651: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fos.26-7; ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 7/1/50; CSPD 1651, p. 558. Earlier in the war Castle had been cornet to Captains John Crofts and John Bayly in the Gloucester garrison. He raised a supernumerary troop in the Second Civil War. This was disbanded in late 1648: J. Washbourne, *Bibliographica Gloucestrensis* (1825), p. cxxv: TNA, E 121/5/7/109, entry 66.

78 Leigh was commissioned on 20/5/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. Prior to that he had been lieutenant to Major Done in the 7th regiment of foot and then a member of Fairfax's lifeguard. Nothing is yet known of his career between 2/48 when the lifeguard was disbanded and 5/50. For his name as Leigh, see BL, Thomason Tracts E 615 (7). He was still apparently in post in 4/51: ibid, Perfect Passages, 25/4-2/5/51.

Cavalry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Thomas Fairfax	
Major	John Browne	Left the regt. c. 4/51|
Captains	William Packer	Succeeded Browne as major|
	William Disher	Left the regt. by 10/51. Succeeded by Lt. Malin[79]|
	Richard Merest	Adj. Gen. H. 6/51.[80] Succeeded by William Barrington|
	William Covell	Removed from command in 10/50. Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Gladman[81]|
Capt. Lt.	John Gladman	

79 TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 836; ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 219.

80 BL, Thomason Tracts, The Weekly Intelligencer, 10-17/6/51.

81 TNA, SP28/91, fo. 636.

2nd Regiment[82]		

82 The whole regiment was shipped to Ireland in 8/49. For its subsequent history, see below p. 191.

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Harrison	
Major	Stephen Winthrop	Major by 12/49 in succession to Henry Cromwell[83]|
Captains	John Peck	
	John Spencer	
	John Barker[84]	
	William Boteler	Served as capt. in Leonard Lytcott's regt. H. in the Northampton garr.| Major 16th regt. H. 6/51|
Capt. Lt.	Joseph Strange?	Cor. to Col. Harrison's troop post 47.[85] He succeeded Capt. Lt. Perry who may have taken service as capt. in Ireton's regt. H. in Ireland [86]|
Attached troop[87]		
Captain	Col. John Jones	

83 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 535. Henry Cromwell's commission to command a new regiment of horse for service in Ireland was issued on 19/11/49: CSPD 1649-50, p. 555.

84 Barker's claim for pay arrears indicates that he had served as lieutenant and captain in Harrison's regiment: TNA, E 121/3/4/ unnumbered A, entry 96; ibid, B, entry 1. He left between 1652 and 1654, but in 6/59 he accused a Captain Gough in his old

regiment of being slavishly devoted to the Protectorate: F. and D. In 5/49 Gough had been Barker's lieutenant: TNA, SP 28/60, fo. 690. John Barker was probably the Captain Barker whose troop put down a riot in Deptford in 5/51 when Harrison was in overall command in the south of England during Cromwell's absence in Scotland. However, the 3rd regiment of horse seems to have been sent away from the London area during May to coordinate the defence of the north of England against a possible Scottish invasion: F. and D.; J. Nickolls ed., *Original Letters and Papers of State Addressed to Oliver Cromwell* (1743), p. 66.

85 See Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 140. Strange was later captain of Colonel Jones's troop. For this see below p. 67.

86 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 106. See also below p. 191.

87 According to F. and D. this troop joined the regiment in c. 9/49. Its notional commander was the MP and regicide Colonel John Jones. However, Harrison was not instructed to take Jones's troop into his regiment until 10/5/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. F. and D. suggest that it was a replacement for Henry Cromwell's troop, but this is also incorrect. It was an attached troop until at least 3/53. For this see below p. 67.

4th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	
Major	Hezekiah Haynes	Capt. in the 5th regt. H. Succeeded William Coleman as major c. 10/49. Prob. took over Capt. Gilman Taylor's troop[88]|
Captains	Richard Sankey	In post c. 3/51[89]| Lt. Col. 24th regt. F. by c. 5/51|
	Griffith Lloyd	
	Stephen White	
	Joseph Blissett	Ex capt. lt. in this regt. he took over Major Coleman's troop in 10/49[90]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Else	Lt. to Major Coleman in 3/49. Capt. Lt. 10/49[91]|

88 The likelihood is that Gilman Taylor changed places with Hezekiah Haynes between 6/49 and 10/49. Another officer who may have switched between the two regiments was Richard Ashby, cornet to Major Coleman in 1649, and then captain lieutenant to Colonel Twistleton by 1653: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 19; F. and D.

89 Sankey contributed part of his wages towards the relief of impoverished Scots: BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Passages 25/4-2/5/51. A Richard Sankey was lieutenant colonel of the 24th regiment of foot by 8/51.

90 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 19.

91 Else was lieutenant to Captain Coleman in 5/46: TNA, SP 28/38, fo. 119. His commission as captain lieutenant was issued in 10/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 19.

5th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Phillip Twistleton	
Major	James Berry	Col. 16th regt. H. 6/51[92]. Succeeded by Capt. Cambridge as major and Lt. Thomas Deane as troop commander|
Captains	John Nelthorpe	Adj. Gen. H. 6/51. Succeeded by Theophilus Hart[93]|
	Owen Cambridge	Major in this regt. 6/51[94]|
	Henry Beale[95]	
	Gilman Taylor	Succeeded Capt. Peart[96]| D. in Scotland before 1/51[97]|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Ashby?	Lt. 4th regt. H. [98]|

92 F. and D.

93 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 15. Nelthorpe was appointed adjutant general of horse in 6/51 and probably gave up his troop of horse at that time like his predecessors: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Weekly Intelligencer, 10-17/6/51. If so, Theophilus Hart is likely to have been his successor.

94 It is likely that Thomas Deane succeeded Cambridge as troop commander.

95 Captain Henry Beale is mentioned in 23/3/50 with a lieutenant Deane: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. Beale was probably the Lieutenant Henry Beale of Captain John Ferguson's company in the 9th regiment of foot: TNA, E 121/4/7/118B entries 6/7. Ferguson left the regiment in c. 1648 but Beale did not succeed him as captain.

96 Peart was still in command of his troop in 18/12/49 but I do not have a later reference: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 17, unfol. He probably withdrew once a campaign in Scotland became probable.

97 Taylor is mentioned as being in this regiment on 24/4/50:Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 23. He had been a troop commander in the 3rd regiment of horse, and his transfer was part of a more extensive exchange of officers between the two regiments involving promotion for Captain Hezekiah Haynes who moved in the opposite direction: ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo.23. The key evidence relates to William Buck, Taylor's lieutenant in the 3rd regiment, who was captain in the 5th regiment of horse in 1651, in succession to Taylor who died during the course of the Scottish campaign: ibid, fo. 19; CJ vii, p. 38.

98 Ashby had been a cornet in Fleetwood's regiment in 3/49 and was lieutenant in 10/49. His predecessor as captain lieutenant in Twistleton's regiment may have been Richard Franklin whose commission was issued between 7/47 and early 1649. Franklin left for Ireland in the summer of 1649, but as Ashby's first mention as captain lieutenant is in 1654 another officer may have succeeded Franklin: ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fos. 19, 23; F. and D.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Disbrowe	
Major	John Blackmore	
Captains	John Jenkins	
	Edward Scotten	
	Joseph Wallington	Ex capt. lt. in the regt. Succeeded John Blackwell in 6/49|
	Roger West[99]	Succeeded George Ensor in 3/50. Ensor had been drowned at sea in 2/50[100]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

99 West seems to have served in Sir Thomas Fairfax's lifeguard. He held the rank of captain in 1/48 but nothing further is known about his earlier military career: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 93.

100 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 4-11/2/1651.

7th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Nathaniel Rich	
Major	Azariah Husbands	
Captain	**Thomas Ireton**	Gov. of Landgate Fort in Suffolk by 4/50. Left the regt. before 10/51. D. 52[101]|
	John Merriman	
	Thomas Babbington	Capt. Lt. in the regt. Succeeded Capt. Henry Barton c. 6/49|
	George Elsmore	Lt. to Capt. Francis Hawes. Succeeded him prob. in 1/49[102]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas French	Succeeded Capt. Lt. Babbington[103]|

101 Like many officers who became garrison commanders Ireton eventually gave up his command in the army. His replacement was probably Edmund Lisle his lieutenant, who was certainly a captain in the regiment in 10/51: TNA, SP 28/45, fo. 307; ibid, E 121/2/11/19, entry 344. Ireton's will was made after he had heard of his brother Henry's death in Ireland in 11/51. It was proved in early 1652: Abstract of PCC wills 1652-3, p. 92.

102 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 182. Elsmore may have taken over the troop in 1/49. Hawes had been unhappy at the removal of King Charles I from the Isle of Wight, an important early stage in the Second Army Coup. Elsmore's name appears in a list of captains on the island in 1/49: BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f13 (71).

103 Thomas French's commission as captain lieutenant was issued on 5/6/49 immediately before that of Babbington's as captain: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 21. He had served as quartermaster, cornet and lieutenant to Babbington, first in Lord Grey's regiment and then in a Herefordshire troop of horse: TNA, E 121/2/9/33, entry 11; ibid, E 121/2/11/19, entry 118.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Matthew Tomlinson	
Major	Ralph Knight	
Captains	Ralph Margery	
	Thomas Rawlins	Gone from the regt. by 6/51 if not before[104]|
	Thomas Johnson	
	Robert Glyn	
Capt. Lt.	William Raunce[105]	
Possibles Captain Capt. Lt	 XXX Beamont[106] Thomas Symnell?	 XXX Cor. to Major Knight[107]|

104 F. and D. claim that Rawlins went to Ireland and became a major of horse, but they do not provide any supportive evidence. However, despite the fact that his name does not occur in any of the numerous pay warrants issued for the Irish army cavalry and dragoons between 6/49 and 6/50, I am happy to acknowledge that Raunce's promotion described in the next footnote makes Rawlins's move earlier rather than later in date. Possibly Rawlins went to Ireland as a captain of horse and was quickly promoted, but in my opinion he was the Thomas Rawlins who was successively captain and major in Colonel Daniel Axtell's regiment of foot. For his military career in Ireland, see below pp. 212, 233.

105 Raunce was seemingly a full captain in the regiment by 6/50. He must therefore have become commander of Captain Rawlins's troop as all the other troop commanders of 1649 were still in post: TNA, E 121/1/6/117, entry 374; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 15; CSPD 1650, p. 582.
106 There is no doubt that there was a Captain Beamont in the 8th regiment of horse in c. 5/51, the reference in F. and D. being supported by TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 20. However, I cannot see how he can possibly have been a troop commander. If he was Captain Richard Beamont, he was also apothecary extraordinary to the army in Scotland: ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 259.
107 There had been a Corporal Symnall in Knight's troop in the Eastern Association army: Spring, *Eastern Association,* p. 53. *T*homas Symnell was captain lieutenant of the regiment when commissioned as full captain in 1654: F. and D.

9th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Edward Whalley	
Major	Robert Swallow	
Captains	John Grove	Major 15th regt. H. 6/51. Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Dale|
	William Evanson	
	John Savage	Left the regt. by 10/51. Succeeded by Lt. Sabberton|
	Edmund Chillenden	Succeeded Capt. Henry Cannon by 6/51[108]|
Capt. Lt.	Daniel Dale	Capt. in the regt. by 6/51|

108 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 67.

10th Regiment[109]		

109 Fairfax had disbanded the regiment in 6/49 after the Leveller revolt: F. and D.

11th Regiment[110]		

110 The regiment was shipped to Ireland in 8/49 after being extensively remodelled in the aftermath of the Leveller uprising three months earlier. For its subsequent history, see below Part IV.

The Lifeguard[111]		

111 The Lifeguard was seemingly re-constituted in late 1648 or early 1649, but with only about twenty troopers. The number was increased to 60 after Oliver Cromwell became lord general: F. and D.

Regiments added to the Army in 1647-9

Infantry

13th Regiment[112]		

112 The whole regiment left for Ireland in 8/49. For its subsequent history, see below Part IV.

14th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Bright	Resigned 7/50. Succeeded by John Lambert[113]|
Lt. Col.	William Goodrick[114]	Lt. Col. in the Northern Brigade under Lambert[115]| Replaced by Major Carter by 1/51, who resigned in 7/51[116]. He was succeeded as lt. col. in due course by Major John Cobbett|
Major	Andrew Carter[117]	Major of the regt. in 10/49 and then lt. col.[118]| Succeeded by John Cobbett by 4/51[119]|
Captains	Henry Pownall/Pennell	
	John Spencer	D. 6/51|
	John Greenleaf	
	John Lambert	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt.[120]|
	Christopher Skipper	

	Richard Rokeby/ Rookesby??[121]	Capt. Lt. to Col. Syler in the Boston garr. Commissioned to succeed Capt. Lawson[122]| Left regt. before 10/51. Prob. succeeded by Richard Elton|
	John Hubblethorne?[123]	
Capt. Lt.	John Drake??[124]	

113 The regiment refused to accept George Monck as Bright's replacement, but Lambert's appointment was very popular: F. and D.
114 TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 50. There were two William Goodricks, senior and junior. The former was an infantry officer and a lieutenant colonel in Poyntz's brigade in 1646 under Colonel Legard, the other a cavalryman: ibid, E 121/1/7/54, entry 2. For Goodrick junior, see p. XXX.
115 York Minster Library (YML), Hailstone Ms BB 53, passim.
116 TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 1; Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers* , p. 31. Carter was a colonel of foot in the Jamaica expedition in 1654-5: Firth, Narrative of Venables, p. 120.
117 Carter, Pownall, Greenleaf, Spencer, Lambert, and Skipper signed letters to Adam Baynes, their agent in London, in 5/50: BL, Additional Ms 21417, fo. 72, 85. Pownall, Spencer, Greenleaf and Carter appear to have been field officers before Lambert remodelled the Northern brigade in the winter of 1647, but most were serving as captains in 1648: YML, Hailstone Ms BB 53, unfol.
118 TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 440; ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 14. Carter was also governor of Clifford's Tower, York: Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, pp. 13, 16; TNA, SP 28/63, fo. 226.
119 Cobbett, formerly major of Skippon's regiment and dismissed for Leveller sympathies in 6/49, was certainly major in, if not necessarily of, the 14th regiment of foot by 4/51: ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 9. Between the two postings he had been adjutant general of foot: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 22-29/7/50.
120 TNA, E 121/5/5/28, entry 4.
121 Lawson was seemingly in the regiment in 1649 and also a sea captain: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.: BL, Additional Ms 21417, fo. 48; CSPD 1650-51, p. 448. Rokeby's commission to succeed him was issued on 1/5/50, but see the reference on p. XXX to Captain Robert Baynes taking over Lawson's company.
122 TNA, E 121/5/1/3, entry 2.
123 C. Firth ed., *Scotland and the Commonwealth* (Edinburgh, 1895), p. 175.
124 Drake was initially Lambert's ensign, but by 10/51 he was captain in the 1st regiment of foot. It is therefore possible that he served as captain lieutenant between the two postings: TNA, E 121/4/8/30B, entry 38.

15th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Maleverer	D. 12/50. Succeeded by Major General Richard Deane|
Lt. Col.	William Walters	Co. commander in Scotland 50| Capt. Fitzwilliam commanded his co. before 10/51[125]|
Major	William Mitchell	Capt. 8th regt. F. Succeeded Walters as lt. col. by 5/51[126]|
Captains	John (Devis) Pepper	Major in this regt. by 5/51[127]|
	Richard Wisdom	
	William Siddall	
	William Walters[128]	XXX
	Robert Walton	
	Richard Webbe	Gov. of Hartlepool 7/50[129]|
	Henry Cleare senior	Capt. in Fenwick's earlier non-NMA regt. and transferred to this regt.|Transferred to the 19th regt. F. during the Scottish campaign. Succeeded by Capt. Matthews[130]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

125 Ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 237, ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 372; ibid, SP 28/107, fo. 356.
126 Mitchell was major in 1/51 and probably in 9/50 when he was in garrison at Linlithgow: Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, p. 5; BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences 21/9-4/10/50. Captains Wisdom, Siddall and Walters are also mentioned in *Letters* on pp. 7, 16 and 17.
127 Pepper and the other six captains appear in lists dating from 6/50 or slightly earlier: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 67, fos. 28, 40.
128 F. and D. claim Walters had been major during the Scottish campaign of 1650-51, but I can find no record of it. However, he was major by 11/56.
129 TNA, SP 28/125, fos. 36, 82, 461; ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 36.
130 There were two Captain Henry Cleares in the New Model Army during the sixteen-fifties, one a horse soldier and the other an infantryman. Henry Cleare junior signed the address from the army acknowledging Richard Cromwell as Lord Protector in 9/58. I have therefore designated the horse soldier as Henry Cleare junior as his regiment was in England at that time whereas the infantryman's was in Scotland.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fairfax	
Lt. Col.	William Crook	Retired 5/51. Replaced by Lt. Col. Mason of the 9th regt. F.[131]
Major	Christopher Copperthwaite	
Captains	Thomas Sutton?	In post in 12/50[132]
	Samuel Poole	
	William Wilkinson?	In post in 2/51
	Major John Cotterell?	In post in 1/51[133] Lt. Col. 25th regt. F. c. 10/51
	John Rogers?	In post in 4/51[134]
	Rene Bailly	In post in 5/50[135]
	Robert Saunders	Served in the regt. in Scotland 50-51[136]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

131 Crook was in post in 7/50 but resigned in 7/51: TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 17; Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, p. 31.
132 Sutton commanded his company during the Scottish campaign: TNA, SP 28/101, fo. 170.
133 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 486.
134 Rogers had probably served in the 2nd regiment of foot as captain until cashiered for Leveller sympathies in 1649: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 98.
135 Bailly was a French officer living in England since before the Civil War who entered the New Model Army c. 1650: F. and D. citing Worc. College, Clarke Ms 47, fo. 148. The first mention I have found of him is in 5/50 when he was mentioned at the same time as a Captain Davies: ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 1/5/50.
136 TNA, SP 28/93, fo. 198.

Cavalry

12th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	John Lambert	
Major	William Rooksby[137]	X at Dunbar in 9/50. Succeeded by William Goodrick as major. Capt. Lt. Pockley took over his troop[138]
Captains	William Goodrick	
	Henry Westby	Capt. H. N. brigade under Lambert. Succeeded by John Hatfield before 10/51[139]
	Adam Baynes	
	Amor Stoddard	
Capt. Lt.	John Pockley	Capt. Lt. in Col. Bethell's regt. H. in the Northern brigade[140]

137 Rooksby was described as Colonel Rokeby, though he was only major in Lambert's regiment in 7/50: ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 64. He had probably been a colonel in the Northern Army under Lord Fairfax or Colonel Poyntz.
138 Ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 108.
139 Ibid, E 121/4/8/30, entries 222, 347. Westby appears still to have been captain in March 1650: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69 unfol. 27/3/50.
140 TNA, E 121/4/8/30B, entry 99.

13th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Lilburne	
Major	George Smithson	
Captains	John Sanderson	D. 10/50 but seemingly succeeded by George Watkinson by 31/7/50[141]|
	Thomas Lilburne	
	William Bradford	
	Christopher Lister[142]	Formerly capt. in Hugh Bethell's regt. H. N. brigade[143]| Left regt. by 6/51. Succeeded by Thomas Strangeways|
Capt. Lt.	George Watkinson??[144]	Succeeded John Sanderson as capt.|

141 See F. and D for Watkinson. Sanderson made his will in 9/50 and was dead by 11/50: P. Hill and J. Watkinson, *Major Sanderson's War* (Stroud, 2008), p. 71.
142 A list of the officers in three of the troops, those of Captains Lilburne, Bradford and Lister, occurs in TNA, E 121/3/3/23, entries 27-31. Lister was in the regiment in 3/51: ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 153.
143 Francis Wilkinson, later a captain in the regiment, was Lister's lieutenant: ibid, E 121/3/3/28, entry 28.
144 Watkinson had served as a lieutenant in Colonel Bethell's regiment of horse in Lambert's brigade. By 12/48 he was a captain lieutenant, but possibly in Bethell's regiment which had not yet been disbanded: YML, Hailstone Ms BB 53, unfol.; BL, Additional Ms 36996, fo. 148.

14th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Thomas Saunders	
Major	Nathaniel Barton?? Richard Creed	In post in 31/3/51[145]| In post from late 48 and in 2/51[146]|
Captains	George Palmer	Served until 9/55 at the earliest[147]|
	Richard Dolphin	In post in 3/50 and 6/51[148]|
	Phillip Prime[149]	Lt. to Capt. Barton[150]|
	Robert Hope[151]	
Capt. Lt.	**John Pearson**[152]	XXX
Possibles Captain	Thomas Coulson	Cor. to Major Saunders before 8/48. Capt. by 11/53[153]|

145 F. and D. have Henry Barton, formerly of the 7th regiment of horse, but the officer was Nathaniel Barton who had held the rank of major in the 10th regiment of horse. For supporting evidence see CSPD 1650, p. 504 and ibid, 1651, p. 120, which show that Nathaniel was colonel of the militia in Derbyshire whilst major in the 14th regiment of horse.
146 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 164; TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 861. The reason why there were two majors in 1651 was that the regiment was divided in two. Creed was with the main body whilst Barton commanded some troops which had been increased in size to a regiment by the addition of some militia troops. For this see CSPD 1651, p. 120.
147 CSPD 1655, p. 340.
148 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 120; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 42; Nickolls, *Original Letters*, p. 77.
149 According to F. and D. Prime succeeded Richard Dolphin who had himself succeeded Captain Pendock. This may not have been so. Dolphin was commissioned as lieutenant to Captain Palmer in 1649, and then served in Colonel Henry Marten's regiment as a captain, but by 2/51 he was in Scotland as captain in the regiment: TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 120; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 20/11/49. Prime was captain of a troop of horse in 5/51: TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 116. See also below p. 72.
150 Ibid, SP 28/45, fo. 430.
151 Hope had been captain lieutenant in the regiment in the mid-1640s: TNA, E 121/1/6/unnumbered, fo. 9. His captaincy was conferred before mid-June 1650 when his quartermaster was commissioned: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 35.
152 Pearson was captain lieutenant before the death of Colonel Thornhaugh: ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 47. I have no record of him after 8/48. It is just possible that he was promoted to captain of foot in the 9th regiment as they both fought in the Preston campaign: F. and D.
153 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 47; F. and D (who give his first name incorrectly as John).

15th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Francis Hacker	
Major	John Mayer	Also gov. of Holy Island. Succeeded as major H. but not as gov. by Lt. Col. Paul Hobson of the 8th regt. F. by 7/50. Mayer was then promoted to lt. col.in Hobson's former regiment[154]|
Captains	John Fenwick	In post in 8/50[155]| Prob. succeeded by Capt. Empson c. 12/50|
	John Wetwang[156]	
	Henry Ogle	Troop left the regt. in 7/50[157]|
	Robert Scarfe	In post in 8/50 and 6/51[158]|
Capt. Lt.	William Hubbard[159]	

154 TNA, SP 28/133, fo. 13. Major Hobson was in Scotland in 8/50 and 5/51: 'Several Letters from Scotland' cited in A. Marshall, *Oliver Cromwell Soldier* (2004), p. 244; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 12. He and Hobson appear to have changed places. For this see also p. 47 above.

155 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 385; ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 136.

156 Wetwang was in post in 8/50: ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 85. A John Wetwang had been in the Northumberland horse in 10/48: BL, Thomason Tracts E 475 (13).

157 An officer with this surname had commanded a troop raised during the Second Civil War which was retained for the defence of Northumberland: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Moderate 26/12/48-2/1/49. For Ogle having been in Hacker's regiment in 1649 and early 1650, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, unfol. section; TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 6. Ogle's troop then changed places with Captain Greenwood's troop and entered the Berwick garrison in its stead: F. and D. It was disbanded in 10/51: CSPD 1651, p. 476.

158 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 385; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 59.

159 Hubbard is described by F. and D, as captain in the regiment in 11/49 based on CSPD 1649-50, p. 366, but there is no room for him as a full captain. He must therefore have been captain lieutenant at the time. This would explain why Hacker was annoyed that Cromwell gave Empson a vacant captain's place in 9/50 rather than Hubbard: T. Carlyle, *Letters and Speeches of Oliver Cromwell* (1846, 4 vols.), pp 28-35.

C. New Regiments raised by 30 June 1650

Infantry

17th Regiment[160]	Name	Military career
Colonel	James Heane	Col. of the Weymouth garr. regt.| Did not serve in Scotland. Succeeded as col. by Major Sexby by 25/7/50[161]|
Lt. Col.	William Harding	Capt. in Heane's Weymouth regt.[162]| Did not serve in Scotland|
Major	Edward Sexby	Gov. of Portland and major in Heane's Weymouth regt. Col. of the 17th regt. F. 7/50| Cashiered 6/51. Succeeded by Lt. Col. Read of the 11th regt. F.[163]|
Captains	Peter Pike	Capt. Weymouth garr. regt. F. 12/49. Lt. Col. to Col. Sexby by 4/51[164]|
	Thomas Rippon	Capt. in ditto 12/49. Previously served in Colonel Ashton's regiment of Lancashire horse |Gone by 9/50. Officer of horse in Scotland[165]|
	XXX Heath	XXX Did not serve in Scotland[166]|
	Richard Channing	Capt. Weymouth garr. regt. F. 46| Did not serve in Scotland[167]|
	XXX Awder	XXX Did not serve in Scotland|
	Kympton Hilliard	XXX Did not serve in the regt. in Scotland|With Major Harding in 10/50. Capt. Morgan's regt. Dr. 51|
	Richard Matthews	XXX Does not seem to have served in Scotland[168]|
	Thomas Chetnell	XXX Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

160 The full list of the intended company commanders in this order can be found in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 35. Heane was permitted to raise six additional companies on 15/5/50. They had been raised by 27/6/50. The regiment was Sexby's by 25/7/50: CSPD 1650, pp. 163, 217, 253.

161 For a very full account of Heane's military career and his death, see F. and D., pp. 718-20.

162 Harding, Heath, Awder and Channing continued to serve as officers in the south of England under Heane's command. They and Hilliard were involved in the capture of Jersey in 1651. Harding was major in 1651 with George Joyce possibly as lieutenant colonel: CSPD 1651-2, p. 118; TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 114. A Major William Harding was serving in Lord Inchiquin's army in Ireland in 7/47: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 399 (33)
163 For Sexby's court martial, see F. Henderson ed., Selections from the Clarke Papers: *Camden Society*, 5th ser. 27 (2005), pp. 28-35.
164 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 10-17/12/1649; Clarke Papers v, p. 33.
165 TNA, E 121/3/1/78, entry 1; ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 51. In 9/50 Rippon was raising troops of dragoons for service there: CSPD 1650, p. 334.
166 In 5/51 Heath was in Heane's regiment on the south coast of England together with Captains Hughes and Davies: TNA, SP 28/77, fos. 507-8.
167 Channing and Major Harding returned from Guernsey in 7/54: CSPD 1654, p. 251.
168 There is no record of either Matthews or Chetnell serving under either Heane or Sexby other than in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67.

18th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Daniel[169]	Major Henry Brooke's regt. F. Sir William Brereton's brigade 46|
Lt. Col.	Richard Smith	? Capt. Mackworth's regt. F. in Shropshire 45| Succeeded by William Brayne by 6/51[170]|
Major	John Jolly[171]	Lt. in Cheshire forces early 43. Succeeded by Major Pearson after 11/50 and before 9/51[172]|
Captains	Richard Heath	Lt. to Major William Daniel, Brereton's brigade 2/47[173]|
	Joseph Witter	Ens. to Major Daniel 2/47[174]|
	Francis Aldersey[175]	XXX
	Edward Barker	Lt. to Lt. Col. Gilbert Gerard, Brereton's brigade.[176] Lt to Capt. Watson in Colonel Robert Duckenfield's Cheshire militia regiment[177]. Served in Scotland|
	Richard Williams[178]	XXX
	Hugh Birtles	Capt. Lt. in Brereton's brigade[179]|
	William Wenlock	In post in 1650. Capt. Sir William Waller's regt. F. 45 then reformado[180]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

169 Daniel's commission as colonel was issued on 16/5/50: ibid, Clarke Ms. 69, unfol.
170 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 2.
171 Captains Jolly, Aldersey, Witter and Heath were mentioned on 25/5/50. The field officers had yet to be appointed: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.
172 F. and D. citing Z. Grey, *Impartial Examination* (4 vols., London, 1739) iv, appendix, p. 52.
173 For Heath and Witter, see TNA, SP 28/124, fo. 13.
174 Ibid, SP 28/124, fo. 13.
175 Aldersey was a common Cheshire surname in the 17th century, but none with Francis as his first name is known to have served under Brereton.
176 The Cheshire Sheaf, vol. 9 (1914-15), p. 91.
177 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 7/5/50.
178 Captains Wenlock and Williams appear with those of the other company commanders in a list in F. and D. citing the Clarke Papers but without giving an exact reference. They are not listed with the other company commanders in Clarke Ms 69, unfol.
179 BL, Harleian Ms 2144, fo. 56.
180 L. Spring, *Waller's Army* (Pike and Shot Society, Farnham, 2007), p. 155.

19th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Thomas Fitch[181]	Gov. of Carlisle|
Lt. Col.	XXX Briggs	In post in 3/50[182]|
Major	William Bird[183]	
Captains	Robert Blount	Capt. in the regt. by 7/50. Lt. Col. of the regt. by 6/52[184]|
	John Pye	Capt. in the regt. by 7/50|
	Henry Cleare senior[185]	
	Cuthbert Studholme[186]	

	XXX Stone[187]	
	Miles Mann?	Lt. Col. of the regt. by 11/56
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possible Captain	Thomas Johnson[188]	In the Carlisle garr.

181 F. and D. imply that this regiment did not come together until late 1651, but Fairfax's commission book shows otherwise as does Fitch's promotion from lieutenant colonel to colonel in 1650 and Captain Studholme's commission. My hunch is that it was formed out of garrison troops in the far north of England and stationed at Carlisle throughout the campaign in Scotland. There are frequent references to Fitch as being at Carlisle between 7/50 and 9/51: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 14; CSPD 1650, 350, 536; ibid 1651, 241-3.

182 Briggs was ordered to continue as lieutenant colonel in the garrison at Carlisle for a further six months on 18/3/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.

183 William Bird was major at Carlisle in 6/48 and 6/50: Calendar of the Committee of Compounding (CCC) i, p. 810: TNA, SP 28/69, fos. 24-5. He was also at Carlisle in 12/50: BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Passages, 10-17/12/50. His death was announced in A Perfect Diurnal for 5-12/9/1653: F. and D. However, his first name cannot be Anthony as claimed by F. and D. For a discussion of this see p. 75 below.

184 Chequers Ms 782, unfol. Blount's and Pye's commissions as captains in Fitch's regiment are recorded in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 14. Blount was quartered at Tynemouth Castle in 7/49: TNA, SP 28/125, fo. 12. Blount and Cleare were stationed there in 3/50, regiment not given: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 20/3/50.

185 TNA, SP 28/124, fo. 431, 434; ibid, SP 28/125, fo. 22. Cleare's company appears in both Fitch's and Fenwick's regiment. The reason for this is almost certainly that companies were transferred between the regiments on garrison duty on the Scottish border when the army expanded to meet the threat from Scotland. See pp. 54, 57, 75 for further evidence of this.

186 Ibid, SP 28/133, fo. 31. His captaincy in the regiment is confirmed by Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 12/4/50. An Ensign Studholme had served in the Berwick garrison: ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 29/1/50.

187 Ensign Pinnock in Stone's company was commissioned on 10/4/50: ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.

188 John Spenceley had been Johnson's ensign in c. 1649: TNA, E 121/2/11/unnumbered, entry 401.

Company and Troop Commanders: October 1651

Infantry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Goffe	Left regt. c.9/55 when moved as col. to the 14th regt. H. Replaced by Oliver Cromwell as col.[189]
Lt. Col.	Francis White	
Major	Clement Keene	
Captains	James Priest[190]	
	William Farley	
	John Miller/Millner	Lt. to Capt. Keene in the late 40s. Served in the regt. in Scotland in 50/51[191]
	XXX Straghan[192]	
	Robert Luson	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt. [193]
	Robert King	Lt. to Lt. Col. Goffe 2/50. Succeeded Capt. Hammond X 12/50[194]
	John Drake	Ens. to Capt. Lambert in Col. Bright's regt. and possibly capt. lt. to Col. Lambert in the 14th regt. F. Succeeded Capt. Pitson by 1/51[195]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captains	 Thomas White?[196] John Moseley	 Served in Scotland 1650/1[197]

189 F. and D.
190 See p. 84 above.
191 TNA, E 121/2/9/unnumbered, entry 181; ibid, SP 28/105, fo. 54.
192 For Straghan and Drake in 1/51, see ibid, SP 28/81, fos. 718-19.
193 Luson was a full captain in the regiment by late 1650: ibid, E121/2/9/46, entry 65.
194 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 2; TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 202; ibid, SP 28/102, fo. 322.
195 Ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 425; ibid, E 121/4/8/30B, entry 38. For Drake's first name and his previous posting, see ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 358; CSPD 1655-6, p. 360.
196 White had served in the regiment, almost certainly as captain. In 1654 he joined the West Indies expedition as major to Major General Fortescue's regiment. There he was taken ill. He returned to England to recuperate but was much improved by late 1655: CSPD 1655-6, p. 61. He was a company commander in the regiment in 1659. For this, see below p. 116.
197 Although a company commander in the regiment in the Scottish campaign, it is difficult to find a place for Moseley in the regiment. Possibly his was a supernumerary company. He was dead by 3/53: TNA, SP 28/91, fo. 520. If he was also adjutant general of foot (which seems highly probable) he had been killed at the battle of Worcester in 9/51: Cary, *Memorials* ii, p. 358. In the First Civil War Moseley had been lieutenant colonel in the Aylesbury garrison: Historical Manuscripts Commission (HMC), Appendix to the 13th Report, Duke of Portland Mss i, p. 166: W. Hamper ed., *The Diary of Sir William Dugdale* (1827), p. 59.

2nd Regiment 1st Battalion	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Ashfield	Succeeded Col. Cox in 4/51
Lt. Col.	William Symonds[198]	
Major	Henry Dorney	Formerly capt. in the 5th regt. F. [199]
Captains	James Mayer	Left regt. just before 9/55[200]
	Lionel Lingwood	
	Robert Baynes	
	Thomas Heyrick	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt.[201]

	William Fitch	Ens. to Lt. Col. Ashfield in 47[202]
	XXX Jones[203]	XXX
	XXX Werring[204]	
Capt. Lt.	John Rudlee?[205]	
Possibles Captains	William Davies[206]	Ens. to Major Cobbett in this regt. c. 48[207]
	XXX Fowlis[208]	
	XXX Newhouse/Newman	

198 Symonds must have been lieutenant colonel by 8/51 as Dorney was major.
199 Dorney was still a captain in the 5th regiment of foot in 12/50 but major of Ashfield's regiment by 8/51: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 19.
200 TNA, SP 28/108, fos. 26, 31; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol.
201 Heyrick was a full captain by 23/9/51: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 20, unfol. For his first name, see Chequers Ms 782, unfol. section, 2/55.
202 TNA, E 121/5/7/35, entry 124. Fitch, Heyrick, Davies and Jones were captains in the regiment in 1656 together with William Hooper who was a lieutenant in 1651: F. and D.
203 Jones's company was described as marching with Cox's regiment in 4/51: TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 17. It is therefore most likely that it was added to the regiment like Fowlis's and Newham's. Jones was in the regiment in the late 1650s. For this, see below p. 101.
204 The regiment in Scotland may only have had nine companies: F. and D. If so, it is difficult to see how Captain Werring's company fits in. A soldier claimed to have fought in his company in Ashfield's regiment in Scotland before 9/51: TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 5.
205 Rudlee was commissioned as lieutenant in Baynes's company on 1/5/50. He was later captain lieutenant and became a full captain in 5/55: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 4; ibid, Clarke Ms 45, unfol. 4/55, 6/55.
206 A Captain Davies attended the courts martial in Dundee in 9/51: ibid, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.
207 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 129.
208 For Fowlis and Newhouse serving in the regiment for part but probably not all of the Scottish campaign, see TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 14; ibid, SP 28/84, fo. 3.

2nd Battalion[209]	**Name**	**Military career**
Major	James Harrison	
Captains	John Clarke	
	Arthur Helsham	
	James Symcock	
	Samuel Clarke[210]	

209 F. and D. are correct that the second battalion was sent to Ireland in 3/52, but not that it was used to recruit Colonel John Clarke's regiment. Instead the companies of Harrison, Helsham, Symcock and Samuel Clarke were unregimented: TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 364.
210 Samuel Clarke was quartered at Limerick in 2/54: Thurloe, *State Papers* ii, p. 118.

3rd Regiment 2nd Battalion[211]	**Name**	**Military career**
Lt. Col.	John Clarke[212]	
Major.	Phillip Ebzery[213]	
	Richard Aske	
	Nathaniel Chase[214]	
	Lewis Northcott	
	Robert Smith	Capt. in Clarke's regt. in Ireland in 55
	XXX Hooper	Ditto in 8/52[215]
	XXX Davison[216]	
	Henry Davies	
	Maurice Bowen	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Possible Captain	Edward Allen	Lt. to Capt. Chase.[217] Capt.in the regt. in Ireland|

211 The ten companies were shipped to Ireland in 6/52. By then they were a regiment under Clarke's command. For its subsequent history, see below p. 217.
212 Clarke, Ebzery, Chase, Northcott, and Smith, the five company commanders who had served in the regiment before it was divided into two battalions, were named in a document dated 5/51: TNA, SP 28/77, fo. 507.
213 For Ebzery's, Bowen's, Aske's and Hooper's companies in 9/51, see ibid, SP 28/80, fos. 174, 285.
214 Chase was in the regiment in 8/52 together with Aske and Northcott: ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 256.
215 Ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 292.
216 The last three company commanders appear to have left the regiment before it left for Ireland.
217 Ibid, E 121/1/6/30, entry 4.

5th Regiment[218]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Barkstead	
Lt. Col.	Roland Dawkins	Ex major to Col. Phillip Jones's regt. F. in S. Wales. In the 5th regt. by 12/51[219]| Transferred to the 10th regt. F. c. 1/53|
Major	John Biscoe	Lt. Col. by 4/52[220]| Transferred to the 10th regt. F.[221]|
Captains	John Miller	Major in the regt. by 10/52. Lt. Col. 12/59[222]|
	John Nicholas	Ex 10th regt. F. In the regt. in 12/51. Gov. of Chepstow Castle| Transferred to the 10th regt. F. c. 1/53|
	Matthew Cadwell	Ex 10th regt. F. In the regt. in 12/51| Transferred to the 10th regt. F. by 8/53[223]|
	John Norris	In garrison at Chester in the summer of 1651. Co. chosen for disbandment but apparently spared.[224]| Transferred subsequently to the 10th regt. F.[225] |
	Nicholas Cordy?	Ens. to Lt. Col. Ralph Cobbett in late 40s[226]|
	Henry Sharpe?	XXX
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	William Foster?[227]	
Possibles Captains	Richard Pooley[228]	
	Thomas Buckner	
	William Read	
	John Jennings	

218 Half of Barkstead's regiment had been used to create a new marching regiment for the army in the summer of 1651 commanded by Ralph Cobbett, its former lieutenant colonel. The establishment of the army in England and Scotland passed by Parliament on 2/10/51 brought Barkstead's regiment up to ten companies by removing a number from the 10th regiment of foot and by adding Roland Dawkins's, a Welsh company: CJ vii, p. 24; TNA, SP28/90, fo. 20. Barkstead's regiment was reduced to six companies in 12/52, sufficient to garrison the Tower of London, of which he had become governor. Dawkins's, Cadwell's, Nicholas's and one other were then added to Constable's regiment for a while. Dawkins's and Nicholas's became independent companies when the 10th regiment was sent to Scotland in 1654: CSPD 1652-3, p. 16; ibid, 1654, pp. 40, 70, 113, 120; TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 288; ibid, SP 28/103, fos. 39, 150.
219 See ibid, SP 28/82, fo. 298 for Dawkins, Nicholas and Cadwell's companies being in the regiment in 12/51 but stationed at a distance from the rest.
220 CSPD 1651, p. 358; ibid 1651-2, p. 599.
221 There were thus apparently two lieutenant colonels in the regiment for a time. All I can suggest is that Dawkins, who had previously been a lieutenant colonel in another regiment, retained the title after 4/52 as a courtesy whilst continuing to command a company as a captain: CSPD 1649-50, p. 279. Both lieutenant colonels were in due course transferred to the 10th regiment of foot, but sequentially. The date of Biscoe's transfer is uncertain but it seems to have been before 8/53: ibid 1653-4, p. 433.
222 BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 11-18/10/52.
223 At that date Cadwell's company was ordered to be sent to the Isle of Man: CSPD 1653-4, p. 74.
224 Ibid 1651-2, pp. 139, 185. A Captain Norris was in the regiment when it was reduced in size in late 1651: TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 362. He was almost certainly the Captain John Norris who was in the regiment in the mid-1650s.
225 CSPD 1651, pp. 139, 185.
226 TNA, E 121/2/11/17A, entry 39; ibid, E 121/5/6/51, entry 50. Cordy, Sharpe and possibly Jennings were captains of foot companies in the Tower in the mid-1650s. For this see below p. 85.

227 Foster was captain lieutenant in late 1656. He had begun his career as a cornet in Sir Arthur Haselrig's troop of horse: TNA, E 121/4/1/53, entry 4; BL, Thomason Tracts E 903 (12).
228 See above p. 46.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Ingoldsby	Col. 7th regt. H. 9/55|
Lt. Col.	John Mill (acting)	Full lt. col. by 10/51. Col. of the regt. in 9/55[229]|
Major	Richard Wagstaffe (ditto)	Capt. in 6/53[230]|
Captains	Francis Allen[231]	
	John Grime	
	John Hunt[232]	
	William Duckett	
	Abraham Davies[233]	
	John Davies	Lt. to Capt. Shrimpton[234]|
	Lt. Col. Kelsey's co.	At Dover Castle from 1651[235]|
Capt. Lt.	**Consolation Fox**[236]	

229 Mill and Wagstaffe were appointed acting lieutenant colonel and major in 5/51 prior to the regiment's leaving for Scotland. Francis Allen apparently protested and the Council of State left it to Ingoldsby to decide who to promote: CSPD 1651, p. 188, 197. Mill had been commissioned as lieutenant colonel by the end of 1651: TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 572.
230 CSPD 1652-3, p. 490.
231 Allen was still a captain in 9/51: ibid, 1651, p. 441. The first mention of him as major in the regiment was in 12/51: ibid 1651-2, p. 78. He was still major in 1/55 but lieutenant colonel soon after 9/55 when Mill replaced Ingoldsby as colonel: ibid, 1655, p. 2.
232 He may have briefly served as acting major. A Major Hunt brought recruits for the 6th regiment to Scotland in 11/50: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 6.
233 TNA, SP 28/86, fo. 191. Abraham Davies was briefly major in a regiment in Flanders in late 1659: F. and D.
234 John Davies was a captain in the regiment in 6/59. He may have served throughout the 1650s, but there was another Captain John Davies serving in Ireland in the 12th regiment of foot from c. 1650. For this see p. 117 below.
235 Although Kelsey had given up his position as a field officer by 10/51, and despite a ruling that Captain Billars' company should transfer to the regiment whilst his remained at Dover, Kelsey continued to command a company in the 6th regiment of foot. See, for example, a pay warrant dated 1653. For this see below p. 85 and TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 217; CSPD 1651, pp. 188, 189.
236 Fox followed Abraham Davies as captain lieutenant to Colonel Ingoldsby: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 13. He became a full captain before late 1654: PCC Wills 1653-6, p. 226.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Arthur Haselrig	
Lt. Col.	John Mayer	
Major	Jeremiah Tolhurst	
Captains	John Topping	
	John Mason?	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt.|
	John Simpson?	Ens. to Capt. Earwood in the regt. in 48[237]|
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

237 TNA, SP 28/125, fo. 19.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Pride	
Lt. Col.	Waldine Lagoe	In post by 6/51| Lt. Col. 22nd regt. F. c. 7/56[238]|
Major	Thomas Parsons	Major before 8/51[239]|
Captains	Richard Mosse	
	Nicholas Andrews	Lt to Capt. Pearson[240]|
	Richard Kemp	
	Thomas Higgs	XXX Capt. by 9/51[241]|
	Ralph Prentice	Ens. to Capt. Richard Kemp 11/49[242]|
	Thomas Pride	Lt. to Capt. Mosse[243]|
	John Ward	Lt. to Capt. John Hawes|
Capt. Lt.	William Galhampton[244]	

238 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 27; CSPD 1653-4, p. 370; F. and D.
239 Parsons was major at the surrender of Perth: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 5-12/8/1651.
240 See above p. 47.
241 TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 418.
242 Prentice was a company commander in the regiment in Scotland in 1650-51: ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 586.
243 Pride was a captain in the regiment during its Scottish campaign in 1650-1: ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 18. There were two captains Pride, Thomas and William, in the regiment in the 1650s, but Thomas appeared first. He was commissioned as lieutenant to Captain Kemp in 11/49. The company's ensign, also commissioned in 11/49, was Ralph Prentice, also a captain in the regiment by 10/51: Worc College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 12; ibid, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 5/3/55.
244 Galhampton was a full captain in the regiment by 1655 but possibly as early as 1651: TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 488.

10th Regiment[245]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir William Constable	
Lt. Col.	**Wroth Rogers**[246]	
Major	John Wade	
Captains	William Style	
	Samuel Ross	Formerly capt. lt. to Col. Lambert in this regt.[247]|
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captains	Henry Hedworth	Lt. in the regt. c.6/47| Cashiered as capt. in 54 for involvement in Overton's plot. Capt. 1st regt. F. 5/59|
	Roger Lewis[248]	
	Lawrence Nunney[249]	
	William Draper[250]	

245 Parliament ordered six companies of the regiment to be disbanded in 10/1651: CJ vii, p. 24. This probably explains why many of the company commanders of the late 1640s and early 1650s and their junior officers do not appear in the regimental listings for the 1650s. However, seven companies kept their places in the army after a change of mind in the following month: TNA, SP 28/81, fos. 546, 576; CSPD 1651, p. 493.
246 Given the small size of the regiment the post of lieutenant colonel may have been abolished on the grounds of economy. If so there would have been five companies commanded by captains.
247 TNA, E 121/5/7/21, entry 257.
248 Lewis's company was in garrison at Wallingford Castle in 1/7/51: TNA, SP 28/79, fo. 509.
249 I do not have a record of Nunney serving in the regiment later than 1650. For this see above p. 48
250 For Draper's commission see above p. 48. He was governor of Oxford during the Worcester campaign, but his company was moved to Wallingford Castle on 17/9/51: CSPD 1651, pp. 325, 336, 432, 435.

After being restored to 10 companies in 12/52

Colonel	Sir William Constable	
Lt. Col.	Roland Dawkins[251]	Replaced Wroth Rogers by 10/52, but there may have been a gap| Succeeded by John Biscoe of the 5th regt. F. by 8/53[252]|
Major	John Wade	
Captains	William Style	
	Matthew Cadwell	Ex capt. 5th regt. F.|
	Samuel Ross	
	John Norris	Ex capt. 5th regt. F.|
	Phillip Eyton?	Capt. in Duckenfield's Cheshire regt. in 5/48 and in 51. In the 10th regt. by 3/54[253]. He had strong connections with the Isle of Man as did Major Wade and Capt. Cadwell[254]|
	John Nicholas[255]	Ex capt. 5th regt. F. Gov. of Chepstow|
	John Groome?	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

251 Dawkins and Nicholas were in the 10th regiment of foot in 10/53: ibid, SP 28/96, fos. 442, 517.
252 See above p. 62.
253 BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurences, 11-18/5/48; CSPD 1651, p. 472; ibid 1654, p. 120.
254 Eyton was a captain in Robert Duckenfield's Cheshire militia regiment on 22/8/1650, but he also had connections with Duckenfield's New Model Army regiment: TNA, SP 25/119, fo. 10-11; CSPD 1650, p. 509, 539; ibid 1652-3, pp. 185, 330; ibid 1653-4, p. 60. See also below p. 257.
255 Nicholas was in the 5th regiment of foot in 10/52: TNA, SP 28/88, fo. 204. It became an independent company, probably when the regiment was sent to Scotland. Nicholas remained governor of Chepstow until 7/59 at the earliest: CSPD, 1659-60, p. 15.

After being ordered to Scotland c. 3/1654

Colonel	Sir William Constable[256]	D. 6/55. Succeeded as col. by Lt. Col. Biscoe 12/55|
Lt. Col.	John Biscoe	Ex 5th regt. F.|
Major	John Wade	In post in 3/54 but ceased to be major of the regt. soon afterwards[257]|
Captains	William Style	Major in 8/54[258]|
	Matthew Cadwell	
	Samuel Ross	
	John Norris	
	Stephen White	Possibly capt. in Gibbon's regt. F. 50[259]|
	Phillip Eyton	
	John Groome	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

256 At first the regiment was raised from 700 to 1000 by adding supernumeraries to the existing seven companies, but by March it was ten companies strong: CSPD 1654, pp. 40, 70, 113, 120. The officers' names are given in TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 17.
257 Ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 42. Wade did, however, retain his company.
258 Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
259 See below p. 67.

11th Regiment[260]	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Fenwick	Left 8/56. D. 3/57|
Lt. Col.	Timothy Wilkes	Lt. Col. 13th regt. F. Succeeded Thomas Read c. 6/51|
Major	Robert Read[261]	
Captains	Robert Anderson	In post in 5/53 and 2/54. Gone by 11/56[262]|
	William Knowles	
	Thomas Hughes	Major late 56[263]|
	William Collinson[264]	
	John Miller	Capt. in 2/51. Ens. in the regt. in the late 1640s.[265] Newly raised co.|
	William Newman	Capt. in 2/51. Newly raised co.|
	Timothy Langley	Newly raised co. commissioned 4/51[266]|
	Richard Clifton	Lt. to Capt. John Wade and then to Lt. Col. Thomas Read. Newly raised co.[267]|
	XXX Meyney?[268]	XXX Newly raised co.|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

260 The regiment was divided on 30/7/50. Half was combined with half of Haselrig's to provide a regiment for General George Monck, but Fenwick was authorised to raise five more companies. It was raised to 12 companies in 3/51 because it was garrisoning both Leith and Edinburgh Castle, but it was reduced to ten in 10/55 as an economy measure: F. and D.
261 Read was described as major in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67 in which the last dated entry is for 5/50.
262 Ibid, Clarke Ms 45, unfol. late 5/53.
263 Hughes, Knowles, Newman, Langley and Miller were captains in the Leith garrison in 9/51: Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth,* p. 327.
264 Collinson's was not a newly raised company.
265 TNA, E 121/5/7/18, entry 117.
266 Ibid, SP 28/99, fo. 28; CSPD 1651, p. 158.
267 Clifton, deputy governor of Edinburgh Castle in 11/51, almost certainly succeeded Captain Mullins who died in 9/51. Theirs was a new company commissioned in 4/51: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal 3-10/11/1651; ibid, Mercurius Politicus, 2-9/10/51; CSPD 1651, p. 158; Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth*, p. 327. Mullins' first name was John: CJ vii, p. 38.
268 A captain of this name was in the regiment in 6/53 and 13/9/53: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol.

Cavalry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	Succeeded Fairfax 6/50|
Major	William Packer	Succeeded John Browne as major in early 51[269]|
Captains	John Gladman	Succeeded Capt. Covell c. 11/50|
	William Barrington	Cor. to Major Browne in the regt. c. 48. Capt. after 5/51 but before 10/51 in succession to Capt. Merest[270]|
	Anthony Spinage	Cor. in the regt. in 49. Capt. of Major Browne's troop by 6/51[271]|
	William Malin	Lt. to Capt. Disher. Succeeded him by 10/51[272]|
Capt. Lt.	John Hunter[273]	XXX

269 Packer was major by 5/51: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 12.
270 TNA, E 121/5/7/unnumbered, entry 599; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 306. Richard Merest became adjutant general of horse c. 5/51 and on previous precedent he gave up his troop: BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 10-17/6/51; ibid, 669 f25 (5)
271 Spinage was serving in Scotland in late 6/51: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 14. His rise had been exceptional. In 5/46 he had merely been a corporal in General Fairfax's troop: TNA, SP 28/31, fo. 274.
272 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 836.
273 Ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 476. Hunter acted as attorney for soldiers who had served in Scotland and who had not received their full pay: ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 411.

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Harrison	Cashiered 1/54. Post unfilled 8/54[274]|
Major	Stephen Winthrop	Col. late 54|
Captains	John Peck	Left the regt. in the early 50s|
	John Spencer	Left the regt. in 56.[275] Capt. in 1st regt. H. 6/59-1/60. Succeeded by Capt. Hilliard of Morgan's regt. Dr. c. 7/56|
	John Barker	Succeeded by his lt. William Gough c. 1/54[276]|
	Major Arthur Evelyn	Formerly capt. in the regt. Major and subsequently Gov. of Wallingford Castle[277]|
Capt. Lt.	Joseph Strange	Promoted by 7/53|
Possibles Captain	Edmund Tapp	Lt. to Major Winthrop. Capt. by 54[278]|
Attached troop Capt. Lt.	Roger Sontley/Soutley	In command of Col. John Jones's troop in1/51[279]| Succeeded after 7/53 by Joseph Strange, Harrison's capt. lt., at which time the troop was seemingly absorbed into the regt. Strange was major of the regt. by 4/56[280]|

274 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 14-21/8/1654.
275 Spencer was active in marshalling discontent amongst the senior army officers against the Protectorate in 1655. It is possible that he was cashiered as a result.
276 Barker was still in the regiment in 7/52: TNA, SP 28/87, fos. 50, 72.
277 Evelyn was troop commander in the regiment in 10/51: ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 546.
278 Ibid, E 121/4/5/64B, entry 1.
279 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 162; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 490.
280 F. and D.

4th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	Lord Deputy in Ireland 7/52|
Major	Hezekiah Haynes	
Captains	Griffith Lloyd	
	Stephen White	Prob. transferred to 10th regt. F. where a Stephen White was a new captain in 4/54| Lt. Thomas Izod of the 5th regt. H. succeeded White in c. 4/54[281]|
	Joseph Blissett	
	Thomas Else	Succeeded Capt. Richard Sankey before 6/51[282]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

281 See p. 65.
282 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 726. Thomas Else had been lieutenant to Major William Coleman who died in late 1649: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 141.

5th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Phillip Twistleton	
Major	Owen Cambridge	Major 6/51[283]|
Captains	Henry Beale	
	William Buck	Lt. to Capt. Gilman Taylor and prob. succeeded him| D. c. 12/51. Prob. succeeded by Lt. John Byfield[284]|
	Theophilus Hart	XXX Capt. in 6/51. Succeeded Capt. Nelthorpe[285]|
	Thomas Deane	Lt. in the regt. [286]|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Ashby?	Lt. in the regt. Capt. Lt. by 1/54[287]|

283 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 51.

284 Buck's troop is mentioned in 1/51: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 9. He had been cornet and then lieutenant to Captain Gilman Taylor in the 4th regiment of horse. For his death see Abstract of PC Wills 1652-3, p. 30. John Byfield had been a lieutenant in the 5th and the 6th regiments of horse in the late 1640: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 557 (10); ibid, Moderate Messenger, 28/5-4/6. For Byfield succeeding Buck, see TNA, SP 28/100, fo. 539 /49. A subsequent reference to pay owing to one of his soldiers shows that Byfield was captain in 10/53 and 4/54 and possibly as early as 10/51:TNA, SP 28/96, fo. 264. He may be the John Byfield esquire of Old Windsor whose will was proved in 1657: PCC Wills 1657-60, p. 106.

285 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 51.

286 Deane had served as lieutenant to Captains Anthony Markham, Owen Cambridge and Henry Beale. He was captain in the regiment before 10/51 but after 6/51 having taken over Major Berry's troop: ibid, SP 28/106, fo. 372.

287 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 26/1-3/2/54. See also p. 51 above.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Disbrowe	
Major	John Blackmore	
Captains	John Jenkins	
	Edward Scotten	
	Joseph Wallington	
	Roger West	In post in 10/51| Succeeded by John Fox by 1655[288]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

288 West and his troop took part in the capture of the island of Jersey in 10/51: Clarke Papers ii, p. 228. John Fox had been a cornet in the 6th regiment of horse in 4/47: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 41, fo. 102. He was constable of Exeter in 12/51 with the rank of captain but he was not yet necessarily a troop commander in this regiment: TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 584. The earliest certain evidence of his captaincy is the list of horse quarters in England compiled in 1655: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 27, fo. 753.

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Nathaniel Rich	Cashiered in 12/54. Succeeded by Capt. Charles Howard of the Lifeguard in 3/55, who was succeeded by Richard Ingoldsby of the 6th regt. F. in 9/55[289]|
Major	Azariah Husbands	Left the regt. by 4/55. Succeeded by Capt. Beke and then by Capt. Thomas Babbington[290]|
Captains	John Merriman	
	Thomas Babbington	Major in the regt. by 6/56|
	George Elsmore	
	Edmund Lisle[291]	Succeeded Capt. Thomas Ireton by 10/51. In post in 11/54[292]| Gone by 10/56. Succeeded by Major Duckett, the regt's capt. lt.|
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas French**	Gone by 1/54. Major Charles Duckett succeeded him[293]|

289 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 26/3-2/4/1655; F. and D.

290 TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 368; Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 217. According to F. and D. the post remained vacant for a year with Richard Beke of the Lifeguard being commissioned in about 10/55. Monck suggested a promotion for Captain Elsmore, but Cromwell refused: Worc College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 104.

291 Edmund Lisle had been a junior officer in the Isle of Wight under Captain Boreman's command: TNA, E 121/2/11/119, unnumbered. Rich's regiment had an association with the island. Elsmore's troop had served there in 1648-9: CSPD 1649-50, p. 475.

292 Lisle was in post in 10/51 and possibly in 6/51: TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 544; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 12; F. and D.
293 French may have been a full captain in 6/51: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 14. He may also have been the Thomas French who was lieutenant colonel of the 32nd regiment of foot in 1660. For Duckett's rise from acting captain lieutenant to full captain, see F. and D.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Matthew Tomlinson	
Major	Ralph Knight	
Captains	Ralph Margery	Left regt. by 10/53. Will proved 54[294]|
	Thomas Johnson	
	Robert Glyn	Quitted troop by 4/55. Replaced by Adj. Gen. Jeremiah Smith[295]|
	XXX Beamont	Succeeded Capt. Rawlins. Gone before 7/54[296]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Symnell	Succeeded Margery as capt. in 1/54. Succeeded by John Coventry as capt. lt.|
Attached Troop Captain	XXX Acklam	Commander of what was originally Major Lewis Audley's troop raised c. 6/50[297]| Troop disbanded in 11/51[298]|

294 F. and D. suggested a probable link between Margery's departure and the regiment's being sent to Scotland. However, illness and death seems the more likely cause given that his will was proved in 1654: PCC Wills 1653-56, p. 337.
295 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 102. Smith had served in the Hull garrison under Colonel Overton and also as a captain in Colonel Sandys's regiment of horse in Parliament's Northern Army: TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 129.
296 Ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 205. Beamont was in post during the campaign in Scotland: ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 592; CSPD 1651, p. 297. A Richard Beamont had served as an officer in the New Model Army in the spring of 1645. For this, see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 55. By 1657 Richard Beamont had risen to the rank of major, but by then he was dead. His widow remarried William Covell, presumably the man who had been an officer in the 1st regiment of horse: CSPD 1656-7, p. 298.
297 Audley's had been the militia troop in Surrey and was marching with Tomlinson's regiment in 9/50: TNA, SP 28/103, fo. 334: CSPD 1650, pp. 350, 352, 475, 481, 501. Audley had previously been captain lieutenant of the 1st regiment of foot. He was major of Robert Gibbon's regiment of foot in early 1651, which was demobilised later in the year. For this see Appendix III below.
298 TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 31; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 14; TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 1091.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Whalley	
Major	Robert Swallow	
Captains	William Evanson	In post in 55[299]|
	Edmund Chillenden	Left regt. late 53. 5ucceeded by Thomas Chamberlain[300]|
	Joseph Sabberton	Lt. to Major Swallow. Succeeded John Savage by 10/51[301]|
	Daniel Dale	Formerly capt. lt. Succeeded Capt. Grove by 10/51, who had moved to 15th regt. H. as major[302]|
Capt. Lt.	John Wright	Cor. in the col's troop[303] Commander of Evanson's troop by 56|

299 F. and D. have Evanson being replaced by Chamberlain but this was not so. Both were commanding troops in the regiment in 1655: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 27, fo. 753.
300 F. and D.; Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 27, fo. 753.
301 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 68.
302 ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 29.
303 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 144.

Lifeguard	Name	Military career
Captain	Charles Howard	Commissioned 4/51| Col. 7th regt. H. 3/55|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Beke	Succeeded Charles Howard as capt.[304]|

304 Beke took responsibility for the Lifeguard in 9/50 with the rank of captain. He may therefore have been its first commander: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 5.

New Regiments

Infantry

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Lambert	Succeeded John Bright|
Lt. Col.	John Cobbett	Lt. Col. in succession to Andrew Carter| Succeeded as major by Richard Elton[305]|
Major	Richard Elton	Capt. in the regt. in 1/51. Major in late 7/51[306]|
Captains	Henry Pownall	Capt. in 1/51. Major 21st regt. F. 4/52, but there was a vacancy there from 11/51[307]|
	John Greenleaf	
	John Lambert	In post in 1/51|
	Christopher Skipper	
	John Hubblethorne	Transferred to 21st regt. F. after 11/54[308]|
	Edward Bradshaw	Capt. before 9/51. Lt. to Capt. Pownall when Bright was col. Before that capt. lt. in the regt.[309]|
	Thomas Fryer[310]	
Capt. Lt.	Skinner Rider??[311]	
Possible Captain	William? Fuggill[312]	

305 Cobbett received his commission during 10/51, some months after Carter's resignation which took place in the early summer: TNA, SP 28/81, fos. 12, 26; Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers,* p. 31.
306 TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 47; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 17. Elton was clearly promoted when Cobbett became lieutenant colonel, but he had reached the rank of major by 11/49 either in the Hull garrison or in a regiment that had been disbanded: Thoresby Society 11 (1904), p. 196.
307 TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 826.
308 Ibid, SP 28/103, fo. 9.
309 Ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 454.
310 Ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 360.
311 Ibid, E 121/5/5/88, entry 6; CSPD 1653-4, p. 278.
312 Claimants for pay arrears in the early 1650s included two soldiers who served under Fuggill in Scotland in the 14th regiment of foot, one of whom was his lieutenant Henry Evanson (deceased by 3/53), but there is no obvious place for Fuggill in the regiment: TNA, SP 28/91, fo. 516; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 290. He was probably an officer in the Hull garrison ordered to march with his company to Scotland in 1650.

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Deane	Succeeded John Maleverer 12/50| X in a sea battle 6/53. Succeeded as col. by Lt. Col. Salmon, deputy gov. of Hull, and formerly of the 3rd regt. F.|
Lt. Col.	William Mitchell	Major in the regt. in 6/51. Lt. Col. c. 7/51. Col. 25th regt. F. 3/55[313]|
Major	John (Devis) Pepper	Major by 5/51. In post in 5/54. Lt. Col. by 7/55[314]|
Captains	Richard Wisdom	
	William Siddall	In post in 5/51. Not in the regt. list for 1/53[315]|
	William Walters	Capt. in 3/55[316]. Major in the regt. by 7/55|
	Robert Walton	In post in1/53. Left soon afterwards|
	Richard Webbe	In post in 9/55[317]|
	XXX Fitzwilliam	In post in 10/51[318]|
	Thomas Matthews	XXX| In post in 11/51 and 5/55[319]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Thurston	D. 11/51. Succeeded by Thomas Ward[320]|

Possibles or Replacements		
Captains	Thomas Cooke	In post in 1/53[321]|
	Henry Watson	In post in 1/53[322]|
	John? Grimsditch	In post in 1/53[323]|

313 Chequers Ms 782 fo. 14; TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 15; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 676; ibid, SP 28/108, fo. 245.
314 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 17. For the date of his lieutenant-colonelcy, see below p. 89, note 561.
315 For nine of the company commanders in 1/53, see TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 121.
316 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 6/3/55.
317 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 14; ibid, SP 28/108, fo. 37.
318 A Robert Fitzwilliam was commissioned as captain in the Flanders brigade in 1657: ibid, SP 28/107, fo. 356; F. and D. A Captain John Fitzwilliam had served in Lambert's brigade in 1648: TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 36.
319 BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 28/10-4/11/50; TNA, SP 28/92, fo. 356; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 43, unfol. 6/9/53; ibid, Clarke Ms 45, unfol. 5/55. A Captain Matthews, who appears in the account book in 3/52 and 5/52 as a lieutenant, and in 3/53 and 5/53 as a captain, seems to have been an engineer, but as his first name was also Thomas they may have been the same man.
320 Formerly lieutenant to Captain Jackson in Colonel Bright's regiment, Thurston was killed during the capture of the Isle of Man in the autumn of 1651: TNA, E 121/5/5/30A, entry 3; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 344; CJ vii, p. 37. For Ward, see below p. 89.
321 TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 121.
322 Ibid.
323 Ibid. He was governor of Dumfries in 4/55: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 8/4/55.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fairfax	
Lt. Col.	John Mason	Lt. Col. 9th regt. F. Replaced Lt. Col. William Crook in 6/51[324]|
Major	Christopher Copperthwaite	In post in 2/52[325]| Gone by 9/52. Replaced by Daniel Davison|
Captains	Thomas Sutton	In post in 12/50[326]|
	Samuel Poole	Ditto|
	William Wilkinson	In post in 2/51[327]|
	John Rogers	Ditto|
	Rene Bailly[328]	Ditto|
	Robert Saunders	In post in 4/51[329]| Gone by 3/52|
	John Pym	Junior comm. officer in Mason's co. 9th regt. F. In the 16th regt. F. as capt. before 9/51.[330] Prob. succeeded Major John Cotterell c. 5/51[331]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possible: Captain	Robert Everard	XXX Capt. in 3/52[332]. Seemingly replaced by a Capt. John Freeman by 56|

324 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 42; BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 14-21/6/51. Crooke had resigned in 6/51 to avoid a court-martial: Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, p. 31.
325 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 27.
326 For Poole and Sutton in 12/50, see TNA, SP 28/73, fos. 32, 34.
327 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 21.
328 This is almost certainly the Captain Bayley mentioned in the correspondence of the Baynes family: Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, p. 17.
329 TNA, SP 28/93, fo. 198; ibid, SP 28/103, fo. 393.
330 Ibid, E 121/4/8/40B, entry 263; ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 118.
331 Cotterell was major of the 25th regiment of foot commanded by Colonel Overton from late 1651 onwards. The regiment was not commissioned until 2 October, but there were insufficient companies in the 16th regiment for Cotterell to have continued as a company commander until then. It is possible that as Overton's former major he was in charge of one of the four companies under Overton's direct command during the Scottish campaign, a kind of proto-regiment: CJ vii, p. 24.
332 F. and D.

Cavalry

12th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	John Lambert	
Major	William Goodrick	
Captains	Adam Baynes	
	Amor Stoddard	Succeeded by Lt. John Levens after 6/54[333]|
	John Pockley	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt. In post in 5/51 but prob. from c. 10/50[334]|
	John Hatfield	In post before 10/51[335]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Spilman	XXX In post in 8/51. Succeeded John Pockley[336]|

333 Levens was a cornet in the regiment in the late 1640s and a lieutenant when he was promoted: TNA, E 121/4/8B/unnumbered, entry 77; Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers,* p. 75.
334 TNA. SP 28/77, fo. 15.
335 Hatfield was a captain in the Scottish campaign of 1650-1: ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 340.
336 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 729. Spilman was still captain lieutenant in 4/55: Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 342.

13th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Lilburne[337]	
Major	George Smithson	
Captains	Thomas Lilburne	
	William Bradford	
	George Watkinson	Lt. to Capt. Walter Bethell in Col. Hugh Bethell's regt. H. in Lambert's brigade. Took command of John Sanderson's troop by 7/50[338]|
	Thomas Strangeways	Lt. to Major John Sanderson. Must have succeeded Christopher Lister. Capt. by 6/51[339]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

337 In 2/52 the troop commanders were Major Smithson and Captains Lilburne, Bradford, Watkinson and Strangeways: TNA, SP 28/83, fos. 37-9.
338 Ibid, E 121/4/8/12, entry 339.
339 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 40; ibid, E 121/2/7/28, entry 2; Hill and Watkinson, *Major Sanderson's War*, pp. 43, 136,137, 162.

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Saunders	Removed in 12/54 for opposition to the Protectorate. Succeeded by Lt. Col. Goffe of the 1st regt. F.|
Major	Richard Creed	
Captains	George Palmer[340]	
	Richard Dolphin[341]	Gone by mid 55[342]|
	Robert Hope	
	Phillip Prime	In post shortly before 28/7/51. Gone by mid 55[343]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Coulson?	

340 Palmer had served in the regiment since before Colonel Thornhaugh's death in 8/48 in the pursuit after the Battle of Preston: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 65, fo. 47; TNA, E121/4/6/101B, entry 1. He served in the regiment until 3/55 at the earliest: Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 208.
341 F. and D. described Prime as Dolphin's successor, but the pay warrants TNA, SP 28/81, fos 35, 37 and SP 28/100, fo. 52 clearly indicate that they were in the regiment at the same time and commanded different troops.
342 In the document giving the quarters of some of the cavalry regiments in England in mid 1655 Dolphin and Prime had been replaced by Captains Catchett and Pretty: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 27, fo. 753.
343 Nickolls, *Original Letters,* p. 77.

15th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Francis Hacker	
Major	John Grove	Capt. in the 9th regt. H. Major by 6/51 in succession to Paul Hobson[344]
Captains	John Wetwang	In post in 10/52[345]
	Robert Scarfe	In post in 4/51 Gone by 10/52. Succeeded by Capt. Needham[346]
	Thomas Empson	Lt. 1st regt. H. Prob. took over Fenwick's troop[347]
	Robert Greenwood[348]	Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Hubbard[349]
Capt. Lt.	William Hubbard	

344 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 67. Hobson was major in 4/51: ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 143.
345 Ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 170.
346 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 165; ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 170.
347 Empson was granted the captaincy in 12/50 for his bravery at Dunbar: F. and D. They do not provide a first name but a maimed soldier petition gives it as Thomas with John Atherton as lieutenant of the troop and Joseph Strangeways as cornet: Cheshire County Record Office (CRO), Quarter Sessions Files, Michaelmas 1656, fo. 112. Hacker had hoped to appoint Hubbard, his captain lieutenant, but Cromwell was adamant and took offence at Hacker's opinion that Empson was a better preacher than a soldier. For this see above p. 57.
348 Greenwood's newly raised Northumberland troop, at first intended for the Berwick garrison, replaced Henry Ogle's in 7/50, which went to Berwick instead. Greenwood was still captain of a troop in the regiment in 6/51 but not in 6/52: F. and D.; TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 27; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 59; ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 228.
349 Ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 276.

Regiments Raised or Reconstituted for the Scottish Expedition to September 1651

Infantry

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Read	Lt. Col. 11th regt. F.| Succeeded Col. Sexby 6/51[350]|
Lt. Col.	Peter Pike	
Major	John Clobury	In post in 4/51/[351]|
Captains	Hugh Gosnell	XXX In post c. 12/50|
	William Sumner	XXX Ditto. Fought in the Scottish campaign 50-51[352]| Gone by 56|
	Nathaniel Badger	XXX. In post in 7/51 and 3/53| Gone by 5/55[353]|
	James Mutlow	XXX In post by 6/51[354]|
	George Everard	Lt. in 6/51|
	William? Yardley	XXX In post in 6/51[355]|
	Miles Meredith	XXX Prob. in post by 9/51[356]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captains	Giles Horsington	XXX Prob. left during the Scottish campaign[357]|
	Thomas Hunt	Lt. in the Weymouth garr. in 12/48[358]. Capt. in this regt. possibly by 6/55 but certainly by 5/56[359]|
	Roger Pritchard	Prob. left during the Scottish campaign[360]|
	XXX Catchett/Catcott	XXX Capt. in 9/53 but not in 56[361]|
	Sylam Callant	Capt. in Col. Kynaston's regt. in Ireland in 5/48[362]. Capt. in this regt. in 3/54[363]|
	XXX Earley	Capt. in 3/55.[364] His surname was prob. Yardley|

350 All the officers identified as serving in the regiment in 6/51 were involved in Colonel Sexby's court-martial: Clarke Papers v, pp. 30-6. The principal charges related to happenings whilst Sexby was at Weymouth and during the march to Scotland c. 12/50 by which time Gosnell and Sumner were seemingly company commanders. The will of William Sumner gent. of Leyland was granted probate in 1655: PCC Wills 1653-6.

351 TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 32. Clobury had previously served in Colonel Rous's regiment in the Plymouth garrison: ibid, E 121/1/6/ unnumbered, entry 9.

352 Ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 354.

353 BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer 15-22/7/51; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol. 3/53, 5/55. For Badger's first name, see TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 144.

354 Ibid, SP 28/99, fo. 224.

355 William Yardley was in post in 1659, but a Richard Yardley had been captain in what was to become Heane's regiment in the 1640s: Spring, *Waller's Army,* p. 135.

356 A soldier claimed to have served under Meredith in the Scottish campaigns of 1650-51 when Sexby was colonel: TNA, SP 28/98, fo. 67.

357 Ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 336; ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 391. Horsington was in command of a company in Scotland in 1650-1.

358 Ibid, SP 28/50, fo. 599.

359 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol; TNA, SP 28/110, fos. 264-6.

360 Pritchard saw service in Scotland under Colonels Sexby and Read: ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 170.

361 Chequers Ms 782, unfol.; Davies, Quarters of the English Army, pp. 65-6.

362 HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 597.

363 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 30/3-6/4/54.

364 Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 209.

18th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	William Daniel	
Lt. Col.	William Brayne	Very active as a commander in Scotland 51-56. Col. of a new regt. for Jamaica mid-56. D. there 9/57[365]|
Major	John Pearson	Prob. capt. 9th regt. F. Replaced John Jolly[366]|
Captains	Richard Heath	
	Joseph Witter	
	Francis Aldersey	
	Hugh Birtles	At the battle of Dunbar in 9/50[367]|
	Edward Barker	Prob. left regt. in late 51[368]|
	William Wenlock	In post in 5/50| Prob. left regt. soon afterwards|
	Nicholas Kelke	Succeeded Capt. Williams by 8/51[369]|
Capt. Lt.	John Parker??[370]	
Possibles Captains	Joseph Hales	Lt. to Lt. Col. Brayne and prob. succeeded him[371]| Left regt. by 11/56|
	Richard Holford	In post in 11/51[372]|
	Roland Gascoyne/Gaskin	Possibly in post in 2/51, but certainly by 9/55[373]|

365 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 23/9/51; F. and D.
366 Pearson was in post by 4/51: TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 77.
367 CRO, Quarter Sessions Files, Epiphany 1650-1, fo. 52.
368 Barker fought in the Scottish campaign. He also signed maimed soldier petitions in 1651-2 by which time he was presumably back in Cheshire: TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 164; CRO, Quarter Sessions Files, Michaelmas 1652, fo. 102.
369 TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 461. Kelke had been a captain in the Abingdon garrison in 4/46: ibid, SP 28/42, fo. 1066.
370 A John Parker was captain lieutenant of a regiment commanded by Colonel Brayne in 9/54: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
371 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 33 unfol. 5/53. Hales re-appeared in the regiment in 1658. For this see p. 107.
372 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 25. A Lieutenant Richard Holford was in Brereton's brigade in 1645: TNA, SP 23/148, fo. 369.
373 Ibid, SP 28/108, fo. 77. There was a Captain Gascoyne in Scotland in 2/51 but his regiment is not given: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 9.

19th Regiment[374]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Fitch	Gov. of Carlisle. Gov. of Inverness 11/51[375]|
Lt. Col.	**XXX Briggs** Robert Blount[376]	Drowned in the north of Scotland[377]| In post in 6/52.| D. after 9/54 but before 10/56[378]. Will proved 1656. Replaced by Major Mann|
Major	William Bird[379]	D. 8/53. Replaced by Miles Mann by 2/55[380]|
Captains	John Pye	Capt. Hartlepool garr. 8/49[381]|
	Henry Cleare senior	7/53, 11/56[382]|
	Cuthbert Studholme[383]	
	Miles Mann	Prob. capt. in the regt.|[384]
	Francis Mencour[385]	
	John Hills?	XXX Capt. in 2/53. Major in 10/56|
	Anthony Langrish?	XXX Capt. in 7/53, 10/56|
	Edward Ersbury?	XXX Capt. in 1/53[386]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captains	Anthony Wilkes?	In post in 5/55[387]|
	Abraham Spooner	In post in 10/56|

	Richard Lowry/Lowers	Ditto|
	George Bateman?	In post in 10/56[388]|

374 For the regiment in 10/56, see below p. 90.
375 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 24.
376 Blount and Pye were commissioned as captains before 6/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 14. Blount, Pye and Cleare were officers in the extreme north of England in 12/48 when their names appear in the accounts of the Newcastle garrison. At that time Pye and Blount were in Maleverer's regiment: TNA, SP 28/133/4, fos. 17, 30. Captains Blount and Cleare were in garrison at Tynemouth Castle in 3/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. Blount was not the first lieutenant colonel in the regiment. For this, see above p. 58. I have no explanation for Blount being lieutenant colonel rather than William Bird.
377 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 5-12/4/52.
378 C. Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate* (Edinburgh 1899), p. 178; CSPD 1656-7, p. 213.
379 Anthony sometimes appears as the major's first name, but he was described as William Bird in pay warrants as, for example, in TNA, SP 28/69, fos. 23-6, and in his will proved 1654. He also appears as William in William Clarke's accounts for 4/53: Chequers Ms 782, unfol. For Major William Bird in the Carlisle garrison regiment, see p. 58 above.
380 Lieutenant Colonel Blount, Major Bird and Captains Cleare and Mann were mentioned in a document written at Dalkeith in 7/53: Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth*, p. 175. Mann was apparently senior captain in 7/53 and major by 9/53: ibid, pp. 175, 179; Chequers Ms 782, unfol. F. and D. give the date of Mann's promotion as 9/53, but their reference merely records Bird's death.
381 See Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 162.
382 For Cleare, Spooner, Lowry and Wilkes in 11/56 see Davies, Quarters of the English Army, p. 63.
383 A commission for Ensign Pinnock in Studholme's company was issued on 10/4/50. Studholme's name also appears on 12/4/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.
384 I have no record of him in this regiment or any other prior to his becoming major.
385 Mencour was a captain in the regiment in late 9/51 and probably in 7/53: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 20, unfol.; Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth*, p. 177.
386 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 54, unfol.
387 Ibid, Clarke Ms 55, unfol.
388 Abraham Spooner was an ensign in the New Model Army in the late 1640s seemingly in the 11th regiment of foot: TNA, E 121/5/7/18, entry 212.

20th Regiment[389]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	George Monck	
Lt. Col.	William Gough (F)	Previously capt. 11th regt. F. |
Major	Abraham Holmes (H)	Previously capt. 8th regt. F.|
Captains	Ethelbert Morgan (H)	Ditto|
	Francis Nicholls (H)	In post in 11/51. Lt. to Capt. Henry Mason in 8th regt. F. whom he almost certainly succeeded as capt. in the 20th regt.[390]|
	John Robbins	XXX D. c. 12/51|
	John Gardiner (H)	Ens. to Capt. Deane 8th regt. F. and possibly to his successor Henry Mason[391]| Cashiered 5/54. Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Hughes|
	Benjamin Groome (F?)	In post in 1/53[392]|
	Edward Boone (H)	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt. Succeeded Capt. Ross X in 6/51| Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Powell in about 5/52[393]|
	George Parker (F)	Ens. Col's co. 11th regt. F. [394]|
Capt. Lt.	William Powell	Ens. 12th regt. F. Replaced Boone as capt. lt. Full capt. by 5/52| X in Scotland in very late 52[395]|
Possibles: Captains	George Walton	XXX. In post in 1/53[396]|
	Roger Hatchman	XXX In post by 4/53[397]|

389 The companies of the 8th and the 11th regiments of foot which were combined to create this regiment were battalions which formed part of the army that invaded Scotland in 7/50: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 22-29/7/1650.
390 LJ ix, pp. 153-6. Nicholls attended courts martial at Dundee in late 1651: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. Soldiers applying for arrears of pay for the Scottish campaign mention Nicholls not Mason, which implies that Mason died early in the campaign: TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 451; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 113.
391 G. Davies, T*he Early History of the Coldstream Guards* (Oxford, 1924), p. 42. A John Gardiner had been lieutenant in Captain Peart's troop in the 5th regiment of horse. For this, see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 134, 141. They could be the same man.

392 F. and D. claimed that Groome was formerly in the 11th regiment of foot but I have not seen any evidence of this. They were also wrong in the case of Gardiner who came from the 8th not the 11th regiment.
393 In 7/51 Monck asked for Boone to replace Ross as a full captain and Powell to be captain lieutenant. Cromwell agreed: F. and D.; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.; TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 618. Boone was a captain in Colonel Brayne regiment drawn from the army in Scotland in 1654 to fight in the Caribbean. He escaped drowning in the shipwreck off the coast of Ireland which killed 200 of the regiment's officers and rank-and-file: F. and D.
394 A Captain Parker fought in the 20th regiment of foot in the Scottish campaign: TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 105. George Parker had been commissioned as ensign in the colonel's company in the 11th regiment of foot in 5/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 11. For his later service in the regiment, see below p. 107.
395 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 119; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 20/10/51; MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards* i, pp. 49, 53. Powell was dead by 21/12/52: BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 21-28/12/52. He was replaced eventually by Richard Hughes, who was in post in 1/54, but somebody else came in between.
396 Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
397 Hatchman was at a Council of War at Dalkeith in the spring of 1653: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 25, fo. 41. He was governor of Peebles in 11/54: C. Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate* (Edinburgh, 1899), p. xxxiv.

21st Regiment 10/50[398]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Matthew Alured	Cashiered 12/54. Succeeded by Lt. Col. Talbot|
Lt. Col.	Thomas Churchman	In post in 10/50 and 2/51[399]|
Major	Peter Crispe	Major F. Gloucester garr. to 1/48. In post in this regt. in 1/51[400]| Transfer to 23rd regt. F. c. 11/51|
Captains	Edward Sharpe	In post in 10/50 and 2/51. D. in Scottish campaign by 10/51[401]|
	Matthew Phillips	In post in 10/50 and 1/51[402]|
	John Cooke	Ditto|
	John Metcalfe	Ditto[403]|
	John Holdsworth	Ex lt. to Capt. Alland. In post in 10/50 and 12/51|
	Henry Fotherby[404]	
	XXX Alland	In post in 10/50. Prob. succeeded by Capt. Sykes[405]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

398 The regiment was being raised in Yorkshire by Major George Gill in 6/50, but was given to Alured on 1/8/50 after Gill had been accused of financial malpractice, probably a trumped-up charge: F. and D. The numerous changes in the company commanders between 11/50 and 12/51 make it necessary to provide two lists. It seems unlikely that they were a result of discontent at the disgrace of Colonel Gill, but four company commanders at least, Crispe, Holdsworth, Metcalfe and Fotherby, with Sharpe as a possible fifth, were transferred into the 23rd regiment of foot during 1651.
399 TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 435. The names of Churchman, Crispe, Metcalfe, Cooke, Alland, Holdsworth, Phillips and Sharpe appear in a list of payments made to the regiment in 10/50: BL, Additional Ms 35192, fo. 4. Holdsworth was a lieutenant at the time and possibly Phillips also.
400 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 18.
401 Ibid, fo. 6; CJ vii, p. 38. Sharpe and the four captains whose names follow his were in the regiment in 2/51, TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 435.
402 Taken ill during the campaign in Scotland, Phillips seems to have retired before 10/51: ibid, SP 28/108, fo. 626.
403 Metcalfe, Holdsworth and Fotherby appear to have transferred to the 23rd regiment of foot. For this see below p. 78.
404 Fotherby fought in the regiment in Scottish campaign: ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 185.
405 Sykes was in post in 1/51 but not in 10/50: ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 435.

21st Regiment 12/51	Name	Military career
Colonel	Matthew Alured	
Lt. Col.	Thomas Talbot?	Formerly in Overton's regt. in the Hull garr.[406]
Major	Henry Pownall?	Capt. 14th regt. F. Major in this regt. by 4/52 at the latest[407]
Captains	**Henry Saville**	In post in 4/51 and 9/51[408]
	John Sykes	In post by 1/51[409]
	John Hargreave	Ens. to Major Fenwick in Lambert's brigade. Capt. 11/51[410]
	Joseph Poole	In post in 11/51
	XXX Shipden?[411]	
	Daniel Goldsmith	Commissioned as capt. in 10/51. In post in 4/52[412]
	Richard Day	In post in 10/51[413]
Capt. Lt.	John Greene?[414]	
Possibles Captains	James Emerson	Formerly capt. 25th regt. F. In post in 4/54[415]
	Edmund Lister	In post in 6/54
Major	John Thompson	In post in 11/51[416]

406 Talbot was clearly Alured's lieutenant colonel in 3/53: Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, p. 53. He was serving as a major in Hull garrison under Colonel Overton's command in 4/50 and 11/51: TNA, SP 28/66, fo. 444; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 590. According to F. and D. he had served in Alured's regiment of horse, but not, it seems, the regiment that Alured commanded in Scotland in 1650-*51*. For this see below p. 259.
407 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 475; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 18; Firth, Scotland and the Commonwealth, p. 38; BL, Thomason Tracts, *The Faithful Scout*, 23-30/4/52. Pownall and Lister were in the Orkneys by 6/54: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
408 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol; TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 157.
409 Sykes seems to have left the regiment in late 55 only to return by 11/57. For this see p. 91.
410 TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 351. He attended a council of war in 12/48: YML, Hailstone Ms BB 53, fos. 30-2.
411 TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 476. A Captain Shipden served on a court martial at Dundee on 20/12/51: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.
412 BL, Thomason Tracts, The Faithful Scout, 23-30/4/52. A Daniel Goldsmith had served as an officer of foot in Major General Browne's brigade c. 1645. In c. 1648 he was serving without a commission in Captain White's troop in the 4th regiment of horse. Subsequently he became a lieutenant: TNA, E 121/3/4/9B, entry 31; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 960.
413 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 550.
414 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fos. 5, 11.
415 There was a Captain Emerson at Ayr by 3/54 where the regiment was based: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
416 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 824.

22nd Regiment[417]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	
Lt. Col.	Charles Worsley	D. 6/56[418]
Major	John Wiggan	Replaced Roger Sawrey as major c. 6/51 Dismissed or resigned c. 1/54[419]
Captains	Oliver Edge	Capt. in Bright's regt. F. 48. Capt. 22nd regt. F. 9/51[420]
	John Hodgson	Left c. 55 to become lt. in 12th regt. H.[421]
	Jeffrey Ellatson[422]	
	Francis Mercer	Lt. 2nd regt. F. 2/50. Capt. in this regt. 7/50[423]
	Nicholas Whitby	Lt. to Major Lagoe 9th regt. F. in Scotland. Succeeded to Major Sawrey's co. as capt. before 10/51[424]
	XXX Ellicott?[425]	
	John Chamberlain	In the regt. in Scotland in 50-51[426]
Capt. Lt.	XXX Rigby??[427]	
Possible Captain	XXX Alson[428]	

417 The regiment was being raised in Lancashire in 7/50: CSPD 1650, p. 256. Cromwell became its colonel on 27/10/50: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Weekly Intelligencer of the Commonwealth, 8-15/10/50.
418 Worsley was lieutenant colonel by 8/50: CSPD 1650, p. 308.
419 Wiggan was captain in 1/51 and major by 6/51. Sawrey was still major in 5/51: Chequers Ms 782, fos. 12, 18, 19, 27. Wiggan left the regiment because he could not accept the Protectorate: F. and D.
420 TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 228. The earl of Derby surrendered to him in 1651: BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 7-14/10/51.
421 John Hodgson, *Memoirs*, p. 30. He had previously served as a lieutenant to Captains Bourne and Spencer in John Bright's regiment, which became the 14th regiment of foot: TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 251; ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 229.
422 Ellatson was captain in this regiment in 9/51. Captain Carter is mentioned in the same sentence, but he may not have been in the 20th regiment of foot: *Old Parliamentary History 20,* p. 54.
423 TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 29; ibid, SP 28/103, fo. 318; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69 unfol. 27/2/50; ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 4; CSPD 1650, p. 582.
424 TNA, SP 28/91, fos. 221-7; ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 446; ibid, SP 28/106, fo. 39.
425 Possibly Ellatson: ibid, SP 28/108, fo. 241.
426 Ibid, SP 28/99, fo. 530; ibid, SP 28/102, fo. 424.
427 There is a hint that Rigby was captain lieutenant in this regiment as his soldiers claiming pay arrears for fighting in Scotland in 50/51 were bracketed with those of Cromwell's own company: ibid. SP 28/93, fo. 153.
428 See above p. 91.

23rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Cooper[429]	
Lt. Col.	Roger Sawrey	Lt. Col of Col. West's short-lived regt. F. 5/51[430]|
Major	Peter Crispe	Major 21st regt. F. Prob. in post in 11/51[431]|
Captains	XXX Wrench	XXX In post by 11/51.[432] In Scotland in 1/54[433]|
	XXX Sharpe[434]	XXX
	John Gillott	XXX In post in 12/51|
	Yaxley Robson	In post in 12/51[435]|
	Henry Fotherby	Served before 10/51[436]|
	John Holdsworth	Ditto|
	John Metcalfe	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captains	John Cressett[437]	In post by 11/51. Served until 6/3/55 at the earliest[438]|
	Edward Lunn	Lt. to Lt. Col. Sawrey in West's regt.[439]|
	John Parker[440]	XXX In post in 11/56|
	Edward Harman	XXX In post in 5/56[441]|
	XXX Townshend?	XXX In post in 3/54[442]|
	Thomas Spencer	XXX Possibly in post in 11/53, certainly by 9/56[443]|

429 Several claims for pay arrears during service in Scotland state that this regiment was first Matthew Alured's before becoming Cooper's. For this, see ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 218; ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 275; ibid, SP 28/100, fos. 280, 575. This was not impossible, but Alured had acquired the colonelcy of Gill's regiment in early 8/50. A more likely explanation is that companies were transferred between the two regiments. See also p. 78.
430 Sawrey became lieutenant colonel of this regiment when West's was reduced into it in 10/51: Chequers Ms 782, fo. 19; TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 20.
431 Crispe served on a court martial at Dundee on 13/11/51, but he may still have been in Alured's regiment: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.
432 TNA, SP 28/100, fo. 571; ibid, SP 28/102, fo. 221. Wrench's name appears amongst the officers attending courts martial at Dundee in late 1651: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol . 21/11/51, 17/12/51. A William Wrench was a junior commissioned officer in Lambert's brigade in 12/48: YML, Hailstone Ms BB 53, unfol.
433 TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 162; Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
434 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 6/12/51. Sharpe was in the regiment before 10/51: TNA, SP 28/100, fo. 575. Formerly a goldsmith in the Strand, he died of fever on 18/12/51: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 22-29/12/51.
435 CSPD 1651-2, p. 60. Robson's company, lately arrived from England, was intended for the Orkney Isles in 3/52 but was driven back to Burntisland by unfavourable winds: Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth*, p. 34; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 26/2-4/3/52. Robson was senior captain in the regiment in 10/59: F. and D.
436 For the service of Fotherby, Holdsworth and Metcalfe under both Alured and Cooper in Scotland, see SP 28/95, fo. 218 .
437 Cressett had commanded a company in Syler's regiment of foot in the Scottish campaign. It was disbanded in 10/51 and 400 men were added to the 23rd regiment of foot as a result, including seemingly Captain Cresset: ibid, SP 28/85, fos. 103, 145. See p. 256 for

Syler's regiment.
438 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol.
439 TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 222. There was a Lieutenant Lunn at Dundee in late 1651: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 13/11/51.
440 Parker was captain in this regiment in 1656 having possibly served previously as captain lieutenant under Lieutenant Colonel Brayne in the 18th regiment of foot. For this, see p. 74 above.
441 Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
442 Ibid.
443 There was a Captain Spencer in Scotland in 11/53: ibid, unfol. He cannot have been Captain John Spencer of the 3rd regiment of horse as it did not arrive in the country until 1/54: F. and D.

24th Regiment[444]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Ralph Cobbett (B)	Lt. Col. 5th regt. F.[445]
Lt. Col.	Richard Sankey	Previously capt. in the 4th regt. H.| Left the regt. mid-52[446]
Major	Arthur Young (B)[447]	Capt. 5th regt. F. Lt. Col. by 9/52
Captains	Jeremiah Campfield (B)[448]	Capt. in the regt. by 28/12/51. Major in 9/52[449]
	Hugh Dodgin	Ens. 5th regt. F. late 1640s. Capt. in this regt. by 13/11/51[450]
	Matthew Marvell/Marwell	Lt. to Capt. William Read 5th regt. F. Capt. in this regt. on 13/11/51
	Richard Hatt (B)	Lt. to Lt. Col. Cobbett in 1/50 in the 5th regt. F. Full capt. in the 24th regt. by11/51.[451] Prob. succeeded Capt. William Jones X at the battle of Worcester[452]
	William Broadhurst (B)	Capt. 28/12/51. Lt. to Capt. John Groome in 5th regt. F.
	Roger Jones (B)	Capt. in this regt. in 53[453]
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possible Captains	Humphrey Mason[454]	XXX
	Joshua Blackwell	XXX In post in early 5/53[455]

444 This new regiment was formed from five companies of the 5th regiment of foot each of which was 200 strong at the time: F. and D. It fought at Worcester but was shipped to Scotland from Hull on 4/10/51. There it remained throughout the 1650s: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Faithful Scout, 10-17/10/51; F. and D.
445 Cobbett was authorised to increase the number of companies from five to ten on 13/8/51 thus making a full regiment. He was first described as colonel on 25/8/51: CSPD 1651, pp. 325, 361.
446 By early 1654 Sankey was a lieutenant colonel and treasurer of the probate registry: CSPD 1653-4, p. 356.
447 Major Young, Captains Marvell, Dodgin, Broadhurst and Hatt and Lieutenant Mason all sat on courts martial at Dundee between 3/11 and 28/12/51: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 21, unfol.
448 Campfield, Dodgin, Jones, Marvell, Hatt and Broadhurst had all been junior officers in the 5th regiment of foot regiment in the late 1640s: TNA, E 121/2/11/17A, entries 40-266.
449 Ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 334; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 28/12/51.
450 TNA, E 121/2/11/17B, entry 136.
451 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 3/11/51.
452 Jones's name and regiment were given in a pamphlet entitled 'A More Exact Relation of Every Particular of the Fight at Worcester' reproduced in M. Atkin, C*romwell's Crowning Mercy. The Battle of Worcester 1651* (Stroud, 1998), p. 165. I have been unable to find the original. There was a Lieutenant William Jones in the 5th regiment of foot in the late sixteen-forties: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 131.
453 Jones had been captain lieutenant in the 5th regiment of foot and was a full captain in early 6/53: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 8; ibid, Clarke Ms 45, unfol.
454 Probably the Lieutenant Mason who attended a court martial at Dundee on 3/11/51: ibid, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.
455 Chequers Ms 782, unfol.

Cavalry

16th Regiment 8/50[456]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Arthur Haselrig	Resigned 6/51. Succeeded by Major James Berry of the 5th regt. H., who also took over his troop[457]
Major	Henry Sanderson	D. in 1/51. Succeeded by John Sydenham X 4/51 who was succeeded by William Boteler[458]
Captains	Robert Hutton	Capt. 8th regt. F.
	John Ogle	XXX. In post in 3/51. Not in the regt. in 4/51[459]
	Edward Fenwick	XXX. In post in 12/50 and 3/51[460]. Succeeded by Capt. Leigh in 4/51[461]
	Man Dowson	Lt. to Capt. Crackenthorpe in the 15th regt. H. X in Scotland in 2/51[462]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

456 This regiment seems initially to have been commissioned as a militia regiment for the four northern counties: CSPD 1650-1, p. 511; TNA, SP 25/118, fo. 87.
457 Ibid, SP 28/106, fo. 384.
458 F. and D.
459 TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 115; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 136.
460 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 20, unfol.; TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 136.
461 Ibid, SP 28/78, fos. 58, 61.
462 Dowson had been captain of the troop in garrison at Greystoke Castle in Cumberland under Colonel Cholmley before becoming Crackenthorpe's lieutenant: ibid, E 121/1/7/13, entry 1; F. and D., p. 232. One document issued in 3/51 states that Dowson's successor as troop commander was Major Scott, but Scott appears very soon afterwards in Colonel Lytcott's regiment of horse as major. For this see below p. 257 and TNA, SP 28/76, fos. 132. Dowson's successor must therefore have been Unton Croke who is mentioned in ibid, fo. 135.

16th Regiment 9/51	Name	Military career
Colonel	James Berry	Ex major 5th regt. H.
Major	William Boteler	Capt. 3rd regt. H. 5/49. In post by 6/51[463]
Captains	Robert Hutton	
	Unton Croke	XXX In post by 4/51[464]
	John Robinson	XXX Succeeded Capt. Ogle by 4/51[465]
	XXX Lee/Leigh	In post on 23/9/51. Resigned just before 20/12/51. Replaced by Capt. Hawkridge[466]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

463 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 58.
464 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 135.
465 Ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 19; ibid, SP 28/102, fo. 470.
466 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.; TNA, SP 28/78, fos 21, 58; ibid, SP 28/82, fos 478-9.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Okey	Cashiered in 12/54 for opposition to the Protectorate|
Major	Tobias Bridge	
Captains	John Daborne	
	Richard Castle	In post in 1/51.[467]|Left the regt. soon afterwards. Succeeded by Henry Cleare junior[468]|
	Richard Combes	Succeeded Capt. William Neale by 1/12/50.[469] Prob. ex capt. 1st regt. F.|
	Matthew Fann	Capt. in the regt. in 4/51[470]. Transfer from the 11th regt. F. after 6/50| Left regt. after 8/53|
Capt. Lt.	Henry Crase/Crease	Cor. to Capt. Castle in 1/51. Capt. Lt. by 11/51. Full capt after Okey's dismissal in 54[471]|

467 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 49.

468 The troop commanders in 12/51 were Bridges, Daborne, Fann, Cleare, Combes and Captain Lieutenant Crase: ibid, SP 28/82, fos. 474-6. Cleare's name also appears in a list of troop commanders in the regiment of 5/52 together with Captains Daborne and Fann: ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 240.

469 Neale was intended to be a captain in the regiment, which was described in 12/50 as 'lately established': ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 38. By then, however, he was dead as a result of hard usage during the fighting in Scotland. Richard Combes was commissioned as captain in the regiment in 12/50: CJ vii, p. 38; CSPD 1650, p. 451.

470 TNA, SP 28/77, fo. 18. He was still in post in 1653: ibid, SP 28/90, fo. 116; Worc College, Clarke Ms 25, fo. 43.

471 TNA, SP 26/74, fo. 53. Ibid, SP 28/82, fos. 474-6.

Regiments Being Raised in September 1651

Infantry

25th Regiment[472]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Overton	Cashiered 12/54. Replaced by Col. Thomas Morgan|
Lt. Col.	John Cotterell[473]	In post in 10/51. Major in one of Overton's earlier regts., then capt. 16th regt. F.[474]|
Major	Michael Richardson?	Capt. in Overton's earlier regt. | Major in this regt. in 3/52[475]|
Captains	John Townshend	Possibly lt. in the 7th regt. F. In post before 9/51 and in 4/54[476]| Gone by 9/56|
	Richard Tomkins	XXX. In post in 10/51 and 3/52[477]| Ditto|
	John? Hutton	XXX In post in 10/51, 9/52[478]| Still in post in 11/56[479]|
	James Emerson	In post in 10/51 and 3/52| Transferred soon afterwards to the 21st regt. F.[480]|
	Robert Scrope/Scrape	Formerly gov. of Harwich. In post in 10/51, 3/52, 11/53[481]|
	Thomas Quick	XXX In post in 10/51 and 3/52|
	XXX Benson	XXX In post in 10/51 and 3/52| Gone by 56[482]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

472 A regiment of 10 companies under Overton's command was included within the New Model establishment agreed by Parliament on 2/10/51: CJ, vii, p. 24. It seems to have included four companies from the Hull garrison: F. and D. It also included at least one of the companies Overton had commanded in Scotland, that of Captain John Townshend: TNA, SP 28/93, fo. 338. My hunch is that the regiment was an amalgam of companies from the north-eastern garrisons with some of Overton's existing companies. For its relationship to Overton's original regiment in the Hull garrison, see Appendix One.

473 For Lieutenant Colonel John Cotterell in this regiment, see TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 491. Cotterell was commanding the garrison at Pontefract Castle under Overton in 1648 with the rank of major when it was captured by the royalists. After that he commanded a company in the 16th regiment of foot. For this see ibid, E 121/3/3/28, entry 48; R. Holmes, *The Sieges of Pontefract Castle 1644-48* (Pontefract, 1887), p. 259 citing a contemporary journal written by Nathan Drake.

474 See Appendix I for Cotterell and Richardson.

475 For company commanders in 3/52, see TNA, SP28/85, fos. 87, 97-105, 107, 113, 122, 135, 151.

476 Ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 338; ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 307. Townshend was captured by Scottish guerrillas in 11/53 with Captain Scrope: Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth*, p. 270. He returned from 'his prison in the hills' in 3/54: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 25.

477 For Tomkins, Emerson, Quick, Benson and Hutton in 10/51, see TNA, SP 28/81, fos 480, 482, 494, 564, 680.

478 Ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 312.

479 See below, p. 93.

480 Emerson had been lieutenant to Major Copperthwaite in Ferdinando, Lord Fairfax's regiment of horse in the First Civil War: ibid, E 121/3/3/unnumbered, entry 35. He was almost certainly the Lieutenant Emerson who signed a letter from the Northern brigade in 12/48: YML, Hailstone Ms BB 53, unfol.

481 Scrope had been commissioned as governor on 2/5/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.

482 See below p. 93.

Dragoons

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Morgan[483]	
Major	John Bramston	Capt. Dr. in 12/50 and 10/51. Major by 3/52[484]|
Captains	John Farmer	Capt. Okey's regt. Dr. to c. 6/47. Capt. Dr. in Scotland in 6/51. Major by 8/55[485]|
	Edward Place	Capt. Dr. in Scotland 10/51[486]|
	George Robinson	Lt. in Capt. Best's troop Dr. Capt. Dr. in Scotland 4/51. In post in the regt. in 11/51[487]|
	Thomas Champion	XXX In post in 11/51 and 1/53[488]| Gone by 54|
	XXX Best	
	XXX Ross[489]	

Capt. Lt.	Francis Kelly	Ens. in the 20th regt. F. Capt. Lt. in this regt. in 11/51[490]|

483 The regiment was commissioned in 9/51. In the new establishment passed by Parliament it was to be made up of eight troops, those of Morgan, Bramston, Farmer, Robinson, Champion, Place, Ross and Best. Colonel Humphreys' troop left the regiment and returned to England with Cromwell in 9/51. It enjoyed an independent existence, probably until its commander was chosen as a colonel of infantry in the expedition to the Caribbean: CJ vii, p. 24; TNA, SP 28/107, fo. 249. Men who served in the many other troops of dragoons quartered in Scotland during the campaign of 1650-51 claimed to have fought in Morgan's regiment when submitting their claims for pay arrears, but they were being economical with the truth as the regiment had not yet been formed. For this see, for example, ibid, SP 28/78, fos. 77-82.
484 Ibid, SP 28/121, fo. 19; ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 56; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.; TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 129.
485 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 14-21/8/1654; TNA, SP 28/107, fo. 245.
486 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 57.
487 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 589. Robinson, lieutenant to Captain Best's troop of dragoons, was in command of a troop of dragoons in 4/51 but was seemingly newly promoted: ibid, SP 28/76, fos. 133, 141.
488 Ibid, SP 28/90, fo. 179. Champion's was one of those troops raised from the militia and therefore to be discharged in late 9/51, but it was ordered to Scotland: CSPD 1651, p. 441.
489 For Ross, Place and Best, see TNA, SP 28/95, fos. 214, 220, 234.
490 Cary, Great Civil War ii, p. 346; TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 830; ibid, SP28/85, fo. 463. Kelly was apparently captain of a troop in this regiment in mid-1652: Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth,* p. 361. However, he was merely captain lieutenant: TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 99; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 55, fo. 3. In 7/53 Kelly was in trouble. He left for London, presumably to obtain evidence in his defence, and seems to have left the regiment, though only temporarily: ibid, Clarke Ms 45, unfol.

Additional troops[491]		
Captains	John Green[492]|	Former capt. lt. to Col. Alured. Troop disbanded c. 12/51[493]|
	Kympton Hilliard[494]	
	John Mason[495]	
	XXX[496]	

491 These troops were raised in 1654 and disbanded in 1655 apart from Hilliard's.
492 Chequers Ms 782, unfol. 1/54.
493 See above p. 77
494 Chequers Ms 782, unfol. 4/54; Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate,* pp. 97, 194.
495 Chequers Ms 782, unfol. 2/54.
496 This was possibly Colonel Humphrey's troop. A Captain Glyn was mentioned in 8/54, but this may be an incorrect transcription of Hellin. A Captain William Hellin commanded a troop in Morgan's regiment in early 54. For Glyn see Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate* p. 150.

Independent troop		
Colonel	John Humphreys	In post in 4/54 in Scotland. Left troop by 8/55[497]|

497 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 124; TNA, SP 28/100, fo. 357; ibid, SP 28/107, fo. 249. A soldier claiming for pay arrears stated that the troop was in Morgan's regiment in Scotland in 1650-1: ibid, SP 28/102, fo. 350. See also pp. 82, 258.

New Model Army Regiments in circa November 1656

Infantry

1st Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	Col. 10/55 in succession to William Goffe who had become col. of the 14th regt. H.| Succeeded by William Goffe in 1/58 on the death of Francis White[498]|
Lt. Col.	Francis White	Drowned in 12/57[499]|
Major	Clement Keene	Succeeded White as lt.col. by 10/58[500]|
Captains	James Priest	
	William Farley	Still capt. in 1/57. Major by 10/58[501]|
	XXX Straghan[502]	
	Robert Luson	

	Robert King[503]	
	John Drake[504]	
	John Miller's company	In post 9/51. Miller D. in post in 54[505]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possible Captain	Thomas White[506]	

498 Clarke Papers iii, p. 132.
499 Although White is twice referred to as a full colonel in 1657, it is abundantly clear that he remained a lieutenant colonel until his death: CSPD 1656-7, pp. 189, 355; ibid, 1657-8, p. 202.
500 Ibid, 1657-8, p. 202.
501 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 28/1-4/2/57.
502 His soldiers' claims for pay arrears in 1653-4 imply that Straghan was still in the regiment, it being normal practice for those doing so to give the name of both the captain in post at the time the claim was presented as well as the one under whom they had served.
503 I have no record of King in the mid-sixteen fifties but he was in the army in 9/58 when he signed an address congratulating Richard Cromwell on becoming Lord Protector: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
504 Drake was still a captain in the regiment in 8/57: CSPD, 1657-8, p. 57.
505 TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 54; PCC Wills 1653-6, p. 353.
506 See above p. 60.

2nd Regiment[507]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Richard Ashfield	
Lt. Col.	William Symonds	
Major	Henry Dorney	
Captains	Robert Baynes	
	Thomas Heyrick	
	William Fitch	
	XXX Jones	
	William Hooper	Lt. to Capt. Lionel Lingwood. Capt. 56[508]
	William Davies	
	John Rudlee	Capt. 5/55[509]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

507 The regimental lists of this regiment and the 24th regiment of foot for 9/56 are given in F. and D. They were in the Clarke manuscripts at Worcester College, Oxford but I have not been able to locate them.
508 Hooper was a company commander in the regiment by early 5/55: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol.
509 See above p. 61.

5th Regiment[510]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Barkstead	
Lt. Col.	No officer of this rank	
Major	John Miller	
Captains	Nicholas Cordy[511]	
	Henry Sharpe[512]	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	William Foster	Succeeded by William Parker as capt. lt. in 57. Did not leave the army but post unknown until 6/59[513]
Possible Captain	John Jennings[514]	Commissioned as capt. in the regt. in 6/59

510 Barkstead's regiment only had six companies in 1657: TNA, SP 28/114, fo. 144.
511 Cordy is mentioned on several occasions in Colonel Barkstead's letters. See, for example, Thurloe, *State Papers* iv, p. 90; ibid v, p. 166.
512 Sharpe and Foster were witnesses of Miles Sindercombe's suicide in the Tower of London in 2/57: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 903 (7, 11).

513 Foster probably became captain of a company in the regiment as both he and Parker signed the address to Protector Richard in 9/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 178.
514 Jennings was used by Barkstead as a messenger but he may not have commanded a company: Thurloe, *State Papers*, v, p. 711.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Mill	Col. 9/55. Succeeded Richard Ingoldsby|
Lt. Col.	Francis Allen	
Major	John Grime	
Captains	John Hunt	
	Abraham Davies[515]	
	John Davies	
	William Billars[516]	Capt. 13th regt. F. but his co. did not go to Ireland in 49|
	Consolation Fox	In post in 1654[517]|
	Stephen West?	Lt. to Capt. Thomas Ingoldsby before 12/50[518]|
	Walter Brockett??	His co. was required to transfer into the regt. in 10/56 from the 14th regt. F. to replace Lt. Col. Kelsey's co. but the move does not appear to have gone ahead.[519]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

515 Both Davies's were in the army in 9/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson A 61, piece 187. Davies is referred to in 1655: CSPD 1655-6, p. 432.
516 For Billars's transfer into the regiment, see p. 63. He had probably left the army by early 1654 when he was paid arrears of pay for 6.5 years' service: CSPD 1654, pp. 331, 580. See also Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 159-60.
517 PCC Wills 1653-56, p. 226.
518 TNA, E 121/5/7/45, entry 184.
519 CSPD 1656-57, pp. 119, 186. For Brockett's earlier career see p. 89.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Howard	Replaced Haselrig as col. in 56[520]|
Lt. Col.	John Mayer	Gov. of Berwick and Holy Island in 57[521]|
Major	Jeremiah Tolhurst	Gov. of Carlisle in 57|
Captains	John Topping	Gov. of Tynemouth Castle in 57|
	John Simpson	
	Joseph Simpson	In post in 3/55. Lt. to Capt. James Ross in 7/49[522]|
	Nicholas Loyzhier	
	John Mason[523]	
	Peter Bannister	XXX In post in 8/53 and in 7/59[524]|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

520 Haselrig was removed after Cromwell's forcible dissolution of the Long Parliament in 1653. The regiment does not seem to have had a colonel for a number of years thereafter: F. and D.
521 For the three officers in the regiment who commanded garrisons in 1657, see TNA, SP 28/114, fos. 160, 162, 217.
522 Ibid, SP 28/125, fo. 104. Captain Joseph Simpson was under Captain Topping's command at Tynemouth in 3/55: Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 262. He was supposed to take over Loyzhier's company in the garrison at Berwick in 8/55 with Loyzhier being dismissed from the army, but both were apparently captains in the regiment in 6/59. Possibly Loyzhier had been reinstated. Alternatively Lambert, who was given the task of dismissing him, may have decided not to do so. For this see below p. 118 and CSPD 1655, p. 276.
523 This John Mason had risen from ensign under Colonels Weldon and Lilburne to captain lieutenant under Haselrig. He was captain and deputy governor of Carlisle in 4/52: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 117, 133; CSPD 1651-2, p. 595: TNA, SP 28/125, fo. 344. He was in the Carlisle garrison in late 1659. For this see below p. 118. He may not, however, have been in continuous service.
524 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 44, unfol. 20/9/53.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Pride	D. 10/58. Succeeded by Lt. Col. Mosse[525]
Lt. Col.	Thomas Parsons	X in 7/57 by a highwayman. Succeeded by Major. Mosse before 10/58
Major	Richard Mosse	Still capt. in 1/55. Major before 10/58[526]
Captains	Nicholas Andrews	Capt. in 3/55 but prob. before 9/51[527]. Major by 10/58
	Richard Kemp	
	Thomas Higgs	
	Ralph Prentice	
	Thomas Pride	
	William Galhampton	Full capt. by 3/55. Formerly capt. lt. in the regt. [528]
	John Ward	Lt. to Capt. John Hawes 47. Capt. by 3/55 Prob. D. 58[529]
Capt. Lt.	Nicholas Crispe?[530]	

525 TNA, SP 28/183/118.
526 Mosse was a suspect in Alured's plot: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 11-18/1/55. There must therefore have been another field officer in post between the departure of Lieutenant Colonel Lagoe in 1653 and Mosse becoming major possibly three years later.
527 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 15/3/55. See also above p. 47.
528 Ibid, 10/3/55.
529 TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 206. This may be the Captain John Ward killed fighting in Henry Lillingston's regiment at the battle of the Dunes in 6/58: CSPD 1658-9, p. 97. His will was proved in 1660 as a captain in Pride's regiment: PCC Wills 1657-60, p. 632.
530 Captain Lieutenant Crest (sic) was in Scotland in 3/55. Nicholas Crispe had been ensign in the colonel's company in the late 1640s. He was described as Lieutenant Crispe in 1653: CSPD 1653-4, p. 341; Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 186.

10th Regiment[531]	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Biscoe	Succeeded Sir William Constable who D. in 6/55[532]
Lt. Col.	William Style	Lt. Col. of the. regt. by 5/56[533]
Major	Matthew Cadwell	Major c. 5/56. Replaced William Style[534]
Captains	Samuel Ross	
	John Groome	Capt. 5th regt. F.
	John Norris[535]	
	Phillip Eyton	Prob. capt. in Duckenfield's regt. in 51. In the 10th regt. by 3/54[536]
	Stephen White	Capt. by 1/54[537]. Prob. ex capt. 4th regt. of H.
	Samuel Wise	Ens., then lt. to Capt. Miller 5th regt. F. Capt. by 3/54[538]
Major	John Wade[539]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Additional co. Captain	Benjamin Gifford	Lt. 11th regt. H. late 40s. Lt. to Capt. Thomas Ireton at Landgate Fort in 5/52 and succeeded him as gov.[540]

531 Five companies were sent to Scotland in 3/54, but this number was quickly raised to seven. The ones that were not sent were those of Biscoe, Cadwell, Gifford and Wade: TNA, SP 28/100, fo. 42; CSPD 1654, pp. 113, 120. A list of the regiment dated 17/9/57 gives the names of the lieutenant colonel and Captains Groome, White, Eyton, Wise and Norris: TNA, SP 28/114, fo. 74. For Major Cadwell see ibid, fo. 105.
532 Biscoe's commission as colonel was issued in 12/55: F. and D. He had previously been lieutenant colonel in the 5th and then in the 10th regiment of foot.
533 As Cadwell had been promoted to major by 4/56, Style must have been lieutenant colonel by that date. Wade, who was governor of the Isle of Man, had clearly resigned as field officer: TNA, SP 28/109, fo. 35.
534 Ibid.
535 Norris's company was in garrison at Shrewsbury in 4/56 and 10/56: TNA, SP 28/109,fo. 35; ibid, SP 28/110, fo. 110; ibid, SP 28/111, fo. 29.

536 CSPD 1651, p. 472; ibid 1654, p. 120.
537 TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 17.
538 Ibid, E 121/2/11/17A, entry 151; ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 42.
539 CSPD 1655-6, p. 148.
540 Ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 83. Gifford was governor of Landgate Fort in 8/52: ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 76. His company was seemingly transferred from the 10th into the 15th regiment of foot during 1657 at which time he was succeeded at Landgate by Major Cadwell: CSPD 1656-7, pp. 186, 282; TNA, SP 28/114, fo. 82. Gifford's must have been a supernumerary company in the 10th regiment in 1656 as it already had the full complement.

11th Regiment[541]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Timothy Wilkes +	Lt. Col. in the regt. Replaced Fenwick in 8/56[542]|
Lt. Col.	Robert Read +	Major in the regt. Promoted in late 56|
Major	Thomas Hughes +	Capt. in the regt. Ditto|
Captains	William Knowles +	
	William Collinson +	
	John Miller +	
	William Newman +	
	Timothy Langley +	
	Richard Clifton +	Deputy gov. of Edinburgh Castle late 57[543]|
	Thomas Hunt +	Lt. to Capt. William Gough in the regt. in 48[544]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

541 The regiment had been reduced from eleven or twelve companies to ten in 1655: F. and D. The regimental list for this regiment and the 16th, 17th, 18th, 19th, 20th 21st, 23rd, and 25th regiments of foot, the 1st, 4th, 8th, 15th and 16th regiments of horse, and Morgan's regiment of dragoons are to be found in Davies, Quarters of the English Army, pp. 63-6, which reproduces a list in the Clarke Manuscripts in the Worcester College Library.
542 Fenwick died in 3/57: Oxford Dictionary of National Biography, vol. 19, p. 325.
543 TNA, SP 28/114, fo. 320.
544 Hunt was still a lieutenant in the regiment in 2/51: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 10-17/2/1651.

12th Regiment B[545]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Hewson	
Lt. Col.	William Arnop[546]	
Major	John Duckenfield?[547]	
Captains	Samuel Bonnell	Ex co. commander in Venables's regt. in Ireland| Returned to Ireland as a major in late 59[548]|
	Robert Smith	Transfer from 26th regt. F. in 11/56. A co. from Ireland[549]|
	Edward Turner[550]	Ex 12th regt. F. in Ireland|
	William Duckenfield?	Ex Venables's regt. in Ireland|
	John Hardier	As Robert Smith|
	Richard Goodwin?	Prob. a former officer who had served in Ireland. If so, he was back there as a major by early 1660|
Capt. Lt.	Edward Hoare[551]	
Probables[552] Captain	XXX Horsington	
Capt. Lt.	XXX Quelch	

545 Orders of the Council of State issued in 10 and 11/56 decreed that the companies of Hewson's regiment, which had been shipped over from Ireland in 1655, should be combined with four other companies from Ireland, initially allotted to Colonel Gibbon's regiment, to form a second regiment for Colonel Hewson stationed in England: CSPD 1656-7, pp. 128, 133, 139, 176, 245.
546 TNA, SP 28/114, fo. 92. This reference shows Arnop as the company commander in Hewson's English regiment in 9/57. For his rank in the Irish regiment see below p. 201.

547 The officers with question marks against their names were captains in the regiment in 1659. All except possibly Goodwin had served in Ireland as company commanders.
548 See below p. 249.
549 Thurloe, *State Papers* v, p. 716. For Smith and Hardier in 7/59 see TNA, SP 28/118, fos. 145, 186.
550 An Edward Turner had served as lieutenant to Lieutenant Colonel Grime in the 10th regiment of foot: ibid, E 121/3/5/25, entry 63.
551 Although a full captain in the regiment in Ireland by 1650, Hoare was described as captain lieutenant in 1655 at the court martial of one of his soldiers in England: Prendergast, *Ireland under the Commonwealth*, p. 143. Possibly he had two captaincies.
552 These two names, together with those of Arnop, Hoare, Duckenfield and Bonnell of Venables's regiment, appear in a list of commanders belonging to Hewson's English regiment in c. 1658 who had come out of Ireland in 1654: ibid, SP 28/118, fo. 168.

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Lambert	Removed in 7/57 for opposition to the second Protectorate constitution.[553] Succeeded by Charles Fleetwood|
Lt. Col.	John Cobbett	D. 1/57| Succeeded by Major Elton[554]|
Major	Richard Elton	Lt. Col. by 3/58 but prob. from early 57[555]|
Captains	John Greenleaf	Major of the regt. by 7/57[556]|
	John Lambert[557]	
	Christopher Skipper	In post in 5/57[558]|
	Edward Bradshaw	Lt. to Capt. Pownall[559]|
	Thomas Fryer	
	Walter Brockett	In post in 10/55[560]| Left regt. by 10/58. Transferred to the 24th regt. F.|
	Thomas Axtell	XXX. In post in 10/55|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

553 See p. 29.
554 Elton, Axtell, Bradshaw, Skipper, Fryer and Brockett, who commanded companies in the garrisons of Yarmouth and Hull, were named in a warrant issued in 10/56. The commanders of the four companies quartered in and around London were not named, but they must have included Lambert, Cobbett and Greenleaf: TNA, SP 28/111, fo. 55.
555 Ibid, SP 28/115, fo. 138.
556 F. and D.
557 Lambert was in post in 1651 and 1659 but possibly not continuously in between. He was active as a ship's captain in the middle sixteen-fifties: CSPD 1653-4 pp. 565, 573, 575; ibid 1655-6, pp. 427, 434, 480.
558 For Skipper, Fryer and Axtell, see CSPD 1656-7, p. 374.
559 TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 278.
560 Ibid, SP 28/115, fo. 138. In the late 1640s Brockett had been a captain in Colonel Overton's regiment, but not in the 11th regiment of foot: ibid, E 121/2/9/3, unnumbered. See also p. 125 above.

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Salmon	
Lt. Col.	Devis Pepper[561]	
Major	William Walters	Major 7/55, 57 and 59, but not in 12/58[562]|
Captains	Richard Wisdom	
	Richard Webbe	In post in 9/55|
	Thomas Matthews	In post in 1/53|
	Thomas Cooke	In post in 3/55 and 9/59[563]|
	Henry Watson +	
	John? Grimsditch	XXX 1/53, 4/55[564]|
	Thomas Ward	In post in 9/56. Ens. to Capt. Wisdom in this regt. before 6/50 and capt. lt. 7/53[565]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	Succeeded Thomas Ward|

561 Pepper and six of the seven captains below him were in the regiment in 1/53: ibid, SP 28/90, fo. 121.
562 Ibid, SP 28/107, fo. 263; ibid, SP 28/114, fo. 82. This was probably a mistake as he was major in 4/58: ibid, SP 28/115, fo. 118.
563 Ibid, SP 28/105, fo. 364. Cooke was recommissioned in 6/59 but may not have been in continuous service throughout the sixteen-

fifties.
564 A Captain John Grimsditch was governor of Dumfries in 4/55: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 4/4/55.
565 Ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 28; BL, Thomason Tracts, The Publick Intelligencer, 15-22/9/56.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fairfax	
Lt. Col.	John Mason +	
Major	Daniel Davison +	XXX Possibly capt. 3rd regt. F. In post in 9/52[566]|
Captains	Thomas Sutton +	In post in 1/53[567]|
	Samuel Poole +	Ditto|
	William Wilkinson +	Ditto|
	John Rogers +	Ditto|
	Rene Bailly +	Ditto|
	John Pym +	Ditto|
	John Freeman +	XXX In post 11/56 and 4/58| Left regt. c. 10/58[568]|
Capt. Lt.	Francis Hartley +	XXX In post in 53[569]. Succeeded Capt. Freeman c. 10/58[570]|

566 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 5; Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
567 The six captains in post in 1/53 are listed in TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 413.
568 Davies, *Quarters of the English Army*, p. 65; Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, p. 162; Worc. College, Clarke Mss, unbound papers, box 2; ibid, Clarke Ms 49, unfol. 10/58.
569 He was granted leave in 5/53: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 44, unfol.
570 Hartley was captain lieutenant until late 1658: ibid, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Read[571]	
Lt. Col.	Peter Pike +	Left regt. 57[572]|
Major	John Clobury +	
Captains	Hugh Gosnell +	
	James Mutlow +	
	George Everard +	
	Miles Meredith +	
	Sylam Callant +	
	John Dirdo[573]	Lt. to Capt. Alsop in the 9th regt. F.|
	Thomas Hunt +	
Capt. Lt.	John Street	Gone by 9/58|

571 The names of the company commanders in post in 11/56 are given in Davies, Quarters of the English Army, pp. 65-6.
572 If he was Peter Pike of Tiverton, Devon esquire, his will was proved early in 1657: PCC Wills 1657-60. Pike's rank in the army would have probably permitted him to call himself esquire even though not a full colonel.
573 Dirdo was commissioned as lieutenant in 5/49. He was a full captain by 6/53: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 12; ibid, Clarke Ms 45, unfol.

18th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Daniel	
Lt. Col.	John Pearson +	Succeeded William Brayne c. 56|
Major	Richard Heath +	Promoted from capt. after 8/53[574]|
Captains	Joseph Witter +	
	Francis Aldersey +	

	Hugh Birtles +	
	Nicholas Kelke +	
	Richard Holford +	Gone by 11/58[575]|
	Roland Gascoyne +	
	XXX Reynolds/Rennards +	
Capt. Lt.	XXX Davenport	In post in 5/55 and 57[576]|

574 Ibid, Clarke Ms 44, unfol. 16/8/53.
575 Ibid, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.
576 Ibid, Clarke Ms 45, unfol.; Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate*, pp. 352, 363. Most of the Cheshire Davenports were royalists, but an Ensign Thomas Davenport served under Brereton in 1645: BL, Harleian Ms 2137, fo. 200.

19th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Fitch +	
Lt. Col.	Miles Mann +	Succeeded Robert Blount who D. 10/56[577]|
Major	John Hills +	Succeeded Mann as major|
Captains	Henry Cleare senior+	
	Edward Ersbury +	
	Anthony Langrish +	
	Anthony Wilkes +	Gov. of Ruthven Castle late 57[578]|
	Richard Lowry +	
	George Bateman +	Gov. of Sinclair Castle late 57|
	Abraham Spooner +	Gov. of Stornaway Castle late 57|
Capt. Lt.	William Browne?	In post in 9/59|

577 CSPD 1656-7, p. 213. Mann was in post by 9/56: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
578 For the three governorships see TNA, SP 28/114, fos. 323-5.

20th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	George Monck	
Lt. Col.	William Gough +	
Major	Abraham Holmes +	
Captains	Ethelbert Morgan +	
	Francis Nicholls +	
	Benjamin Groome +	
	George Parker +	
	Roger Hatchman +	
	George Walton +	
	Richard Hughes +	Capt. Lt. 1/54. Succeeded Capt. Gardiner after 5/54| Lt. Col. to Sir Brice Cochrane's regt. F. in Flanders 57. X there in 58[579]|
Capt. Lt.	William Downes?	Prob. capt. lt. in this regt. Later full capt.[580]|

579 Chequers Ms 782, unfol.; Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate,* pp. 100, 107; F. and D.
580 Downes was at Dundee in 10/51 as a lieutenant and at Dalkeith, the army headquarters, in 6/55 as captain lieutenant: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.; Chequers Ms 782, unfol. He seems to have been a full captain by 4/58 but not in 11/57. Logic would suggest that he succeeded Captain Hughes, but Hatchman took over Hughes's company and Downes Hatchman's: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fos. 18, 55.

21st Regiment[581]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Talbot	Succeeded Col. Alured in 6/55[582]|
Lt. Col.	Henry Pownall +	Succeeded Talbot as lt. col. by 8/55[583]|
Major	John Hubblethorne +	Ex capt. 14th regt. F.[584] Succeeded Pownall as major after 4/55|
Captains	John Hargreave +	
	Joseph Poole +	
	John Clarke +	Lt. to Capt. Henry Beke in this regt. in 7/55[585]|
	James Emerson[586] +	In post in 4/54|
	Edmund Lister +	In post in 1/54|
	Henry Beke	4/54, 9/55|
Major	John Thompson +	Succeeded John Sykes before 11/56.| Succeeded in his turn by Capt. Huitson before 7/58[587]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

581 Clarke's list of the regiments quartered in Scotland in 1656 suggests that Talbot's only had nine companies: Davies, Quarters of the English Army, p. 66. However, there were seven captains in the regiment in 7/58 and 12/58: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55. The missing company commander in 1656 was Captain Beke who was in the regiment in 4/54 and died in 12/56: TNA, SP28/100, fo. 336; Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers*, p. 133.
582 F. and D.
583 TNA, SP 28/107, fo. 29.
584 Hubblethorne transferred as a captain. He was still a captain in 4/55, but was presumably promoted when Pownall became lieutenant colonel. A document dated 7/53 implies that he was already senior captain in the regiment: Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth*, p. 179; TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 370.
585 Ibid, SP 28/105, fo. 379.
586 Emerson and Pownall commanded companies on the Isle of Mull during the Protectorate: F. and D.
587 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fos. 18, 55; ibid, Clarke Ms 48, unfol.; Chequers Ms 782, unfol. 7/58.

22nd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	
Lt. Col.	Waldine Lagoe	Succeeded Charles Worsley c. 7/56|
Major	Jeffrey Ellatson	Succeeded Wiggan who was major in 12/53[588]|
Captains	Oliver Edge[589]	
	Nicholas Whitby[590]	
	John Chamberlain	In the regt. in 9/57[591]. Later major of 26th regt. F.|
	Richard Holt?	Lt. to Major Wiggan[592]|
	Jeffrey Watson?	XXX. Prob. in post in 8/56[593]|
	XXX	
	XXX Alson[594]	XXX
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Scott	XXX. In post in 4/53. Possibly formerly capt.in Lytcott's regt. H. disbanded in 10/51[595]|

588 Ellatson was major in 11/56 and 3/57: CSPD 1656/7, pp. 165, 310.
589 Edge, Scott and Watson were in the regiment in 7/56: ibid 1656-7, pp. 56-7.
590 Whitby was recommissioned in the regiment in 5/59 but may not have been in continuous service throughout the sixteen-fifties.
591 TNA, W0 55/463, unfol. 3/9/57.
592 Ibid, SP 28/99, fo. 156. Holt was certainly a captain in the regiment in 1659.
593 See above p. 108. A Captain Matson (Watson?) was in the regiment during the Scottish campaign of 1650-1: ibid, SP 28/101, fo. 276.
594 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 31/3/55.
595 Captain Scott helped Lieutenant Colonel Worsley expel the MPs from the Palace of Westminster in 4/53 on Cromwell's orders: Clarke Papers iii, p. 1. A will proved in 1655 shows that he commanded Cromwell's own company: PCC Wills 1653-56, p. 276.

23rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Cooper	
Lt. Col.	Roger Sawrey +[596]	
Major	Peter Crispe +	
Captains	John Gillott +	
	Yaxley Robson +	
	Edward Lunn +	
	Col. Leonard Lytcott +	In post in 4/54. Gov. of Linlithgow 8/55[597]
	Edward Harman +	
	Thomas Spencer +	
	John Parker +	
Capt. Lt.	Abraham Shockley	In post by 4/57[598]

596 F. and D. imply that Sawrey succeeded Cooper when the latter went to Ireland in 12/55. For this see below p. 231. However William Clarke's expenditure accounts show that Cooper's regiment was so described in 7/56 and in 10/57 with Sawrey still ranked as lieutenant colonel as late as 1/59 : Chequers Ms, 782, unfol. passim. It was not until 6/59 that he became colonel of the 23rd regiment of foot.

597 TNA, SP 28/100, fo. 311; ibid, SP 28/107, fo. 230; ibid, SP28/108, fo. 10.

598 Chequers Ms 782, unfol., 4/57; HMC, Leybourne-Popham Mss, p. 112. Shockley had been commissioned as ensign to a Major Taylor in 12/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 17, unfol.

24th Regiment[599]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Ralph Cobbett	
Lt. Col.	Arthur Young	
Major	Jeremiah Campfield	
Captains	Hugh Dodgin	
	Matthew Marvell	
	Richard Hatt	
	William Broadhurst	
	Roger Jones	
	Joshua Blackwell	
	Humphrey Mason	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

599 The names of the ten company commanders in 9/56 are given in F. and D. Their source is in the Clarke Manuscripts at Worcester College, Oxford, but I have not been able to locate it.

25th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Mitchell	Lt. Col. 15th regt. F. Commissioned to succeed Thomas Morgan in 3/55. Morgan had been in charge of the regt. since Overton's dismissal in 12/54[600]
Lt. Col.	John Cotterell +	
Major	Michael Richardson +	
Captains	John? Hutton +[601]	
	Robert Scrope +	
	Thomas Quick +	
	Thomas Southern +	In post in 1/52[602]
	James Dennis +	In post in 5/53[603]

	Edward Freer +	In post in 8/54[604]|
	John Waller +	Lt. in 7/54. Capt. by 6/55[605]|
Capt. Lt.	Edward Williamson[606]	XXX
Possible Captain	XXX Walters	In post in 3/55[607]|

600 F. and D.; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 29/3-5/4/55.
601 Davies has this captain's first name as Thomas, but does not provide a reference. My hunch is that his first name was John, as a John Hutton commanded a company in the regiment when it was first commissioned.
602 Southern's company, one of four from the Hull garrison, had been originally intended for the 21st regiment of foot: CSPD 1651-2, p. 122. This seems most unlikely as the 21st regiment was ten companies strong well before 1/52. It may therefore have been a clerical error.
603 James Dennis may have served as an adjutant general of foot in Scotland in the early 1650s, but with the rank of captain lieutenant: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 17/9/51; Chequers Ms 782, unfol. 5/53. He was apparently a captain in the 25th regiment in 1653: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol. late 5/53; F. and D.
604 TNA, SP 28/102, fo. 359.
605 Lieutenant Waller and Captain Dennis evaded capture at Falkirk in 11/53 when Captains Townshend and Scrope were taken prisoner: Firth, *Scotland and the Commonwealth*, p. 270; Chequers Ms 782, unfol. Waller was a captain in the regiment by 9/55: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol. His first name is given in TNA, SP 28/108, fo. 34.
606 Davies, Quarters of the English Army, p. 66.
607 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. This was possibly John Waller, captain in the regiment later in the year.

Dragoons

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Morgan	
Major	John Farmer +	Capt. in the regt. Succeeded John Bramston[608]|
Captains	George Robinson +	
	William Hellin +	Previously lt. to Major Bramston in the regt.[609]|
Capt. Lt.	Lawrence Cotton	XXX Succeeded Francis Kelly in 1ate 53.| D. c. 10/58[610]|

608 Bramston was cashiered in 2/55 for alleged involvement in Overton's plot but was exonerated by Lord Protector Cromwell and commissioned as lieutenant colonel of Colonel Brayne's regiment sent to Jamaica in 1656. He was drowned off Ireland on the way to the Caribbean: F. and D; Clarke Papers iii, p. 78.
609 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 28/2-7/3/54.
610 TNA, SP 28/116, fo. 356; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 43, unfol. 6/8/53 ; ibid, Clarke Mss, unbound papers, box 2, unfol.

Cavalry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	
Major	William Packer +	Removed 2/58[611]| Reinstated as col. of the regt. in 6/59|
Captains	John Gladman +	Ditto| Reinstated as major of the regt. in 6/59|
	William Barrington +	Ditto| Reinstated as capt. in 6/59|
	Anthony Spinage +	Ditto|
	William Malin +	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	John Hunter	Ditto| Reinstated as full capt. in 6/59|

611 All six of the troop commanders were dismissed in 2/58 for opposition to the increasingly monarchical nature of the Protectorate. Their replacements were Major William Boteler of the 16th regiment of horse; Captain Merest, one of the adjutant generals of horse, who had briefly served as captain in the 1st regiment of horse in 1650-51; Thomas Izod of the 4th regiment of horse (who quickly moved elsewhere); William Disher, who had been cashiered from the army for financial malpractice in 1651; and John Barker, who had served in the 3rd regiment of horse.

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Winthrop	
Major	Joseph Strange	Previously capt. of the attached troop| Left regt. after 11/57. D. soon afterwards. Succeeded by Capt. Hart of 5th regt. H.[612]|
Captains	William Gough	Lt. to Capt. John Barker[613]|
	Major Christopher Mercer	Capt. independent troop Drs. 9/51. In post in this regt. by 3/55[614]|
	Edmund Tapp	In post 9/55-4/56[615]|
	Kympton Hilliard	Capt. Morgan's regt. Dr. Succeeded Capt. Spencer after 7/56|
Capt. Lt.	Benjamin Oakshott?	QM in the regt. in the late 40s[616]|

612 TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 365. His will was proved in 1658: PCC 1657-60, p. 578.
613 TNA, SP 28/60, fo. 690.
614 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 17/4/55. For the troop commanders in 4/56, see F. and D. For Mercer's earlier career see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, passim.
615 TNA, SP 28/108, fo. 23. Tapp was probably the Edmund Tapp of London whose will was proved in 1657: Abstract of PCC Wills.
616 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 140. See below p. 111 for his rank in 1658.

4th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	
Major	Hezekiah Haynes +	
Captains	Griffith Lloyd +	
	Joseph Blissett +	In post in late 58[617]|
	Thomas Else +	
	Thomas Izod +	Transfer to 1st regt. H. c. 2/58|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

617 Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.

5th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Phillip Twistleton	
Major	Owen Cambridge	
Captains	Henry Beale	
	Theophilus Hart	Major 3rd regt. H. by 10/58 at the latest, but prob. a year or so earlier. Succeeded by Capt. Whalley and then by Major Beke[618]|
	Thomas Deane	Lt. to Major Cambridge[619]|
	Richard Ashby	Capt. c. 56. Prob. succeeded Capt. Byfield[620]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

618 See below p. 111; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55. I have not been able to identify this Captain Whalley but his first name may be Richard or Henry. They were the sons of Colonel Edward Whalley, but their army service seems to have been entirely in Ireland. For this see below pp. 245-6.
619 TNA, E 121/5/7 unnumbered, fo. 203.
620 Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 27, fo. 753 has Byfield as captain in 1655.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Disbrowe	
Major	John Blackmore	
Captains	John Jenkins	

	Edward Scotten	
	Joseph Wallington	
	John Fox	Cor. to Oliver Cromwell's troop in the regt. in 5/49[621]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

621 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 557 (10); CSPD 1656/7, p. 35. Fox may well have served in the regiment between 1649 and 1654 as captain lieutenant given that he had been Cromwell's cornet.

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Ingoldsby	
Major	Thomas Babbington	Replaced Richard Beke after 5/56 when Beke resumed command of the Lifeguard|
Captains	John Merriman[622]	
	George Elsmore	
	Major Charles Duckett	Former capt. lt.[623]|
	Richard Holewell?[624]	XXX
Capt. Lt.	Edward Parry	XXX Succeeded Duckett|

622 TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 16. His troop was mustered on 3/1/59. It is therefore most unlikely that he left the regiment and then returned.
623 Duckett had been major in the 6th regiment of foot, at that time commanded by Richard Ingoldsby, but he resigned or was removed during the First Army Coup of 6/47. For this see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 67. He returned to the army as captain of an independent troop of dragoons during the war with Scotland, but that would have been disbanded in 9/51 or soon afterwards. The rank of major appears against his name then and in 1/54 at which time the impression is given that he was commanding a troop of cavalry: TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 232; Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate,* p. 9.
624 See below p. 112.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck +	Succeeded Col. Tomlinson before 31/3/55[625]|
Major	Ralph Knight +	
Captains	Thomas Johnson +	
	Thomas Symnell +	In post c. 1/54. Succeeded Capt. Margery|
	Roger Legge +	In post in 7/54[626]. Succeeded Capt. Beamont|
	Jeremiah Smith +	Succeeded Capt. Glyn c. 8/55|
Capt. Lt.	John Coventry[627]	XXX

625 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 99.
626 Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate*, p. 402. Legge was still a lieutenant in 1652: CSPD 1651-2, p. 307. He commanded Beamont's former troop but need not necessarily have been his immediate successor.
627 Davies, Quarters of the English Army, p. 63.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Whalley	
Major	Robert Swallow	
Captains	Joseph Sabberton	
	Daniel Dale	
	Thomas Chamberlain	Lt. to Capt. Grove. Succeeded Capt. Chillenden by 3/54[628]|
	John Wright	Capt. Lt. in the regt. c.1650. He took over what had been Capt. Evanson's troop but after 9/3/55[629]|
Capt. Lt.	Nathaniel Holt?	Cor. to Capt. Savage[630]|

628 TNA, SP 28/99, fo. 520.
629 Wright is described as captain lieutenant in a warrant issued on that date: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 46, unfol.
630 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 533 (31).

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Lambert	Removed in 7/57[631]|
Major	William Goodrick	
Captains	Adam Baynes	Gone in 57. Succeeded by his lt. W. Rokeby[632]|
	John Pockley	
	John Hatfield	Junior commissioned officer in the N. Brigade 12/49[633]|
	John Levens	Succeeded Capt. Stoddard|
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Spilman**	Still in post in 4/55[634]|

631 See above p. 29.
632 F. and D.
633 YML, Hailstone Ms BB 53, unfol.
634 F. and D.

13th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Lilburne	
Major	George Smithson	
Captains	Thomas Lilburne	
	William Bradford	Left c. 56. Prob. succeeded by Capt. William Peverell and then by Capt. Willoughby by 11/57[635]|
	George Watkinson	Cashiered 10/57. Succeeded by Francis Wilkinson[636]|
	Thomas Strangeways	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

635 TNA, SP 28/111, fo. 150; ibid, SP 28/114, fo. 86; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 18. Bradford was a Quaker convert who left the regiment and died soon afterwards. F. and D.
636 Like Bradford Watkinson's offence had been his conversion: Clarke Papers iii, p. 122.

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Goffe	Succeeded by Richard Cromwell in 12/57[637]|
Major	Richard Creed	
Captains	**George Palmer**	Succeeded after 3/55 by James Wright,who was lt. to John Wright, capt. in the regt. in the late 1640s. Wright was replaced by Capt. Prime by 11/58[638]|
	Robert Hope	
	Oliver Pretty	Lt. to Capt. Creed c. 48. Succeeded Capt. Prime who had resigned by mid-55[639]|
	Robert Catchett	Capt. Lt. Sir John Gell's regt. H. Derbyshire[640]| Prob. succeeded by Capt. Lt. Coulson|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Coulson	Cor. to Major Saunders before 8/48[641]|

637 Ibid iii, p. 132.
638 See p. 56 above for Palmer's length of service. For his successors see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.
639 TNA, E 121/5/1/22, entries 32-5; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 47; Thurloe, *State Papers* iv, p. 294.
640 Bodleian Library, Rawlinson A Ms 27, fo. 753 gives the four captains in post in mid-1655 as Palmer, Hope, Catchett and Pretty. For Catchett's earlier posting, see TNA, E 121/4/6/8B, entry 5.
641 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 47. Coulson was described as a captain in 12/53 in Chequers Ms 782, unfol., but he can only have been the regiment's captain lieutenant.

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Francis Hacker	
Major	John Grove +	
Captains	Thomas Empson +	

	William Hubbard +	Former capt. lt. in the regt.|
	Clement Needham +	Succeeded Capt. Scarfe. In post by 3/52[642]|
	Gabriel Wayne +	Succeeded Capt. Wetwang between 10/52 and 5/54. Lt. to Capt. Greenwood's troop in 6/51[643]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

642 TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 111; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 141.
643 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 59; ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 170; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 19-26/6/54.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	James Berry	
Major	William Boteler +	
Captains	Robert Hutton +	
	Unton Croke +	
	John Robinson +	
	John Hawkridge +	Lt. to Capt. Merriman 7th regt. H. late 40s. Prob. capt. in Lytcott's regt. H. 51. Capt. in this regt. after 5/1/52. Must have succeeded Capt. Leigh [644]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

644 TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 278; ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 172. Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 143. A Captain Hawkridge appears in William Clarke's accounts as early as 9/51 and he was a cavalryman but he need not necessarily have held a commission in this regiment at that time: Chequers Ms 782, unfol. A warrant claiming pay arrears states that he succeeded Captain Fenwick: TNA, SP 28/100, fo. 593.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Tobias Bridge[645]	
Major	John Daborne[646]	
Captains	Richard Combes	In post in 3/55[647]|
	Matthew Fann	In post in 8/53[648]. Possibly succeeded by Thomas Crowther|
	Henry Cleare junior	Cor. in the 11th regt. H. 11/48.[649] Succeeded Capt. Castle|
	Henry Crease	Capt. Lt. in the regt.[650]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

645 Firth and Davies are silent on who succeeded John Okey, but Tobias Bridge was colonel of the regiment by 10/54: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 87.
646 Daborne was major of the regiment by 11/56: TNA SP 28/111, fo. 367.
647 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 8/3/55.
648 Ibid, Clarke Ms 44, unfol. 29/8/53.
649 BL., Thomason Tracts, E 468 (18).
650 Crease took over Okey's troop on his dismissal from the army in 10/54: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 81.

Lifeguard	Name	Military career
Captain	Major Richard Beke	In post in 11/54 and in late 57[651]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

651 TNA, SP 28/103, fo. 72; ibid, SP 28/114, fo. 152.

Infantry Regiment being raised in late 1656

26th Regiment[652]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Gibbon	Col. NMA 50-51. Gov. of Jersey 56[653]|

652 This regiment was commissioned in 9/56, but some companies from Ireland ordered to be included in it were diverted into Colonel Hewson's new regiment: CSPD 1656-7, pp. 114, 128-9, 133, 139, 176, 245. It was probably not ready for active service until early 1657.
653 Ibid, 1656-7, p. 114. None of the officers in the regiment in the late sixteen-fifties had served under Gibbon in Jersey.

Part III

The Regimental Listings: England and Scotland 1658-1660

Company and Troop Commanders: October 1658

Infantry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Goffe	Replaced by Edmund Ludlow in 5/59|
Lt. Col.	Clement Keene	Succeeded Lt. Col. White. In post by 10/58 at the latest[1]| Transferred to 18th regt. F. as lt. col. in 7/59. Succeeded by Major Farley|
Major	William Farley	Former capt. in the regt. Promoted by 10/58[2]|
Captains	James Priest	
	XXX Straghan	Not recommissioned in the regt. in 5/59|
	Robert Luson	
	Robert King	
	John Drake	Not recommissioned in the regt. in 5/59[3]|
	Thomas Wright??[4]	Lt. to Capt. Hadfield c. 1650[5]|
	Thomas White?[6]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

1 A list of the field officers of regiments quartered in England is to be found in TNA, SP 18/183/117. It is undated but with Oliver Cromwell dead and Thomas Pride still alive it must have been compiled between 4/9/58 and 23/10/58. The date 10/58 has therefore been used to indicate officers whose names appear in the list.
2 Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 61.
3 Drake seems to have transferred in or before the summer of 1659 to the 21st regiment of foot. See below p. 123.
4 When Farley was drowned, so were a number of junior officers belonging to four companies in the 1st regiment of foot, those of the colonel, Farley, and Captains Luson and King: CSPD 1658-9, p. 53. The final officer named was John Collingwood, ensign to Captain Wright. There does not appear to have been a Captain Wright in any of the Flanders regiments at the time, but a Thomas Wright had been ensign to Captain Baldwin in the regiment in 1647: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 128. Thomas Wright's signature appears on the address welcoming Protector Richard between those of Matthew Cadwell and William Burrell: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
5 TNA, E 121/2/9/46, entry 127.
6 See above p. 60.

2nd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Ashfield	
Lt. Col.	William Symonds	
Major	Henry Dorney	
Captains	Robert Baynes[7]	
	Thomas Heyrick	
	William Fitch	
	XXX Jones	
	William Hooper	
	William Davies	Gov. of Dumbarton 5/59[8]|

	John Rudlee	Former capt. lt. Full capt. in 5/55[9]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX Weare[10]	XXX

7 The captains' names are as given in the list of troop and company commanders in regiments stationed in Scotland in November 1658: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fos. 19, 55.
8 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 1.
9 Firth, *Scotland and the Protectorate,* p. 254.
10 Described as captain in this regiment in 3/59, Weare was almost certainly the captain lieutenant: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.

5th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Barkstead	Removed in 5/59. Capt. Militia H. Middlesex 8/59[11]|
Lt. Col.	No officer of that rank	
Major	John Miller	
Captains	Nicholas Cordy[12]	
	Henry Sharpe	
	Jervis Jeffries[13]	Not recommissioned in the regt. in 6/59. Succeeded by William Foster[14]|
	William Foster[15]	Former capt. lt.|
Capt. Lt.	William Parker	Succeeded William Foster after 2/57. Parker was lt. to Capt. Cordy in the 5th regt. F. in 12/56[16]|
Possible Captain	John Jennings	XXX

11 CJ vii, p. 773.
12 Cordy, Jennings, Sharpe and Foster were in the Tower regiment in early 9/59: F. and D.
13 Jeffries served as a cornet in the 11th regiment of horse in early 1649: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 145.
14 Jeffries was thought unworthy of his captaincy – 'a drunken fellow': CSPD 1658-9, p. 384. He became lieutenant to Captain Gibbon in the 26th regiment of foot in 7/59: CJ vii, p. 730.
15 Both Foster and Parker signed the address to Protector Richard in 9/59: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
16 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 963 (7); Thurloe, *State Papers* v, p. 691.

6th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Mill	Discharged 5/59| Reinstated 1/60|
Lt. Col.	Francis Allen	
Major	John Grime	
Captains	John Hunt	
	John Davies	
	Abraham Davies	
	Consolation Fox	
	Stephen West?[17]	
	John Brockhurst?[18]	
	John Shrimpton[19]	Former capt. in the regt. cashiered in 49 for alleged Leveller sympathies[20]|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Barker/Baker?[21]	

17 Stephen West was an officer in the army in 9/58 but not necessarily a company commander: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
18 Brockhurst was commissioned in 6/59, but unlike West he did not sign the 9/58 document.
19 John Shrimpton signed the letter congratulating Richard Cromwell on becoming Lord Protector. He was in the regiment in 1651 and 1659: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
20 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 100.
21 Barker had been lieutenant to Captain Messervy in the regiment in the late 1640s: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p 88, 100. I have no record of his service in the 1650s prior to the summer of 1659 when he was commissioned as captain lieutenant, but given the low turnover of junior officers in the regiment it is possible that he was already in post before the fall of the Protectorate. However, he did not sign the letter from the army congratulating Richard Cromwell on becoming Lord Protector: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson A 61, piece 187.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Howard	Not recommissioned in 7/59. Lodged in the Tower of London. Replaced by Sir Arthur Haselrig| Reappointed to a colonelcy in 2/60[22]|
Lt. Col.	John Mayer *[23]	
Major	Jeremiah Tolhurst *	Demoted to capt. in 7/59|
Captains	John Topping *	Replaced Tolhurst as major in 59|
	John Mason[24]	Prob. in post from 1652[25]|
	Joseph Simpson	
	Nicholas Loyzhier[26]	
	Peter Bannister	Prob. in post from 1653[27]|
	Timothy Levin ?	Ens. in the col's co. 7/49[28]|
	William Elmes?	Lt. to Capt. Ethelbert Morgan 49[29]|
Capt. Lt.	Edward Toll	Ens. in Capt. Robert Hutton's co. 7/49[30]| Gone by 1/60|

22 CSPD 1659-60, p. 253.
23 The officers' names are those given in the list approved by the restored Commonwealth in the summer of 1659. F. and D. state that the only important change in mid-1659 was Topping and Tolhurst changing places, and I have found nothing to invalidate their claim.
24 Mason, Bannister, Levin and Elmes were commissioned in 7/59 and may have been post for much of the sixteen-fifties. As with other regiments quartered in England which never served in Scotland there is no list of their company commanders prior to the fall of the Protectorate.
25 See below p. 63.
26 Loyzhier may have been removed from the regiment in the mid-1650s and reinstated in 6/59.
27 See above p. 118.
28 TNA, SP 28/125, fo. 344.
29 Ibid, SP 28/133/4, fos. 59-60.
30 Ibid, SP 28/125, fo. 26.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Pride	D. late 10/58|
Lt. Col.	Richard Mosse *	In post in 10/58. Col. in succession to Pride[31]|
Major	Nicholas Andrews *	Ditto Lt. Col. 59|
Captains	Richard Kemp	
	Thomas Higgs	
	Ralph Prentice	
	Thomas Pride	Not recommissioned in 7/59[32]|
	William Galhampton *	
	Henry Crispe? [33]	XXX
	William Pride?	XXX
Capt. Lt.	Henry Giles?	XXX

31 Mosse may not have been commissioned as colonel straight after Pride's death. F. and D. leave it open to question. It should be noted that Ludlow referred to him as lieutenant colonel in 4/59: *Memoirs* ii, p. 61.
32 CSPD 1658-9, p. 378.
33 Crispe, William Pride and Henry Giles were in the regiment in 7/59: CJ vii, pp. 700-01.

10th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Biscoe *	
Lt. Col.	William Style *	
Major	Matthew Cadwell *	Gov. of Landgate Fort[34]|

Captains	John Groome	
	John Norris	In post in 3/59[35]| Not recommissioned in 6/59|
	Phillip Eyton	Ditto| Ditto[36]|
	Stephen White	
	Samuel Wise	
Major	John Wade[37]	
	Samuel Ross	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

34 TNA, SP 28/117, fo. 98.
35 Ibid, SP 28/117, fo. 98.
36 Eyton was informed against by his colonel in 6/59. He protested but the appeal failed and his commission was not renewed. He was restored to his captaincy by General Monck in 1660: CSPD 1658-9, p. 379; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter F. The Clarke manuscript volume, which I will describe as Monck's commissions' book, is the principal source for changes in company and troop commanders after Parliament appointed him as captain general on 25/2/60. This groups regiments in accordance with the first letter of their respective colonels' surnames. Thus the general's clerk placed the 10th regiment of foot under the letter F as the colonel at the time of Eyton's reappointment was George Fleetwood, who had replaced John Biscoe in 12/59.
37 The last two companies were in garrison on the Isle of Man.

11th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Timothy Wilkes	
Lt. Col.	Robert Read	
Major	Thomas Hughes	
Captains	William Knowles	
	William Collinson	
	John Miller	
	William Newman	
	Timothy Langley	
	Richard Clifton	
	Thomas Hunt	
Capt. Lt.	Anthony Belcham	Lt. to Capt. Robert Read in this regt. in late 40s|

12th Regiment B	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Hewson[38]	
Lt. Col.	John Duckenfield	
Major	Edward Hoare *	
Captains	Samuel Bonnell	
	Robert Smith	
	Edward Turner	
	William Duckenfield	
	John Hardier	
	Richard Goodwin	
	Robert Brown	XXX. Possibly commanding Capt. Horsington's co.|
Capt. Lt.	XXX Quelch	XXX

38 F. and D. claim that very little change if any was made to the company commanders in this regiment after the end of the Protectorate. I have therefore largely copied the list approved by Parliament in 6/59: CJ vii, pp. 682, 684. However, one of the companies had been commanded by a Captain Horsington, whilst an officer named Quelch was the captain lieutenant in c. 1658. For this see above p. 88.

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	
Lt. Col.	Richard Elton	In post in 10/58[39]|
Major	John Greenleaf	Ditto|
Captains	**John Lambert**[40]	
	Christopher Skipper	
	Edward Bradshaw	
	Thomas Fryer	
	Walter Brockett	In post in 10/58[41]| Transferred to 24th regt. F. by 6/59|
	Thomas Axtell	
	William Elward?[42]	In post in 6/59|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

39 CSPD 1657-8, p. 569; TNA, SP 28/183/118.
40 See above p. 88.
41 Ibid, SP 28/115, fo. 138; ibid, SP 28/116, fo. 423. See below p. 120 for his successor.
42 Elward signed the address to Protector Richard in 9/58 but may not have yet been a captain: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms 61, piece 187.

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Salmon	
Lt. Col.	Devis Pepper	
Major	John Pitman	Officer in Dorset in early 50s and major in 12/58[43]|Not recommissioned as major in 6/59 but seemingly in charge of a co. in the regt. 3 months later[44]|
Captains	William Walters	Major of the regt. in 57 and 59|
	Richard Wisdom	
	Richard Webbe	Not recommissioned in 6/59|
	Henry Watson	
	Thomas Cooke	
	Thomas Ward	
	George Westby[45]	
Capt. Lt.	Gervase Harestaffe?[46]	

43 Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, p. 552. Pitman had for some years been governor of Portland Castle. See, for example, TNA, SP 28/111, fo. 9; ibid, SP28/ 114, fo. 52.
44 See below p. 120.
45 Captain George Westby's company was added to the regiment in 5/58. It had garrisoned Clifford's Tower, York, and also formed part of the garrison at Hull where it had been raised in 1655: CSPD 1655, pp. 357; ibid, 1658-9, p. 28; TNA, SP 28/116, fo. 377.
46 Harestaffe commanded the company garrisoning Clifford's Tower, York in 4/59 and was described as captain: CSPD 1658-9, p. 338. His name appears under the lieutenants in the list of officers commissioned in the regiment in 9/59, but he was captain lieutenant in 25/2/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter E. I therefore think that he was probably captain lieutenant in 10/58.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fairfax	
Lt. Col.	John Mason	Gov. of Jersey 7/59. Succeeded by Waldine Lagoe, Lt. Col. in the 22nd regt. F.|
Major	Daniel Davison	
Captains	Thomas Sutton	
	Samuel Poole	

	William Wilkinson	
	John Rogers	
	Rene Bailly	
	John Pym	
	Francis Hartley	Succeeded Capt. Freeman c. 10/58[47]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

47 Ibid, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 65.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Read	
Lt. Col.	John Clobury	Succeeded Peter Pike by 7/57
Major	James Mutlow	Succeeded Clobury as major by 11/57. Succeeded by Capt. Phipps as co. commander[48]
Captains	Hugh Gosnell	
	George Everard	
	Miles Meredith	
	Sylam Callant	
	John Dirdo	
	Thomas Hunt	He may have left regt. by 11/58.[49] If so, possibly succeeded by Capt. Lt. Street
	John Phipps	In post in 11/57 and 1/58. Prob. succeeded by Capt. Yardley who was in post in 11/58 and 9/59[50]
Capt. Lt.	John Winthrop	Succeeded Capt. Lt. Street, who had left the regt. temporarily or been promoted[51]

48 Ibid, Phipps appears in Clarke's records in 3/54: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
49 Hunt's name does not appear in the list of the regiment's quarters in 11/58, but neither does his company: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.
50 Ibid, Clarke Ms 48, unfol. 13/1/58; ibid, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 56; CJ vii, p. 781.
51 His commission was dated 11/9/58. There was a close family connection between the Reades and the Winthrops: F. and D.

18th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Daniel	
Lt. Col.	John Pearson	
Major	Richard Heath	In post in 5/59. Cashiered 8/59[52]
Captains	Joseph Witter	
	Francis Aldersey	
	Hugh Birtles[53]	
	Nicholas Kelke	
	Roland Gascoyne	In post in 6/59 but not recommissioned in 8/59[54]
	XXX Reynolds	In post in 11/58. Not recommissioned in 8/59[55]
	XXX[56]	
Capt. Lt.	Robert Heath	Lt. to Major Heath. Promoted to full capt. in 8/59[57]

52 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 34; CJ vii, p. 763. F. and D. confuse Robert with Richard Heath. The major was cashiered by Parliament in 7/59, not demoted, whilst the captain lieutenant was promoted.
53 Birtles was governor of Blair Athol in 6/59: TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 37. He does not appear in the regimental list of mid-August 1659 but his name is in Chequers Ms 782 in an entry dated 9/59.
54 Ibid, Ms 782, unfol. 6/59; CJ vii, pp. 762-3.
55 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 56; CJ vii, pp. 762/3.
56 There was a gap in the list for 11/58 denoting the very recent departure of Captain Holford: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 56. His

replacement seems to have been Joseph Hales. For this see below p. 122.
57 Ibid, Clarke Ms 48, unfol. 6/1/57; ibid, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 55.

19th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Fitch	Col. 5th regt. F. 6/59. Succeeded by Col. Henry Smith, formerly gov. of Hull, in 9/59[58]
Lt. Col.	Miles Mann	
Major	John Hills	
Captains	Henry Cleare senior[59]	Transfer to 5th regt. F. 9/59
	Edward Ersbury	
	Anthony Langrish	In post in 10/58. Not recommissioned in 7/59. Succeeded by Anthony Bee, lt. in the regt. in 53[60]
	Anthony Wilkes	
	Richard Lowry	
	George Bateman	
	Abraham Spooner	Transfer to 5th regt. F. 9/59
Capt. Lt.	William Browne?	

58 F. and D.
59 Cleare, Spooner, Lowry and Bee were recommissioned in 7/59: CJ vii, pp 709, 781. Fitch, who had been appointed governor of the Tower of London and colonel of its garrison in the same month in succession to Colonel Barkstead, persuaded Parliament to allow them to join him as company commanders in the 5th regiment of foot. In 9/59 they were ordered to replace Captains Cordy, Jennings, Sharpe and Foster, who were to take over their companies in Scotland in what had become Colonel Henry Smith's regiment: F. and D. However, only Cleare and Spooner appear to have moved to London, whilst the four captains required to relocate to Scotland appear to have stayed put.
60 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 45, unfol. late 5/53.

20th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck	
Lt. Col.	William Gough	
Major	Abraham Holmes	
Captains	Ethelbert Morgan	
	Francis Nicholls	
	George Parker	
	Benjamin Groome	
	Roger Hatchman	
	George Walton	
	William Downes	Prob. the former capt. lt. Succeeded Capt. Hughes[61]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

61 Ibid, Clarke Ms 21 unfol. 23/9/51; ibid, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.

21st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Talbot	
Lt. Col.	Henry Pownall	Removed from his post in 9/59[62]
Major	John Hubblethorne	In post in 5/59[63]
Captains	John Hargeave	
	Joseph Poole	Reduced to capt. lt. in 9/59
	John Clarke	

	James Emerson[64]	
	Edmund Lister	
	John Huitson	Demoted to lt. in 9/59[65]|
	Thomas Gwillym	Lt. to Major Hubblethorne| Demoted to lt. in 9/59[66]|
Capt. Lt.	William Stone[67]	

62 Pownall was removed to make way for Wroth Rogers in late 9/59. An attempt was seemingly being made to find a post for him elsewere, but no decision had been taken before the army brought the meetings of Parliament to an end in mid-October: CJ vii, pp. 787, 789.
63 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 17. Hubblethorne was demoted to captain in late 9/59, but was reinstated two days later: CJ vii, pp. 787, 789.
64 In 8/59 the Committee of Safety, whose task it was to nominate officers, recommended that Emerson should be succeeded by Capt. Pledger: CSPD 1658-9, p. 660; ibid, 1659-60, p. 80. However, both names appear in the list of company commanders approved by Parliament in the following month: CJ vii, p. 787.
65 Ibid,
66 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55; Chequers Ms 782, unfol. 10/58. Gwillym was demoted to lieutenant in 9/59 but described as captain two months later: Clarke Papers iii, p. xl; CJ vii, p. 787; Chequers Ms 782, unfol. 11/59. Monck presumably refused to demote him.
67 Stone was in the army and probably in post in 9/58: Bodleian Libray, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.

22nd Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Richard Cromwell	
Lt. Col.	Waldine Lagoe	In post in 10/58[68]| Moved to the 16th regt. F. mid-59. Succeeded by Major Ellatson|
Major	Jeffrey Ellatson	In post in 10/58[69]|
Captains	Oliver Edge[70]	
	Nicholas Whitby	
	Richard Holt?	Commissioned in 6/59|
	Jeffrey Watson?[71]	
	Thomas Scott?	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt.|
	XXX Alson	
	William Burnell	In post in 9/58[72]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

68 TNA, SP 28/18/183/117; CSPD 1658-9, p. 28.
69 Ditto.
70 Edge was described as major in two documents written at the time, but he may have held that rank in a previous regiment: CSPD 1656-7, pp. 56-7, 94.
71 Watson and Scott were mentioned in the same sentence as Edge: ibid,
72 Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.

23rd Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Cooper	
Lt. Col.	Roger Sawrey	Succeeded Col. Cooper on or before 30/7/59|
Major	Peter Crispe	
Captains	John Gillott	Not commissioned in 7/59|
	Yaxley Robson	
	Edward Lunn	
	Col. Leonard Lytcott	
	Edward Harman	
	Thomas Spencer	
	John Parker	
Capt. Lt.	**Abraham Shockley**	Not commissioned as capt. lt. in 7/59[73]|

73 When the regiment was remodelled by Parliament in 7/59, Shockley was demoted to lieutenant in the new lieutenant colonel 's company: CJ vii, p. 742.

24th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Ralph Cobbett	
Lt. Col.	Arthur Young	
Major	Jeremiah Campfield	
Captains	Hugh Dodgin	Not commissioned in 9/59. Commissioned in the 26th regt. F. in late 59|
	Matthew Marvell	Not commissioned in 9/59. Restored c. 11/59|
	Richard Hatt	Ditto and ditto|
	William Broadhurst	
	Roger Jones	
	Joshua Blackwell	Not commissioned in 9/59[74]|
	Humphrey Mason	Ditto. Restored 25/2/60|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Thompson[75]	

74 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.
75 Ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 9.

25th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Mitchell	
Lt. Col.	John Cotterell	Not commissioned in 7/59| Lt. Col. Wiggan succeeded him by 10/59[76]|
Major	Michael Richardson	Cashiered 9/59|
Captains	Robert Scrope	
	Thomas Quick	In post in 11/57| Not commissioned in 7/59. Possibly recommissioned by Monck c. 11/59. Succeeded by Capt. Stephen Blythe by 2/60[77]|
	Thomas Southern	
	James Dennis	Not commissioned in 7/59|
	Edward Freer	In post in 7/58[78]|
	John Waller	Not commissioned in the regt. in 7/59. Transferred to the 2nd regt. F. Succeeded by William Dowson[79]|
	William Lowther/Lowrey	XXX Succeeded Capt. Hutton by 11/57|Demoted to lt. to Major Nary in 7/59 but prob. reappointed by Monck c. 11/59. In post early 60[80]|
Capt. Lt.	Ralph Bernard[81]	

76 TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 207.
77 CJ vii, p. 743; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55; ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 17.
78 TNA, SP 28/105, fo. 225. Freer was not in the list of the company commanders approved by Parliament in 7/59. He had been transferred to the 18th regiment of foot: CJ vii, pp. 742, 763. He was major by 11/59: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 14.
79 TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 206. Monck was apparently prepared to keep Waller in post despite Parliament's orders, but he was kept in England on Lambert's orders and Monck was obliged to appoint a replacement. When Waller was liberated his first position was captain in the 2nd regiment of foot. When that was disbanded shortly afterwards he was transferred to the 26th regiment: Clarke Papers iv, p. 224. See above pp. 116, 164 for his new posts.
80 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 18; ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 15.
81 Bernard was still captain lieutenant early in 7/59, but John Ramsey was named in the House of Commons list of 30/7/59: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.; CJ vii, p. 742. Bernard was dismissed rather than demoted as he does not appear amongst the regiment's lieutenants, but he was subsequently recommissioned as captain in the 25th and then in the 17th regiment of foot.

26th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Gibbon	
Lt. Col.	Henry Needler *	In post in 10/58[82]|
Major	John Chamberlain *	Capt. 22nd regt. F. in 9/57. Succeeded Capt. Boyce[83]|
Captains	John Gibbon?	XXX In post in 7/59[84]|
	Mark Grime?	XXX Ditto[85]|
	John Corker?	XXX Ditto|
	Lionel Lingwood[86]	Former capt. 2nd regt. F.|
	Nathaniel Harrison	Lt. F. in the NMA in 58. Succeeded by Capt. Peacock by 7/59 when he became Peacock's lt. Capt. in the 31st regt. F. 2/60[87]|
	XXX Goodwin	XXX Succeeded by Robert Heath[88]|
	George Owen	XXX Major in Ireland in 59. Succeeded by Thomas Wright, possibly of the 1st regt. F.|
Capt. Lt.	Jeremiah Masterson?	Former lt. in the 5th regt. F. In post in 7/59[89]|

82 TNA, SP 28/183/118.
83 When the regiment was first commissioned it did not have a major. When he was appointed, Chamberlain did not raise an additional company. Instead he took over Captain Boyce's in order to save the Lord Protector expense: CSPD 1657/8, p. 136.
84 A John Gibbons was captain of foot in Ireland in the early 1650s, but he may have been killed in 1653. For this see p. 228.
85 This officer was possibly related to the Lieutenant Colonel Mark Grime, formerly of the 10th regiment of foot, who was governor of Cardiff Castle in late 1659: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 5-12/1/60.
86 Lingwood's company was in garrison at Rye in 3/58: Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, p. 17.
87 CJ vii, p. 730; CSPD 1659-60, p. 30; TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 574. For Harrison's career in 1660 see below pp. 166–7.
88 Goodwin may have been a captain in Ireland in the early 1650s: TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 291.
89 CSPD 1658-9, p. 384.

Dragoons

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Morgan[90]	
Major	John Farmer	
Captains	George Robinson	
	William Hellin	
Capt. Lt.	John Wetmore	Lt. to Capt. Robinson. Succeeded Capt. Lt. Cotton[91]|

90 Morgan, Farmer, Robinson and Hellin were the four troop commanders commissioned in 9/59. According to F. and D., they were in post during the latter part of the Protectorate.
91 TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 112; ibid, SP 28/107, fo. 248.

Cavalry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Cromwell	Succeeded his father as col. by 10/58|
Major	William Boteler[92]	Major 16th regt. H. Replaced John Packer| Removed in 6/59|
Captains	Richard Merest/Morris	Adj. Gen. H.|Ditto. Re-appointed Adj. Gen. H.|
	William Disher	Former capt. in the regt.| Removed 6/59[93]|
	XXX	Succeeded Capt. Izod before 11/58, who had moved to the 14th regt. H.[94]|
	John? Barker[95]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

92 Boteler, Merest, Disher, Barker and Izod were appointed by Oliver Cromwell early in 1658 to replace the existing commanders who were unhappy with the Protectorate preferring, seemingly, a Commonwealth: F. and D.; CSPD 1658-9, p. 376.
93 CSPD 1658-9, p. 376. Disher had lost his captaincy during the campaign in Scotland for various misdemeanours including retaining some of his troopers' pay. Reinstated in the army early in 1658 and removed again in 1659, he was commissioned as adjutant general of horse by Monck before 2/5/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5). It is likely that he took over William Malin's troop in 1658 as Malin had been his lieutenant.
94 It is possible that Izod was on temporary secondment. The deliberations of the Committee of Safery, which recommended appointments in the army to Parliament between 5/59 and 9/59, clearly state that Izod was a captain in the 1st regiment of horse when it was remodelled: CSPD 1658-9, p. 376.
95 Ibid, 1658-9, p. 376.

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Montagu	Col. 10th regt. F. to 10/45. Succeeded Col. Winthrop on his death c. 3/58| Removed 5/59|
Major	Theophilus Hart	Capt. in 5th regt. H. Replaced Joseph Strange after 11/57| Resigned early 9/59|
Captains	William Gough	
	Thomas Ingoldsby[96]	
	John Coppleston[97]	XXX
	Benjamin Oakshott	Lt. in the regt. and seemingly capt. lt. to Col. Winthrop[98]| Removed 8/59|
Capt. Lt.	Roger Hickman	Lt. in the regt. in 4/54[99]|

96 Thomas Ingoldsby was captain in the regiment in late 58, and possibly from 10/55 onwards: TNA, SP 28/117, fo. 430. He had been a captain in the 6th regiment of foot in the late 1640s: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 88. He does not appear to have been in the army for the first half of the 1650s.
97 As sheriff of Devonshire in 1655 Coppleston had played a significant role in disarming the small band of survivors of Penruddock's rising who had fled into his county: F. and D.
98 TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 332.
99 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnall, 10-17/4/54.

4th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood *	
Major	Hezekiah Haynes *	
Captains	Griffith Lloyd *	
	Joseph Blisset[100]	
	Thomas Else *	
	Richard Walton?[101]	
Capt. Lt.	Nathaniel Phillips	Cor. to Capt. Stephen White in the late 40s[102]|

100 Blisset signed the army's address of congratulation to Richard Cromwell on his becoming Lord Protector in 9/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
101 I have replaced Izod tentatively with Richard Walton, who was a captain in the regiment in 1/60, and who signed the army's address to Protector Richard in 9/58 in a section where the signatories were all company or troop commanders: CJ vii, p. 817; Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
102 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 123, 141.

5th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Phillip Twistleton *	
Major	Owen Cambridge *	
Captains	Thomas Deane *	
	Henry Beale *	
	Richard Ashby *	
	Major Richard Beke	Commander of the Lifeguard. Succeeded Capt. Whalley by 11/58[103]|

Capt. Lt.	Hugh Polden?	XXX. In post in late 59|

103 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Disbrowe *	
Major	John Blackmore *	
Captains	John Jenkins *	
	Edward Scotten *	
	Joseph Wallington *	
	John Fox *	
Capt. Lt.	Richard Southwood?	Lt. in the regt. in 5/49[104]|

104 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 557 (10).

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Ingoldsby	Removed in 5/59[105]. Reinstated in 25/2/60|
Major	Thomas Babbington	Removed in 5/59| Reinstated in 25/2/60|
Captains	John Merriman	Major of the regt. in 5/59|
	George Elsmore	Removed in 5/59[106]| Reinstated c. 1/3/60|
	Major Charles Duckett	
	Richard Holewell	Capt. in the regt. in 4/59[107]|
Capt. Lt.	Edward Parry	Removed 5/59[108]| Reinstated c. 1/3/60|
Possibles Captains	William Coomby	Cor. to Major Creed in 14th regt. H. 2/51[109]|
	Thomas Hunt[110]	

105 See F. and D. for the removals in 5/59.
106 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 26/7-3/8/59.
107 The Committee of Safety suggested that he be demoted from captain to lieutenant in 6/59, but Parliament re-appointed him: CSPD 1658-9, p. 387; CJ vii, p. 715.
108 Parry had failed to persuade the colonel's troop to support Protector Richard in 4/59: Clarke Papers v, p. 287.
109 TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 861.
110 Coomby and Hunt were dismissed from the 7th regiment of horse in 6/59 as debauched fellows, but there was only a single vacancy at troop commander: CSPD 1658-9, p. 387. All that I can suggest is that Duckett and Merriman had retired before 5/59 but were recommissioned in the summer.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck *	
Major	Ralph Knight *	
Captains	Thomas Johnson *	
	Thomas Symnell *	
	Roger Legge	
	Jeremiah Smith *	
Capt. Lt.	John Coventry *	

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Whalley	Succeeded by Robert Swallow in 6/59|
Major	Robert Swallow	
Captains	John Sabberton	

	Daniel Dale	
	Thomas Chamberlain	Succeeded Swallow as major|
	John Wright	
Capt. Lt.	Nathaniel Holt?	Cor. to Capt. John Savage in the regt. 5/49[111] Capt. Lt. in 7/59|

111 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 20.

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Lord Fauconberg	Replaced John Lambert in 1/58[112]|
Major	William Goodrick	
Captains	John Pockley	
	John Hatfield	
	XXX Smyth	
	W. Rokeby	Succeeded Capt. Adam Baynes[113]|
Capt. Lt.	William? Thompson	Lt. to Capt. Stoddard. Succeeded Capt. Lt. Spilman[114]|

112 Clarke Papers iii, p. 132.
113 See above p. 130.
114 F. and D; TNA, E 121/4/1/30, entry 88.

13th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Lilburne	
Major	George Smithson	
Captains	Thomas Lilburne	Removed 5/59|
	Thomas Strangeways	
	Francis Wilkinson	Succeeded Capt. Watkinson|
	XXX Willoughby	Succeeded Capt. Bradford by 11/57. Removed 5/59. Possibly transferred to the 15th regt. H.|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Cromwell	
Major	Richard Creed	Moved to 12th regt. H. 5/59|
Captains	Oliver Pretty	
	Thomas Coulson	
	Phillip Prime	Succeeded Capt. Wright just before 11/58, but possibly in charge of the troop if Wright was temporarily unavailable for service in Scotland[115]| Not recommissioned in 5/59. Wright returned if he had ever left|
	Thomas Izod	Capt. 1st regt. H. Succeeded Capt. Hope before 11/58, but possibly on secondment[116]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX Dendy?	

115 Ibid, E 121/4/6/101B, entry 1.
116 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 51, fo. 55.

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Francis Hacker	
Major	John Grove	Not recommissioned in 5/59. Transferred to the 13th regt. H. as a capt.|
Captains	Thomas Empson	Not recommissioned in 5/59|
	William Hubbard	Major of the regt. 5/59|
	Clement Needham	
	Gabriel Wayne	
Capt. Lt.	Elias Whalley?	In post in late 5/59. Full capt. 7/59|

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	James Berry *	
Major	Unton Croke *	
Captains	Robert Hutton *	
	John Robinson *	
	John Hawkridge *	
	Thomas Wells *	XXX
Capt. Lt.	Noel Boteler	Lt. to Major William Boteler in the regt. in 50/51[117]|

117 TNA, SP 28/82, fo. 478.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Tobias Bridge	Removed in 5/59. Major in Lockhart's regt. H. in Flanders 8/59[118]|
Major	John Daborne	
Captains	Richard Combes	Removed in 6/59[119]. Restored c. 3/60|
	Henry Cleare junior	
	Richard Castle	Left the regt. c. 51. Seemingly reinstated before 5/59 but then removed when Okey resumed command in 5/59. Subsequently capt. 27th regt. F.[120]|
	Thomas Crowther?	Lt. in the regt. in 6/51[121]. Capt. in 59|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Ward	XXX

118 F. and D, p. 673.
119 Ibid, p. 393. In 8/59 Combes was rumoured to have been given a captain's commission in the 8th regiment of horse but it apparently came to nothing: Clarke Papers iv, p. 411.
120 CSPD 1658-9, p. 384.
121 Crowther's name appears third in a list of four lieutenants who are known to have been serving in Okey's regiment in 1651: BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Passages, 25/4-2/5/51.

Lifeguard	Name	Military Career
Captain	XXX[122]	

122 Beke had left the lifeguard during 1658. He was commanding a troop in the 5th regiment of horse in 11/58, a command he continued to hold until late in 1659. For this see p. 129 and CSPD 1658-9, p. 376.

Company and Troop Commanders: Late September 1659

Infantry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Herbert Morley	In 7/59 succeeded Edmund Ludlow appointed in 5/59. Col. in the First Civil War|
Lt. Col.	William Farley	
Major	Vacancy[123]	
Captains	James Priest	
	Robert Luson	Major 6th regt. F. 2/60|
	Robert King	Not in the regt. in 1/60|
	Thomas White	Major of the regt. 2/60|
	Joseph Cooke	XXX| Not in the regt. in 1/60. Transferred to the 5th regt. F. |
	Thomas Palmer	In the army in 9/58[124]| Ditto|
	Henry Hedworth **	Former capt. 10th regt. F. Cashiered 54| Not in the regt. in 1/60|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Clarke	In the army in 9/58 and in post in 6/59. Ens. in the lt. col's co. in 2/50[125]| Not in the regt. in 1/60|

123 John Wiggan, major of the 22nd regiment of foot between 1651 and 1653, was commissioned as major of the 1st regiment of foot in 5/59, but he had been promoted to lieutenant colonel of the 25th regiment of foot by the late summer. There is no record of his replacement in the House of Commons Journal.
124 Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
125 Ibid; BL, Thomason Tracts, The Publick Intelligencer, 6-13/6/59; Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 128.

2nd Regiment[126]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Ashfield	
Lt. Col.	William Symonds	
Major	Henry Dorney[127]	Transferred to the 24th regt. F. in 7/1/60 as capt.[128]|
Captains	Robert Baynes	In post in 11/59 when his co. was at York[129]|
	Thomas Heyrick[130]	
	William Fitch	
	XXX Jones	
	William Hooper	
	William Davies	In post in 7/59|
	John Rudlee	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	**XXX Weare**	
Possibles/ Replacements Captains	XXX Cary??	Mentioned in 1/60[131]|
	John Waller	Capt. in the regt. on 6/1/60. Former capt. 25th regt. F.[132]|

126 For officers in 12/59, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 116. Early in the following month Monck disbanded five of the six companies of the regiment he had found at York. Captains Heyrick, Hooper and Jones were allowed to leave Newcastle for London whilst the soldiers they had commanded were used to recruit other regiments of foot: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fos. 116-17. Nothing is yet known about the whereabouts or the fate of the companies commanded by Ashfield, Symonds, Fitch, Davies and Rudlee or their successors, but one must have been at York.
127 All the company commanders apart from Major Dorney were seen as unreliable: Grey, *Impartial Examinations* iv appendix, p. 161. Dorney's company was attached to the 24th regiment of foot as an independent company: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 9. By late February at the earliest it was under the command of Captain Gideon Fisher: ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter L. This is not surprising as Fisher had fought under Leonard Lytcott, the regiment's colonel, in Ireland in the early 1650s. For this, see below p. 185.
128 Ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 9.

129 Baynes supported Lambert and so would almost certainly have lost his captaincy in 1/60: Akerman, *Letters from Roundhead Officers,* pp. 150, 152.
130 Jones and Heyrick's companies were merged into one in 1/60 and sent to Dunkirk. Their officers were discharged: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 116.
131 Cary was ordered to march to Newcastle with Major Dorney on 6/1/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 116. He appears to have been in charge of volunteers raised locally on behalf of Sir Henry Vane, one of Lambert' supporters. The Vane family's principal residence was Raby Castle, Co. Durham: Clarke Papers iv, p. 300; ibid v, p. 352.
132 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 24

5th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Fitch	Succeeded Col. Barkstead. Formerly col. 19th regt. F.| Succeeded by Col. George Twistleton in 1/60[133]|
Lt. Col.	John Miller	Formerly major in the regt.|
Major	Thomas Fitch	Fitch's commission as col. states that he was also major|
Captains	Nicholas Cordy[134]	
	John Jennings[135]	
	Henry Sharpe	
	William Foster	
	Henry Cleare senior	Ex capt. in the 19th regt. F. Newly raised co.[136]| Ditto|
	Abraham Spooner	Ditto. Former capt. in the regt. cashiered in 49 for alleged Leveller sympathies[137]| Not in the regt. in 1/60|
Capt. Lt.	John Maine??[138]	

133 Fitch, Cleare and Spooner were officers in the 19th regiment based in Scotland before 5/59. Captains Lowry and Bee were also commissioned in the 5th regiment, but both remained in Scotland and appear as supporters of Monck rather than Lambert. For this see above p. 90 and below p. 122.
134 Cordy and the next three captains were to have joined the 19th regiment of foot in Scotland in 9/59. The first three were still in the Tower regiment in early 1660. Foster was not but neither was he in the 19th regiment of foot.
135 Jennings, although a captain, was probably not in command of a company in the regiment until after the fall of the Protectorate. For this see above p. 85.
136 For Cleare and Spooner, see above p. 90. It is most unlikely that they would have had time to raise their companies by 30/9/59 : CJ vii, p. 781.
137 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 100.
138 The Committee of Safety recommended in 7/59 that Captain Lieutenant Parker, guilty of excessive fondness for drink and horse racing, should be replaced by John Maine, but Parker was a full captain in the regiment in 2/60. He seems therefore to have been cashiered and then replaced, though Maine's appointment may not have been approved by Parliament: CSPD 1659-60, p. 8.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Sydenham	Supporter of Lambert. Removed 12/59|
Lt. Col.	Francis Allen	Ditto|
Major	John Grime	Ditto[139]|
Captains	John Hunt	Gone from the regt. by 1/60|
	John Davies	Lt. to Capt. Shrimpton 47. Possibly capt. in the regt. c. 49[140]| Gone from the regt. by 1/60|
	Consolation Fox	Gone from the regt. by 1/60|
	Stephen West	
	John Brockhurst	XXX[141]| Gone from the regt. by 1/60|
	John Shrimpton **	Ditto|
	Richard Barker	Capt. Lt. in the regt. 6/59. Succeeded Capt. Richard Wagstaffe in1/8/59[142]|
Capt. Lt.	Benjamin Southwood	Succeeded Richard Barker[143]|

139 Old Parliamentary History 21, p. 475; ibid 22, p. 3; CSPD 1659-60, pp. 308, 328.
140 Davies may have served in Ireland from 8/51 if not earlier, but there could easily have been two captains John Davies.
141 A Captain Brockhurst was at Hull in 6/58: CSPD 1658-9, p. 52.
142 Initially proposed as lieutenant to Captain Wagstaffe, he was commissioned as captain lieutenant in 6/59: CSPD 1659-60, p. 36; CJ vii, p. 688. See CJ vii, p. 742 for his and Southwood's promotions.

143 Southwood was in the army in 9/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187. He had been lieutenant to Francis Allen in the late 1640s: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 132. Lack of information about the regiment in the 1650s makes it impossible to know if he was in continuous service.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Arthur Haselrig	
Lt. Col.	John Mayer	
Major	John Topping	Removed by Monck c. 1/60|
Captains	Jeremiah Tolhurst	
	John Mason	In Carlisle garr. in 9/59. Joined Lambert[144]| Removed from the regt. by Monck|
	Joseph Simpson	Joined Lambert in 11/59[145]| Ditto|
	Nicholas Loyzhier	
	Peter Bannister	
	Timothy Levin	Joined Lambert in 11/59| Ditto|
	William Elmes	
Capt. Lt.	Edward Toll	Not in post in 1/60|

144 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 574.
145 CSPD 1655, p. 276, 279; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 24/11-1/12/59.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Mosse	Succeeded Pride on his death in 10/58|
Lt. Col.	Nicholas Andrews	Major in the regt.|
Major	Thomas Higgs	Capt. in the regt.|
Captains	Richard Kemp	Not commissioned in 2/60|
	Ralph Prentice	Not commissioned in 2/60|
	William Galhampton	
	Henry Crispe	
	William Pride[146]	
	Francis Mercer	XXX[147]| Not commissioned in 2/60|
	Edward Patten	XXX[148]| Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Henry Giles	Ditto|

146 Ibid, 30/6-7/7/59.
147 An officer with this name was captain in the 22nd regiment of foot in 1650. For this see p. 78.
148 Patten was in the army in 9/58 and may already have been a captain: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.

10th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Biscoe	Cashiered 12/59|
Lt. Col.	William Style	
Major	Matthew Cadwell	Cashiered 1/60|
Captains	John Groome	Ditto|
	Samuel Wise	Ditto|
	Stephen White	Ditto|
	Benjamin Gifford	Major in the regt. 2/60|
	John Style	Ens. to Capt. Miller in this regt. before 5/50|
	Daniel Nicholls	XXX Cashiered 1/60|

	Hannibal Vivian	XXX Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Andrews	XXX

11th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Timothy Wilkes	Removed in 12/59 by Monck for disloyalty[149]|
Lt. Col.	Robert Read	
Major	William Knowles	Promoted to replace Thomas Hughes in 7/59[150]| Removed by Monck in 10/59|
Captains	Thomas Hughes	Designated capt. in 9/59[151]|
	William Collinson	
	John Miller	Transferred to 20th regt. F. c. 10/59|
	William Newman	
	Timothy Langley	
	Richard Clifton	
	Thomas Hunt	
Capt. Lt.	Anthony Belcham	Full capt. 17th regt. F. by 12/59|
Possible Captain	John Collins[152]	

149 F. and D.
150 CJ vii, p. 724.
151 CSPD 1659-60, p. 203.
152 According to F. and D, Collins transferred from this regiment into the 20th regiment of foot in 10/59, but I have no record of his serving in the 11th regiment of foot.

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Hewson	Not commissioned in 1/60|
Lt. Col.	John Duckenfield	Ditto|
Major	Edward Hoare	
Captains	Robert Smith	
	Edward Turner	
	William Duckenfield	Changed places with Capt. Sanders of Hewson's regt. in Ireland 9/59[153]| Not commissioned in 1/60|
	John Hardier	
	Richard Goodwin	Not commissioned in 1/60. He probably left Ireland with the regt. in 55 and returned there in 60[154]|
	Robert Brown	Not commissioned in 1/60|
	John Newton	Lt. to Capt. Bonnell whom he prob. replaced[155]|
Capt. Lt.	Israel Bolton	Capt. 1/60|

153 CSPD 1659-60, p. 202.
154 A Major Richard Goodwin was commanding a company in Ireland in 2/60: HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, p. 431; Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, p. 720.
155 Newton's promotion took place on 5/8/59 by which time Bonnell had been commissioned as major in Colonel Barrow's regiment in Ireland: CSPD 1659-60, pp. 13, 35; CJ vii, p. 748.

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Lambert **	Restored to his old regt. in 5/59| Cashiered 12/59|
Lt. Col.	Jeremiah Campfield	Major in Cobbett's regt. F. 52-59. Preferred to Elton|
Major	Christopher Skipper	
Captains	Richard Elton[156]	Succeeded Capt. Brockett who transferred to the 24th regt. F.[157]|Lambert loyalist. Not recommissioned 1/60|
	John Lambert	Not re-commissioned in 1/60|
	Edward Bradshaw	
	Thomas Fryer	
	Thomas Axtell *	
	William Elward	Lt. to Capt. John Hewley when Bright commanded the regt. but cannot have succeeded him[158]| Not commissioned in 1/60 but reinstated by Monck in 2/60|
	Isaac Hague	Prob. lt. or capt. in the regt.[159]
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Hooper	XXX[160]

156 The first list of 28/5/59 gave Elton as lieutenant colonel, but he was subsequently demoted to captain and Jeremiah Campfield inserted in his place. He in turn took over Captain Brockett's company. This Elton accepted with good grace. Later in the year he was commissioned as major in the 27th regiment of foot: ibid vii, pp. 668, 677, 681; Clarke Papers iv, p. 19.
157 BL, Thomason Tracts,The Publick Intelligencer, 6-13/6/59.
158 TNA, E 121/4/8/unnumbered, entry 269.
159 . Hague was an officer in the army in 9/58, and probably in the regiment as his signature is followed by those of a succession of junior officers from the 14th Foot: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
160 Hooper was In the army in 9/58: ibid,

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Salmon	Lambert supporter. Not recommissioned 1/60|
Lt. Col.	Devis Pepper	
Major	William Walters	Succeeded Major John Pitman in 6/59[161]|
Captains	Richard Wisdom	
	Henry Watson	Lambert supporter. Co. disbanded 2/60[162]|
	Thomas Cooke	
	Thomas Ward	
	George Westby	
	Michael Bacon	XXX. In the Hull garr. in early 60[163]|
	Thomas Bouchier	XXX|
Capt. Lt.	Brett Elie/Eley	Lt. in General Monck's co. of firelocks 1/53[164]| Promoted to capt. 1/60|
Possible Major	John Pitman[165]	

161 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 295.
162 Watson was arrested in the Orkneys in 2/60 as a Lambert loyalist and his company disbanded: F. and D.
163 See below p. 142.
164 TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 122.
165 Pitman was a company commander in the regiment in 8/59 along with Major Walters and Captains Bacon, Bouchier and Westby. However, there does not seem to have been a place for him in the regiment: ibid, SP 28/118, fo. 485.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fairfax	
Lt. Col.	Waldine Lagoe	Lt. Col. 22nd regt. F.| Sided with Lambert 10/59[166]. Replaced by Capt. Rogers|
Major	Daniel Davison	Sided with Lambert 10/59| Succeeded as major by Rene Bailly and as co. commander by Thomas White[167]|
Captains	Thomas Sutton	
	Samuel Poole	Arrested by Monck 11/59[168]| Not recommissioned|
	William Wilkinson	Sided with Lambert| Ditto|
	John Rogers	Lt. Col. by 12/59|
	Rene Bailly	Major by 12/59|
	John Pym	Arrested by Monck 11/59| Not recommissioned|
	Francis Hartley	Removed after 10/59 and replaced by Capt. John Green but restored in mid-60[169]|
Capt. Lt.	William Faulthrop	Possibly full capt. by 11/59. Sided with Lambert[170]| Not recommissioned|

166 Lagoe had been appointed adjutant general of the forces in Ireland in 7/59, and so may no longer have been in this regiment: CJ vii, p. 723.
167 White was transferred as major to the 1st regiment of foot before mid-2/60. His colonel suggested he should be succeeded by Lieutenant Ambler or Captain Green: HMC, Portland Mss i, p. 154.
168 BL, Thomason Tracts, The Publick Intelligencer, 21-28/11/59.
169 See below pp. 148–9.
170 Faulthrop deserted Monck in 11/59: ibid, Mercurius Politicus, 23-30/11/59.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Read	
Lt. Col.	John Clobury	Col. 5th regt. H. c.10/59|
Major	James Mutlow	Promoted to lt. col. in 10/59|
Captains	Hugh Gosnell	Gone by 25/2/60|
	George Everard	
	Miles Meredith	
	Sylam Callant	
	John Dirdo[171]	
	Thomas Hunt	Gone by 25/2/60|
	William Yardley	An officer in the regt. after 11/56[172]|
Capt. Lt.	John Street	Restored in 9/59 replacing John Winthrop who reverted to lt. to Major Clobury|

171 Dirdo was stopped by Lambert at Newcastle when he tried to return to Scotland. Monck appears to have wanted to promote him to major, but as he could not take up the position it went to Captain Callant instead: Clarke Papers iv, p. 224; F. and D. Dirdo remained a captain until early 4/60 but left the army soon afterwards: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1).
172 See above p. 138. His name does not appear in the list of companies as the regiment went into winter quarters in 1656.

18th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Pearson	Lt. Col. in the regt. Replaced Col. Daniel. | Removed by Monck in 10/59[173]|
Lt. Col.	Clement Keene	Former lt. col. 1st regt. F. Arrested by Monck 10/59|
Major	Nicholas Kelke	Former capt. in the regt. Replaced Richard Heath as major| Arrested by Monck in 10/59|
Captains	Joseph Witter	Lt. Col. by 12/59|
	Francis Aldersey	Deserted Monck 11/59|
	Edward Freer	Major in this regt. by 12/59. Ex capt. 25th regt. F. |
	James Thompson	Gov. Dumbarton Castle from 52 in command of an independent co.|
	Robert Heath	Capt. Lt. in 11/58[174]|
	Joseph Hales	Succeeded a Capt. Forth, possibly on his death[175]|
	Richard Williams	Prob. capt. in 50-1. Lt. in the regt. in 2/59. Deserted Monck in 11/59[176]|
Capt. Lt.	Edward Bathoe[177]	XXX Deserted Monck in 11/59|

173 For the arrest of Lieutenant Colonel Keene and Major Kelke and also Lieutenant Colonel Allen of the 24th regiment of foot, see MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards i, p. 74.*
174 Robert Heath was captain lieutenant in the regiment in late 11/58: Worc. College, Clarke Mss, unbound papers, box 2. For evidence that the company commander in late 1659 was Robert not Richard see Clarke Papers iv, pp. 129, 160.
175 A Joseph Hall had served under Sir William Brereton in Cheshire from 1642: BL, Harleian Ms 2126, fo. 56. Hales had served as captain in the 18th regiment of foot early in the 1650s, but had gone by 11/56. He was in post again by mid-11/58: Worc. College, Clarke Mss, unbound papers, box 2.
176 Chequers Ms 782, unfol. For his escape by sea from Scotland with some of his men, see Clarke Papers iv, pp. 158-9.
177 An Ensign Bathoe was serving under Brereton in 1646: BL, Harleian Ms 2136, fo. 68.

19th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Smith	Deserted Monck in 11/59|
Lt. Col.	Miles Mann	Col. of the regt.12/59|
Major	John Hills	Monck loyalist. Promoted to lt. col. by 12/59|
Captains	Edward Ersbury	
	Anthony Wilkes	
	Richard Lowry[178]	
	George Bateman	
	Anthony Bee	Took over Capt. Cleare's co. when Cleare moved to London[179]| Capt. in the 22nd regt. F. in 4/60. Bee was succeeded by Edward Mann[180]|
	Edward Mann	Ex Langrish's co.
	William Browne	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt. Took over Capt. Spooner's co.[181]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

178 Ordered to accompany Fitch to London and to take up a commission in the 5th regiment of foot Lowry apparently remained in Scotland: F. and D.
179 When Captains Spooner and Cleare were transferred to the 5th regiment of foot they did not take their companies with them: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 8-15/12/59. Although Bee had his own company, he took over Cleare's: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 13.
180 See below p. 139.
181 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 13.

20th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck	
Lt. Col.	William Gough	Removed by Monck in 10/59|
Major	Vacancy[182]	
Captains	Ethelbert Morgan	Lt. Col. 10/59|
	Francis Nicholls	Major 10/59|
	George Parker	Sided with Lambert. Removed by 10/59. Replaced by Capt. Lt. Wintour|
	Benjamin Groome	Sided with Lambert. Removed by 12/59. Replaced by John Miller[183]|
	Roger Hatchman	Removed by Monck 12/59. Replaced by John Collins allegedly of the 11th regt. F.|
	George Walton	Sided with Lambert. Removed by 12/59. Replaced by John Mutlow[184]|
	William Downes	
Capt. Lt.	Robert Wintour	Full capt. c.10/59[185]|

182 This was formerly Major Abraham Holmes's company. Holmes had been promoted to lieutenant colonel of the 23rd regiment of foot but had not apparently been replaced: MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards* i, p. 74. Holmes's lieutenant Robert Carter was named as the new company commander, but Monck seems to have disputed it. Carter sided with Lambert and so he probably never took up his place: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 6/3/55; CJ vii, p. 742; Clarke Papers iv, p. 146.

183 Groome and Walton were said to have been ready to surrender their commissions in 10/59 when Monck took his stand against Lambert: MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards* i, p. 74.

184 Mutlow had been a junior officer in the 17th regiment of foot: F. and D., p. 569.

185 Wintour was nominated by Parliament in 7/59. He appears to have been merely an ensign in 1658 and a waggoner in 1653: Davies, *Coldstream Guards*, p. 55. In Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 6 he is described as being succeeded by Elias Cooper, who was succeeded by John Paynter in 11/59: CJ vii, p. 742. Cooper became a full captain in the 18th regiment of foot in early 1660 and then major of the 25th. For this see below p. 163.

21st Regiment[186]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Talbot	Removed in 12/59 for siding with Lambert|
Lt. Col.	Wroth Rogers	Lt. Col. 10th regt. F. 49, then garr. commander at Hereford. Succeeded Henry Pownall[187]|
Major	John Hubblethorne	Promoted to lt. col. by Monck in 10/59. Col. of the regt. in 12/59[188]|
Captains	John Hargreave	Deserted Monck in 11/59[189]|
	John Clarke	Promoted to major in 12/59|
	James Emerson[190]	
	Edmund Lister	Deserted Monck 11/59. Replaced by Joseph Seymer|
	Augustin Pledger	XXX Succeeded John Huitson[191]|
	William Stone	Capt. Lt. in 58| Lambert loyalist. Removed c. 11/59|
	John Drake	Prob. capt. 1st regt. F. in 58| Transferred to the 15th regt. F. 25/2/60[192]|
Capt. Lt.	Joseph Poole	Demoted from capt. to capt. lt. in 9/59.[193] Restored by Monck but subsequently deserted him|

186 The list incorporates evidence from the Commons Journal and the State Papers and differs from that printed in F. and D., p. 467.

187 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 102. Rogers replaced Pownall on 27/9/59 list: CJ vii, p. 787. See also p. 48. Pownall seems to have been recommissioned as lieutenant colonel by the army grandees in 11/59: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Publick Intelligencer, 28/11-5/12/59.

188 CJ vii, p. 787, 789; TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 15.

189 Hargreave was to have been succeeded by Michael Richardson, but Monck had another use for Richardson and so Parliament after some debate allowed Hargreave to continue as captain: CSPD 1659-60, p. 243.

190 Michael Richardson, former major of the 25th regiment of foot, appears as an eighth captain in the Commons list, but it must be a mistake: CJ vii, p. 787.

191 Pledger was to have replaced Captain Emerson, but Parliament decided he should replace Capt. Huitson in 6/8/59: CSPD 1659-60, p. 80; CJ vii, p. 787. He had served as a captain of foot from April to December 1645: TNA, E 315/5, fo. 5. A Captain Pledger was suggested as quartermaster in Captain Ashby's troop in Twistleton's regiment in place of Scott, a blasphemer, on 14/7/59: CSPD 1659/60, p. 30.
192 See below p. 137.
193 CJ vii, p. 787; BL, Thomason Tracts, The Publick Intelligencer, 21-28/11/59.

22nd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	Removed 12/59|
Lt. Col.	Jeffrey Ellatson	Major in the regt. Succeeded Lt. Col. Lagoe| Not recommissioned in 1/60|
Major	Oliver Edge	Capt. in the regt. Succeeded Major Ellatson[194]| Ditto|
Captains	Nicholas Whitby	Commissioned in 6/59 but possibly transferred to the 26th regt. F. during the summer[195]|Not recommissioned in either regt. in 1/60|
	Richard Holt	
	Thomas Scott	Not recommissioned 1/60|
	William Burnell	A commissioned officer in the army in 9/58[196]|
	William Sharpe	Ditto|
	Thomas Sorrell	XXX[197]| Not recommissioned 1/60|
	Rice Williams	XXX|Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Edmund Ellis	XXX|Ditto|

194 CJ vii, pp. 668, 679.
195 See below p. 126.
196 Both Burnell and Sharpe were in the army in 9/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
197 Sorrell and Williams were also in the army in 9/58: ditto.

23rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Roger Sawrey	Succeeded Col. Cooper[198]| Deserted Monck 10/59|
Lt. Col.	Abraham Holmes	Formerly major in the 20th regt. F. Succeeded Lt. Col. Sawrey| Ditto|
Major	Peter Crispe	Promoted to lt. col. in 11/59 but dismissed as he would not support Monck[199]|
Captains	Yaxley Robson	Major in 11/59[200] and col. soon afterwards|
	Edward Lunn	Major of this regt. 12/59|
	Thomas Spencer	In post 11/59 but removed soon afterwards|
	Edward Harman	Replaced in 12/59|
	Col. Leonard Lytcott	Col. 21st regt. 12/59. Succeeded by Robert Lytcott, who was not his junior officer in 7/59[201]|
	John Parker	Replaced by Thomas Lloyd 12/59|
	William Thimbleton	XXX Replaced in 12/59|
Capt. Lt.	John Gosling	XXX Capt. Lt. 7/59. In post in 11/59. Removed as a Lambert loyalist shortly afterwards[202]|

198 Sawrey was commissioned as colonel with this list of company commanders in late 7/59: CJ vii, p. 742.
199 HMC, Leybourne–Popham Mss, p. 127.
200 Ibid,
201 CJ vii, p. 742.
202 Ibid; HMC, Leybourne-Popham Mss, p. 127.

24th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Ralph Cobbett	Removed by Monck 10/59. Succeeded by Leonard Lytcott of the 23rd regt. F.|
Lt. Col.	Arthur Young	Arrested by Monck in 10/59.[203] Succeeded by Richard Hatt, who had been removed as capt. in this regt. in 9/59|
Major	Robert Cobbett	Removed by Monck 10/59. Succeeded by James Dennis, formerly of the 25th regt. F., who had been removed as capt. in 7/59|
Captains	William Broadhurst	Deserted Monck 11/59. Succeeded by Capt.Lt. Woodward|
	Roger Jones	Ditto. Replaced by his lt. William Kent[204]|
	Humphrey Mason	XXX In post c. 12/59|
	Thomas Thompson	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt.|
	Walter Brockett	Transferred from the 14th regt. F. [205] Deserted Monck 11/59|
	Christopher Hanley	XXX Deserted Monck 11/59|
	Rice Jones	XXX Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Woodward	XXX Full capt. c. 12/59 commanding Capt. Broadhurst's co.[206]|

203 R. Baker, *A Chronicle of the Kings of England* (1665), p. 682.
204 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 9. Kent had gone by 2/60.
205 Brockett had been commissioned as captain in Lambert's regiment on 28/5/59: CJ vii, p. 668.
206 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 9.

25th Regiment[207]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Overton **	Reinstated in the army in 7/59 as col. in his former regt. in succession to William Mitchell, who became col. of the new 27th regt. F.|
Lt. Col.	John Wiggan **	Formerly major in the 22nd regt. F. he replaced Lt. Col. Cotterell. At Hull, Overton's garr., in 8/59[208]|
Major	John Nary	At Hull in 10/59.[209] Succeeded Michael Richardson|
Captains	Robert Scrope	Removed by Monck. XXX Laverock succeeded him[210]|
	Thomas Southern	
	XXX Goodgroom	XXX. Gone by 10/59[211]|
	Francis Rawson[212]	XXX
	William Dowson	XXX In post at Hull in 10/59. Succeeded Capt. Waller[213]|
	William Figes	XXX. In post in Hull in 10/59|
	Richard Penner	XXX Succeeded Capt. Bernard on 27/7/59[214]|
Capt. Lt.	John Ramsey	XXX
Others Captain	Edward Freer	Formerly capt. in the regt. [215]|

207 The regiment was divided in two in the summer of 1659 with six companies stationed in England and four in Scotland: Worc. ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fos. 17, 52. See also pp. 142–3 above.
208 TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 207; CSPD 1659-60, p. 562.
209 For Nary, Dowson and Figes see BL, Thomason Tracts, The Loyal Scout, 21-28/11/59.
210 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 52. F. and D. were mistaken in claiming that he succeeded Captain Figes.
211 CSPD 1659-60, p. 226. Goodgroom was to be replaced by a reinstated Captain Dennis or by Lieutenant John Lakin of the 14th regiment of foot, but a decision seems not to have been taken before 13 October when the New Model Army refused to allow Parliament to sit: Whitelock, *Memorials*, p. 685.
212 A Francis Rawson was lieutenant to Captain Barton in the 7th regiment of horse in late 1647 and probably to Major Babbington just prior to 3/55: Worc. College., Clarke Ms 67, fo. 20; ibid, Ms 46, unfol. 6/3/55.
213 TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 208.
214 CSPD 1659-60, p. 45. Bernard had been captain lieutenant in the regiment and was proposed as a full captain in mid-7/59 but was dismissed a fortnight later. He held a captaincy in Scotland in 12/59 but this was probably in the remodelled 17th regiment of foot: CJ vii, p. 743; CSPD 1659-60, p. 45; Chequers Ms 782, unfol.; BL, Thomason Tracts E 1021 (1).

215 F. and D. still have Freer in the 25th regiment of foot in late 1659. However, this was not so. See above p. 122.

26th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Gibbon	
Lt. Col.	Henry Needler	
Major	John Chamberlain	
Captains	John Gibbon	XXX
	Mark Grime	XXX
	Robert Heath	Formerly a lt. but prob. not in the regt.[216] Replaced Capt. Goodwin|
	John Corker	XXX
	Lionel Lingwood	
	Robert Peacock	Ex Portsmouth garr.[217] Formerly Harrison's co.| Discharged 12/59[218]|
	Thomas Wright	Ex 1st regt. F. Formerly George Owen's co. [219]|
Capt. Lt.	Jeremiah Masterson	
Possible Captain	Nicholas Whitby	Prob. transfer from the 22nd regt. F.[220]|

216 CSPD 1658-9, p. 384.
217 For Peacock, Heath and Wright's appointments in 7/59, see ibid 1659-60, p. 30. Peacock was a captain in the Portsmouth garrison as early as 12/49: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnall, 10-17/12/49. He may have been the Captain Peacock who George Monck managed to prevent being commissioned as a company commander in his own regiment in 1654 after the departure of Captain Gardiner: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 50, fo. 41. In 2/59 Peacock was in the Portsmouth garrison, possibly as an administrator: CSPD 1658-9, p. 539.
218 Baker, Chronicle, *p. 696.*
219 Wright's commission was issued on 30/7/59: CJ vii, p. 742.
220 Whitby was stationed in Jersey in 7/59 and in Hull later in the year. Part of the regiment is known to have garrisoned Jersey during the Protectorate: TNA, SP 28/118, fos. 114, 137; ibid, SP28/109, fo. 31. Later some companies were stationed in the northeast of England and in Scotland: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Publick Intelligencer 12-19/3/60; ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 2-9/8/60.

27th Regiment[221]	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Mitchell	Formerly col. 25th regt. F.|
Lt. Col.	John Wade **	Gov. of the Isle of Man. Former major 10th regt. F.[222]|
Major	Richard Elton	Ex officer in 15th regt. F. Hull garr. co.[223]|
Captains	John Northend	Capt. in the Scarborough garr. 9/59[224]|
	Alexander Bernard	His co. was at Scarborough in 5/56[225]| Capt. 32nd regt. F. 60|
	Thomas Croxton	Gov. of Chester|
	Richard Aske	XXX. Prob. formerly a field officer in Ireland[226]|
	Humphrey Brewster	Gov. of Landgate Fort in 7/59[227]|
	Richard Castle **	Ex capt. 17th regt. H. Gov. of Tenby 10/59[228]|
	Christopher Whichcott	Gov. of Windsor Castle in the 1650s[229]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Jackson	XXX

221 A hotchpotch of officers who could not be accommodated elsewhere, this regiment may not actually have come together as a military unit. The field officers' companies were drawn from the garrison of Hull and had been commanded by Colonel Henry Smith, Major Ralph Waterhouse and Captain John Overton: F. and D. Most of the others company commanders were stationed in garrisons hundreds of miles apart.
222 See above pp. 48, 104. His was the Hull garrison company previously commanded by Major Ralph Waterhouse: F. and D.
223 Ibid,
224 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 502.
225 Ibid, SP 28/110, fo. 56.
226 For Aske's earlier career in the 3rd regt. F., see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 66, 98.
227 Brewster was In the regiment in 9/59: CSPD 1659-60, p. 771. He or his namesake served In the Suffolk militia as captain in 1650 and colonel in 1658: ibid 1650-51, p. 507; ibid 1658-9, p. 169.

228 CJ vii, p. 709; TNA, SP 28/18, fo. 465.
229 See, for example, CSPD 1655-6, pp. 548, 579.

Regiments withdrawn from Flanders in 8/1659

28th Regiment[230]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Samuel Clarke	
Lt. Col.	William Legard	
Major	Samuel Batterly	
Captains	John Baker	
	Edward Claypole	
	Evan Harris	
	William Moore	
	William Richardson	
	John Manning	Formerly capt. in Morgan's regt. in Flanders|
	Edmund Geary	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	John Clarke	

230 This regiment was one of three regiments recalled from Flanders at the time of Booth's uprising in August 1659. The second was Cochrane's. The third, Major General Morgan's, was disbanded almost immediately with the rank and file and some of the company commanders being incorporated into the other two to bring them up to strength: F. and D. There is a list of company commanders in Clarke's regiment in CSPD 1659-60, p. 121.

29th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Sir Brice Cochrane	
Lt. Col.	Robert Mainwaring	
Major	Francis Brockhurst	In post at the disbandment[231]|
Captains	Richard Smith	
	William Coates	In post at the disbandment[232]|
	John Tongue	Recommissioned in the 8th regt. F. 3/60|
	George Annersley	Formerly capt. in Morgan's regt. in Flanders| In post at the disbandment. Major 26th regt. F. 25/2/60|
	William Charlton	Recommissioned in Col. Alsop's regt. in Flanders in 3/60 but removed in 8/60[233]|
	William Bassett	In post at the disbandment. Recommissioned in the 26th regt. F.|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Salisbury	

Regiment disbanded in 1/60
231 Ibid, 1659-60, p. 121. For the officers at the regiment's disbandment see TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 5.
232 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 2-9/11/60.
233 F. and D.

Dragoons

Regiment[234]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Morgan	
Major	John Farmer	
Captains	George Robinson	Deserted Monck 11/59[235]|
	William Hellin	
Capt. Lt.	John Wetmore	

234 Morgan's regiment was changed into a cavalry regiment in 11/59 and increased from four troops to six. It is described in the last two listings as the 18th regiment of horse.

235 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus 24/11-1/12/59. Most of the troop left Scotland with him. The remainder were used to recruit another regiment: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 116.

Cavalry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Packer **	Major until 2/58. Reinstated 5/59| Cashiered 12/59|
Major	John Gladman **	Capt. until 2/58. Reinstated 5/59| Cashiered 12/59|
Captains	William Barrington **	Ditto| Ditto|
	John Hunter **	Capt. Lt. until 2/58. Capt. 5/59| Cashiered 12/59|
	Robert Hope	Capt. 14th regt. H. before 11/58| Cashiered 12/59|
	John Spencer	Prob. the Capt. John Spencer of the 3rd regt. H. who gave up his commission in 56. He replaced Capt. Richard Merest, who became Adj. Gen. of H.[236]|
Capt. Lt.	Samuel Palmer	XXX

236 CSPD 1658-9, p. 376.

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Matthew Alured	Succeeded Edward Montagu as col. in 8/59[237]|
Major	Vacant[238]	
Captains	William Gough[239]	
	Thomas Ingoldsby[240]	
	John Coppleston	Displaced by James Strangeways in 10/59[241]|
	Robert Fox	Lt. in the regt. Succeeded Benjamin Oakshott. Relegated to lt. in 10/59[242]|
Capt. Lt.	Roger Hickman	

237 Alured was preferred to Colonel Edward Whalley, formerly of the 9th regiment of horse: CJ vii, p. 749.

238 Gough was recommended as the replacement for Major Hart in 16/9/59: CSPD 1659-60, p. 203. His appointment was quickly challenged by John Barker, his former commanding officer, and John Nethorpe was recommended instead. The House of Commons heard Barker's complaint, but the MPs had not made a decision prior to their being expelled by the army from the Palace of Westminster in mid-October: ibid, pp. 238-9; CJ vii, p. 749. On 22/10/59 Gough was commissioned as major by Lambert, Disbrowe and Berry: BL, Harleian Ms 6844, fo. 123. Nelthorpe, who had been a captain in the 5th regiment of horse and then adjutant general of horse, was appointed as major by the House of Commons in 1/60: CJ vii, p. 809.

239 See above p. 94.

240 Thomas Pugesley was the name given in the list of captains in the regiment: CJ vii, p. 749. It is almost certainly a mis-reading or mis-transcription of Ingoldsby.

241 CSPD 1659-60, p. 239.

242 On 4/10/59 it was suggested that Fox should be demoted to lieutenant of the major's troop. This was not acted upon by the Commons before it was forbidden to meet, but the appointment was made on 22 October by Lambert, Disbrowe and Berry: CJ vii, p. 749; CSPD 1659-60, pp. 238-9; BL, Harleian Ms 6844, fo. 123. Fox was not recommissioned by the House of Commons in 1/60: CJ vii, p. 809.

4th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	
Major	Hezekiah Haynes	Cashiered 12/59. Lambert loyalist|
Captains	Griffith Lloyd	Ditto|
	Thomas Else	Not recommissioned in1/60|
	James Whitelock[243]	Ditto|
	Richard Walton?[244]	
Capt. Lt.	Nathaniel Phillips	Cor. to Capt. White c. 49|

243 Whitelock had been a captain in Ireland for much of the 1650s. For this, see below pp. 220, 235.
244 I cannot confirm that Walton was in post in the summer of 1659 as only five of Fleetwood's six troop commanders were named in the Journal of the House of Commons: CJ vii, pp. 710, 719, 724, 743.

5th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Phillip Twistleton	Sided with Lambert in 10/59. Not recommissioned in 1/60|
Major	Owen Cambridge	Ditto|
Captains	Thomas Deane	
	Henry Beale	Ditto|
	Richard Ashby	Ditto|
	Richard Beke	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Hugh Polden	

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Disbrowe	Sided with Lambert. Not recommissioned in 1/60|
Major	John Blackmore	Ditto|
Captains	John Jenkins	Ditto|
	Edward Scotten	
	Joseph Wallington	Sided with Lambert. Not recommissioned in 1/60|
	John Fox	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Southwood	

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Nathaniel Rich **	
Major	John Breman **	Cashiered as lt. in Merriman's troop in 55 for participation in Overton's plot. Succeeded John Merriman as major.[245] Gone by 1/60|
Captains	Major Charles Duckett	Gone by 1/60|
	Richard Holewell	Ditto|
	John Barker	Capt. 3rd regt. H. 54. Possibly capt. 1st regt. H. c. 2/58- 5/59|
	John Barrington[246]	In the army in 9/58[247]| Gone by 1/60|
Capt. Lt.	John Toomes **	Previously QM and then cor. in the col's troop. Full capt. in the regt. in 1/60[248]|

245 F. and D. John Merriman was promoted from captain to major in 5/59 but had resigned by 16/9/59: CSPD 1659-60, p. 202.
246 Barrington seems to have taken over the troop formerly commanded by Colonel Charles Howard: TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 303.
247 Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
248 TNA, SP 28/46, fo. 40; ibid, SP 28/102, fo. 228.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck	
Major	Ralph Knight	
Captains	Thomas Johnson	
	Thomas Symnell	
	Jeremiah Smith	
	Robert Glyn	Reinstated in the regt. in succession to Capt. Legge who was removed in 8/59[249]|
Capt. Lt.	John Coventry	

249 Clarke Papers iv, pp. 39-40. Parliament wished for Glyn to replace Johnson whilst Captain Combes of the 17th regiment of horse replaced Legge, but Monck fought back and saved Johnson whom he subsequently promoted to major.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Swallow	Major in the regt. Succeeded Edward Whalley| Not recommissioned 1/60|
Major	Thomas Chamberlain	Capt. in the regt. Succeeded Robert Swallow| Ditto|
Captains	John Sabberton	Not recommissioned in 1/60|
	Daniel Dale	
	John Wright	Not recommissioned in 1/60. Arrested in mid-3/60[250]|
	William Evanson**	Former troop commander. Left regt. 54| Not recommissioned 1/60|
Capt. Lt.	Nathaniel Holt	

250 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 26/3-2/4/60.

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Lambert	
Major	Richard Creed	Major 14th regt. H. 52-59. Replaced Major Goodrick| Discharged by Monck at York in 1/60[251]|
Captains	Adam Baynes	Reinstated in the regt. replacing Capt. Rokeby| Removed by Monck by 16/1/60[252]|
	John Pockley	
	John Hatfield	
	Robert Salmon	Lt. in 6/53 in Capt. Hatfield's troop.[253] Succeeded Capt. Smyth| Not recommissioned in 1/60|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Spilman **	Reinstated in 5/59| Not recommissioned in 1/60[254]|

251 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 19; ibid, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 116.
252 HMC, Portland Mss i, p. 694.
253 TNA, SP 28/93, fo. 128.
254 F. and D. have Spilman being appointed in succession to a Captain Lieutenant Thompson but do not provide a reference. They also claim that Spilman did not leave in 1657 as a result of Lambert's dismissal.

13th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Lilburne	Removed by Monck. Comfirmed by Parliament on 8/2/60[255]|
Major	George Smithson	Succeeded Lilburne as col.|
Captains	Thomas Strangeways	
	Francis Wilkinson	
	John Grove **	Formerly major of the 15th regt. H.|
	William Peverell	Capt. 10th regt. H. 3/49.[256] Prob. capt. in 13th regt. H. in 12/56 but had left by 11/57[257]. If so, restored to the regt. in 6/59|
Capt. Lt.	John Turner	XXX[258]

255 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 20; CJ vii, p. 836.
256 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 545 (30).
257 See below p. 97. Captain William Peverell received pay for soldiers of the regiment seconded to Oliver Cromwell's lifeguard, but the documents do not actually describe him as a troop commander.
258 A John Turner had been lieutenant to Major Hobson in the 8th regiment of foot in the late 1640s. This had been commanded by Colonel Lilburne between 1646 and 1648: ibid, E 121/4/8/12, entry 257; Wanklyn. *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 133.

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Saunders **	Cashiered as col. of the regt. 55. Restored 5/59|
Major	Nathaniel Barton **	Former major of the regt. Succeeded Major Creed when he moved to the 12th regt. H.| Transferred to 9th regt. H. c. 1/60. Succeeded by Phillip Prime formerly capt. in the 14th regt. H.|
Captains	Oliver Pretty	Lambert loyalist removed by Monck. Succeeded by his lt. John Paddon[259]|
	Thomas Coulson	
	James Wright	Lambert loyalist.[260] Removed c. 12/59. His troop was prob. disbanded|
	Thomas Izod	Returned to the regt. as a replacement for Capt. Hope, who had prob. resigned[261]| Promoted to major 4th regt. H. by Monck c. 1/60. Succeeded by William Goodwin|
Capt. Lt.	Francis Hacker junior	Previously cor. in the regt.|

259 F. and D. citing Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53. Letter K.
260 Clarke Papers iv, pp. 58, 157, 158.
261 F. and D.

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Francis Hacker	
Major	William Hubbard	
Captains	Clement Needham	
	Gabriel Wayne	Gone by 2/60|
	Elias Whalley[262]	Succeeded Capt. Thomas Willoughby[263]| Not recommissioned in 1/60|
	Nicholas Lockyer	Lt to Major Grove after 4/54| Lambert loyalist. Not recommissioned in 1/60[264]|
Capt. Lt.	William Watts	Lt. in Capt. Hubbard's troop in 5/3/57. Succeeded Elias Whalley as capt. lt.[265]| Capt. in the regt. in 1/60|

262 In 1651 Whalley was captain in Colonel Gravenor's regiment of horse. For this see below 258.
263 Willoughby, commissioned as captain in 5/59, was possibly a transfer from the 13th regiment of horse. He replaced Captain Empson but resigned in 9/59 and was succeeded by Elias Whalley: CSPD 1659-60, p. 225.
264 Lockyer had been lieutenant to Captain Rhodes in Colonel Grosvenor's regiment disbanded in 1652: TNA, SP 28/87, fo. 352-6. He lost his captaincy in the winter of 1659/60 and was under arrest in 5/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 28/6-5/7/60.
265 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 48, unfol.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	James Berry	
Major	Unton Croke	
Captains	Robert Hutton	Dismissed late 10/59 by Lambert but not apparently reinstated[266]
	John Robinson	
	John Hawkridge	Dismissed late 10/59
	Thomas Wells	
Capt. Lt.	Noel Boteler	

266 Clarke Papers iv, p. 93, 210, 216; CSPD 1659-60, p. 225.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Okey **	Col. of the regt. to 54. Succeeded Col. Bridge 5/59
Major	John Daborne	Sided with Lambert. Cashiered by 2/60
Captains	Henry Cleare junior	
	Richard Wagstaffe	Ex major 6th regt. F. 52. Replaced Capt. Combes[267]
	William Linley	Lt. to Major Bridge 12/51.[268] Removed at some point in the second half of 59 but reinstated in 2/60
	Thomas Crowther	
Capt. Lt.	Richard Ward	

267 CSPD 1658-9, p. 393.
268 TNA, SP 28/82, fos. 474-6.

Lifeguard	Name	Military Career
Captain	Major Arthur Evelyn **	Succeeded Col. Matthew Alured in 8/59[269]
Lieutenant	John Cathness/Carness[270]	

269 CJ vii, p. 749.
270 Cathness had been a quartermaster in Oliver Cromwell's troop in the 6th regiment of horse in the late 1640s: TNA, E 121/5/6/42A, entry 2.

Company and Troop Commanders: 17 February 1660

Infantry

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Herbert Morley[271]	
Lt. Col.	William Farley	
Major	Thomas White	Ex capt. in 16th regt. F.[272]|
Captains	James Priest	Replaced by Capt. Cuthbert Carr 9/4/60[273]|
	Henry Cleare senior	Capt. 5th regt. F. 9/59|
	Nicholas Shepherd	Lt. to Capt. Priest 5/59|
	William White	Lt. to Major Farley 5/59|
	Robert Goffe	Lt. to Major Wiggan 5/59|
	Richard Collinson	Lt. to Capt. Luson in 5/59|
	John Height	Ens. in the col's co. in 7/59[274]|
Capt. Lt.	William Greenaway	Lt. to Capt. Hedworth|

271 Both Morley and Farley were removed by Lambert and his supporters after they dismissed Parliament in 10/59, but both were re-instated when Parliament was restored two months later.
272 HMC, Leybourne-Popham Mss, p. 154.
273 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter M. Priest fled having been accused of allowing General Lambert to escape from the Tower of London in 4/60 whilst he was in command of the night watch: CSPD 1659-60, p. 574.
274 CJ vii, p. 709.

2nd Regiment[275]		

275 See above p. 116 for the disbandment of this regiment.

5th Regiment[276]	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Twistleton	Col. in N. Wales in the 2nd Civil War|
Lt. Col.	John Miller	Replaced by Samuel Barry 25/2/60|
Major	Dennis Taylor	In post in 25/2/60. Capt. 6th regt. F. in 1/2/60 [277]|
Captains	Nicholas Cordy	Replaced 25/2/60 by Capt. George Thompson|
	John Jennings	Ditto. Succeeded by Capt. Dalston Shaftoe[278]|
	Henry Sharpe	Ditto. Succeeded by Capt. William Seymour|
	Thomas Soulton	XXX[279] In post in 25/2/60|
	William Parker	Capt. Lt. of the regt. pre 5/59. Full capt. 25/2/60[280]|
	Anthony Weldon	XXX In post 25/2/60|
	Joseph Cooke	Transfer from 1st regt. F.|
Capt. Lt.	Joseph Trevers/Travers	In the army in 9/58[281]|

276 All the company commanders appear in a list dated 10/2/60: CJ vii, p. 838.
277 Taylor had been a captain in the Eastern Association Army but was cashiered in late 1644 for misconduct: TNA, E121/5/7/101, entry 6; CSPD 1644-5, pp. 314-19, 325; CJ vii, pp. 828, 838.
278 Shaftoe had offered to raise troops for Monck in the north-east of England in 11/59: Clarke Papers iv, p. 189.
279 Soulton was in the army in 9/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
280 See pp. 85, 102, 152 for Parker's career in the regiment in 1656-60.
281 Trevers signed the address from the army in 9/58 congratulating Richard Cromwell on becoming Lord Protector: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187. He was presumably removed from the army c. 6/59 and restored six months later.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Lenthall[282]	Succeeded William Sydenham. Commissioned 1/2/60[283]|

Lt. Col.	John Mill	Reinstated. Formerly col. of the regt.|
Major	Robert Luson	Capt. 1st regt. F. 50-59. Succeeded Major Grime| Removed in 25/2/60|
Captains	Richard Barker	Major 25/2/60|
	Stephen West	
	John Buck	XXX
	Richard Johnson	Lt. to Capt. Robert Saunders. Capt. 10/2/60 replacing William Turner who became his lt.[284]|
	Ex Dennis Taylor's co.	Taylor capt. in 1/2/60| Promoted to major 5th regt. F. 8/2/60|
	Stephen Barry	XXX Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Tom|
	Ex Robert Saunders' co.	XXX Replaced by Capt. Davies in 3/2/60. Possibly Capt. John Davies being reinstated|
Capt. Lt.	Gregory Tom	Ensign in the regt. 6/59. Succeeded Benjamin Southwood. Capt. of Barry's co. 25/2/60|

282 I have found no evidence of Lenthall having a commission in the army before 1/60. His entry in the Oxford DNB describes him as colonel and governor of Windsor Castle in 1/59, but this is incorrect. The reference, an entry in the Journal of the House of Commons, shows that the appointments were made in 1/60: DNB, 33, p. 384. For Lenthall's officers in 1/2/60 see CJ vii, p. 829.
283 CJ vii, p. 829.
284 Ibid vii, p. 838.

8th Regiment[285]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Sir Arthur Haselrig	Succeeded briefly by Lt. Col. Mayer in 12/59. Replaced permanently by Mayer in mid 3/60[286]|
Lt. Col.	John Mayer	Col. 3/60. Replaced by Major Bannister|
Major	Peter Bannister	Capt. in the regt. Replaced John Topping as major 1/60 and then Mayer as lt. col. in c. 3/60[287]|
Captains	Jeremiah Tolhurst	Continued as capt. Reinstated as major in c. 3/60|
	Nicholas Loyzhier	
	William Elmes	
	Robert Anderson	Prob. former capt. 11th regt. F. Succeeded Capt. Levin. In post before 25/2/60| Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Thomas Mayer 5/3/60|
	William Dyke?	Lt. to Capt. Peter Bannister. Capt. before 25/2/60|
	Christopher Orde	XXX. Capt. on 15/2/60.[288] |
	James Raymond	Lt. to Capt. John Mason 7/59. In charge of Major Topping's former co. before 25/2/60| Succeeded by Capt. Cuthbert Studholme after 25/2/60, who was succeeded by Capt. Tongue on 26/3/60[289]|
Capt. Lt.	Peter Newman	XXX Succeeded Edward Toll in 1/60[290]| Gone by 4/60|

285 Changes made to this regiment at Newcastle by Monck in 1/60 are recorded in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 14.
286 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Pubicus 15-22/3/60.
287 Bannister was major by late 12/59: Chequers Ms 782, unfol. He may also have been briefly lieutenant colonel of the regiment during Mayer's first stint as colonel: MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards* i, p. 83.
288 See above p. 153.
289 Studholme had served in the Carlisle garrison ten years earlier. For this see above p. 59.
290 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 14.

9th Regiment (A)[291]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Mosse	
Lt. Col.	Nicholas Andrews	Still in place 2/4/60|
Major	Thomas Higgs	Removed 25/2/60. |
Captains	William Pride	
	William Galhampton	Major after 25/2/60|
	Henry Crispe	
	Edward Patten	
	William Lockley	Lt. to Lt. Col. Andrews|
	Thomas Rumbelow	Lt. to Capt. Galhampton|
	Richard Boone	Formerly lt. to Capt. Parker 5th regt. F. [292]|
Capt. Lt.	Robert Suckett	Lt. to Capt. Kemp. Succeeded by John Chapman in 25/2/60|

291 Taken to be disloyal, the regiment was disbanded by Monck much earlier than most, but the reason given was that it was an economy measure: F. and D.
292 BL, Thomason Tracts, The Publick Intelligencer 6-13/2/60.

9th Regiment (B)[293]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Mosse	Commissioned 25/2/60|
Lt. Col.	Nicholas Andrews	Commissioned 25/2/60. Still in post in 2/4/60| Not re-employed in the army after the disbandment|
Major	William Galhampton	Still capt. 25/2/60|
Captain	Henry Crispe	Commissioned 25/2/60| Transferred to the 22nd regt. F. after disbandment|
	William Pride	Ditto| Transferred apparently to the 6th regt. F. after 25/2/60|
	William Lockley	Ditto| Not re-employed after the disbandment|
	Thomas Rumbelow	Ditto| Ditto|
	Richard Boone	Ditto| Ditto|
	Hugh Dodgin	Ditto. Formerly of the 26th regt. F. Replaced Capt. Patten[294]| Ditto|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	John Chapman	Replaced Robert Suckett 25/2/60. Ens. to Lt. Col. Andrews|

Regiment disbanded in 4/60

293 The second list is that of the regiment in 25/2/60 in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter M. There is no indication in the commissions' book that any changes in the company commanders took place before disbandment.
294 Dodgin had previously been captain in the 26th regiment of foot.

10th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Fleetwood	Col. Buckinghamshire militia. Replaced John Biscoe 1/2/60[295]|
Lt. Col.	William Style	
Major	Benjamin Gifford	Capt. in the regt. On 10/2/60 Gifford replaced Henry Gold who had been appointed on 1/2/60[296]|
Captains	John Style	John Dober's co. originally but he was transferred to 30th regt. F. Style was reinstated on 8/2/60[297]|
	Daniel Nicholls	Replaced by Capt. John Northend 25/2/60|
	Thomas Baxter	Lt. to Capt. Groome 6/59|

	Arthur Challinor	XXX
	Thomas Hay	XXX
	William Turner	Capt. 6th regt. F. Succeeded Capt. Gifford| Removed in 25/2/60 to create a vacancy for Phillip Eyton, a former captain[298]|
	Richard Boult	XXX
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Andrews	

295 F. and D.
296 CJ vii, p. 839.
297 Ibid, p. 837.
298 See above p. 155 and Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter F.

11th Regiment[299]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Hughes	Major in the regt. Succeeded Col. Wilkes in 12/59 who Monck considered to have been won over by Lambert[300]|
Lt. Col.	Robert Read	Despite his Baptist connections he was still in post on 17/2/60|
Major	Richard Clifton	Capt. in the regt. Major c.12/59. In post 17/2/60[301]|
Captains	**William Collinson**	Not mentioned after 12/59 but not known to have deserted Monck[302]|
	William Newman	
	Timothy Langley	Lt. Col. 23rd regt. F. c. 2/60|
	Thomas Hunt	In post 17/2/60|
	Robert Forster	Lt. to Capt. Hughes in 4/55. Took over Clifton's co. when Clifton took over Hughes's on becoming major[303]|
	Benjamin Jackson	Lt. to Capt. Collinson[304]|
	Thomas Ellis??	Lt. to Capt. Knowles 9/59[305]|
Capt. Lt.	Edmund Parsons	XXX[306]

299 The regimental list is given in ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 11. A letter sent from Scotland on 17/2/60 was signed by six of the company commanders in post in 1659 – Thomas Hughes, Robert Read, Richard Clifton, Timothy Langley, William Newman, and Thomas Hunt: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer 12-19/3/60.
300 Clarke Papers iv, p. 158.
301 Ibid iv, pp. 197-9.
302 Collinson was described as senior captain of the regiment in 12/59: Clarke Papers iv, p. 157.
303 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 1/4/55; Clarke Papers iv, p. 198.
304 CSPD 1659-60, p. 203. Jackson's name appears in the company commanders' section of the letter sent from Scotland on 17/2/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 12-19/3/60.
305 CSPD 1659-60, p. 203. Ellis's name also appears on the letter but below that of Edmund Parsons, the regiment's captain lieutenant.
306 A Major Edmund Parsons was involved in repairs at the Leith citadel in 1653, and was presumably an engineer: Chequers Ms 782, 2/53, 4/53. This Edmund was probably a son or nephew.

12th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Streeter	Controller of the Train of Artillery 9/8/59[307]|
Lt. Col.	George Weldon	Prob. the Capt. George Weldon who served in the 8th regt. F. c.11/45-5/47[308]|
Major	Edward Hoare	
Captains	Robert Smith	Major 25/2/60|
	John Hardier	
	John Newton	
	Morgan Powell	XXX Commissioned 12/1/60|
	Michael Bland	XXX Ditto|
	Alexander Fry	Lt. to Capt. Edward Turner. Commissioned 12/1/60|

	Israel Bolton	Ex capt. lt. of the regt. Commissioned as full capt. 12/1/60|
Capt. Lt.	Matthew Scott	Lt. to Capt. Smith 6/59. Commissioned 12/1/60|

307 CJ vii, p. 754. For his opposition to the expulsion of the Long Parliament in 1653, see F. and D., p. 415.
308 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 58, 69, 79.

14th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	William Eyres	Former Leveller. Replaced by Thomas Birch 25/2/60[309]|
Lt. Col.	Jeremiah Campfield	Removed 25/2/60. Succeeded by Major Skipper[310]|
Major	Christopher Skipper	Succeeded by Capt. Bradshaw|
Captains	Edward Bradshaw	
	Thomas Fryer	
	Thomas Axtell	
	Isaac Hague	
	John Lakin	Lt. to Major Elton in the regt.|
	Cuthbert Carr	Lt. 29th regt. F. 8/59[311]| Capt. 1st regt. F. late 4/60. Succeeded as capt. in 14th regt. by William Elward, a former capt.|
	William Cash/Cosh	Lt. to Major Skipper[312]|
Capt. Lt.	Joseph Cleaver	XXX. Replaced by John Young, formerly lt. to Capt. Lambert on 25/2/60|

309 F. and D.
310 Just before the Fourth Army Coup in 10/59 Parliament commissioned Campfield as colonel, Skipper as lieutenant colonel and Bradshaw as major, but all reverted to their previous ranks to make room for Colonel Eyres early in 1660: BL, Thomason Tracts, The Loyal Scout 9-14/10/59; CJ vii, pp. 797, 816-17.
311 CSPD 1659-60, p. 121.
312 There was a Lieutenant Cosh in the Northern Brigade in 12/48: YML, Hailstone Ms BB 53, unfol.

15th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Arthur Evelyn	Commander of Parliament's Lifeguard. Succeeded Col. Salmon after 12/59|
Lt. Col.	Devis Pepper[313]	
Major	William Walters	
Captains	Richard Wisdom	
	Thomas Cooke	
	Thomas Ward	
	Brett Elie	Ex capt. lt.|
	William Sadlington? [314]	Ex lt. to Major Pepper[315]|
	Samuel Price?	Prob. capt. Oliver Cromwell's regt. H. Ireland 1/50[316]|
	John Drake?	Prob. transferred from the 21st regt. F.|
Capt. Lt.	Gervase Harestaffe?	Lt. to Capt. George Westby in the regt.|

313 For the company commanders in early 4/60, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 11-18/4/60.
314 The four officers with question marks after their names were commissioned by Monck in 25/2/60, but were probably in post from 1/60 onwards: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter E. As the regiment was stationed in the north of England, it would have been remodelled by Monck, not by Parliament, in early 1660.
315 CJ vii, p. 683.
316 Price took responsibility for the pay of the first division of Cromwell's double regiment but need not necessarily have been a troop commander: TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 95.

16th Regiment[317]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fairfax	
Lt. Col.	John Rogers	Formerly capt. in the regt. |Succeeded Lt. Col. Lagoe|
Major	Rene Bailly	Ditto| Succeeded Major Davison|
Captains	Thomas Sutton	
	Francis Sergeant	Formerly lt. of Sutton's co. Given Capt. Pym's co.|
	Robert Dineley	Lt. to Capt. Poole 8/59.[318] Given Capt. Poole's co.|
	Gregory Constable	Ens. in the regt. 9/55[319]. Given Lt. Col. Lagoe's co.|
	Thomas Ambler	Lt. to the former Capt. Wilkinson[320]. Succeeded Capt. Green, prob. capt. Dr. in Scotland in the mid-50s, [321] who had succeeded Capt. Hartley|
	John Fairfax	Lt. to Lt. Col. Style 10th regt. F. 6/59. Succeeded Capt. Thomas White who was appointed c. 11/59[322]|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	William Riley?[323]	

317 The company commanders in post in 2/60 are listed in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 6. It is most likely that Monck had commissioned them in 11/59.
318 The last five captains' names are given in BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 19-26/2/60. A Captain Dineley had served in Fairfax's regiment before 12/50, but possibly before it was in the New Model Army: TNA, E121/4/1/30, entries 430-1.
319 Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
320 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fos. 6, 42.
321 HMC, Portland Ms i, p. 154.
322 Ibid; CJ vii, p. 682.
323 It is possible that William Riley, in post in 4/60, was already captain lieutenant, but his signature comes amongst the lieutenants in a resolution taken by the regiment in late 2/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 27/2-5/3/60.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Read	
Lt. Col.	James Mutlow	Formerly major. Replaced John Clobury|
Major	Sylam Callant	Formerly capt. in the regt.|
Captains	George Everard	
	Miles Meredith	D. before the disbandment. Not in 25/2/60 or 4/60 list, but prob. too ill to be active|
	John Dirdo	
	William Yardley	In post in 11/50.[324] Gone before 25/2/60. Replaced by Capt. Lt. Winthrop|
	Anthony Belcham	Formerly capt. lt. 11th regt. F. Full capt. in this regt.by 12/59[325]|
	John Street	Capt. Lt. in this regt. in 9/59[326]|
	Ralph Bernard?	Capt. Lt. 25th regt. F. in 7/59. Capt. in this regt. by 1/4/60, but possibly earlier[327]|
Capt. Lt.	**John Winthrop**	Lt. to Lt. Col. Clobury 9/59. Capt. Lt. 21/12/59[328]. Full capt. 25/2/60 or earlier|
Possibles Capt. Lt.	Francis Young	Lt. to Capt. Callant 3/54 and 9/59[329]. In post in 25/2/60 succeeding John Winthrop|

324 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 6.
325 R. Baker, A *Chronicle of the Kings of England (1665), p. 687.*
326 Street is likely to have become full captain when Winthrop was commissioned as captain lieutenant on 21/12/59: F. and D. As such he would have replaced Captain Gosnell or Captain Hunt, though neither appears to have been actively opposed to Monck in 10/59.
327 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1); Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
328 F. and D.
329 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 6-13/4/54; CJ vii, p. 781; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter R. A Sergeant Francis Young

had been in Lieutenant Colonel Cobbett's company in the 5th regiment of foot c. 1648: TNA, E 121/2/11/17A, entry 204.

18th Regiment[330]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Morgan	Col. Dr. Succeeded Col. Pearson, a Lambert loyalist|
Lt. Col.	Joseph Witter	Capt. in the regt.|
Major	Edward Freer	Capt. in the regt.|
Captains	James Thompson	
	William Atkinson	Ens. to Capt Hales and succeeded him[331]|
	Elias Cooper	Briefly capt. lt. in the 20th regt. F.|
	Thomas Rennalds	Lt. to Capt. Newman 11th regt. F. 8/59. Possibly capt. in the regt. in 58|
	Roger Delves	Lt. to Capt. Francis Aldersey in this regt. 8/59|
	John Bardesley	Ens. to Capt. Joseph Witter 8/59|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	John Page	Succeeded Edward Bathoe. Ens. in the col's co. 7/59|
Additional Cos.		
Captains	George Traherne	Ex Thomas Southern's co. 25th regt. F.|
	Robert Laverock	Ex William Figes's co. ditto|
	Richard Lowry	Ex capt. in the 19th regt. F.|

330 At least five of the company commanders were removed by Monck as evidenced by the list of officers dating from late 1659 or very early 1660: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fol. 16. The three additional companies were described as marching with Morgan's regiment.
331 Ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 16.

19th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Miles Mann	Formerly lt. col. in the regt.|
Lt. Col.	John Hills	Formerly major in the regt.|
Major	George Bateman	Formerly capt. in the regt.|
Captains	Edward Ersbury	
	Anthony Wilkes	
	Richard Lowry	Marching with the 18th regt. F.|
	William Browne	
	John Mann	Transfer to the 22nd regt. F. by 1/60|
	Edward Mann	Lt. to Lt. Col. Mann. Apparently took over the co. that had been Langrish's and then Bee's[332]|
	Henry Rothwell	Lt. in the regt.[333] Took over Col. Smith's co.|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Pinnock	Ens. to Lt. Col. Mann 9/59. Capt. Lt. c. 12/59[334]|

332 Ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter M gives his first name as John, not as Edward.
333 Ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 13. Lieutenant Rothwell was an officer who was to have been removed from the regiment in 9/59: CSPD 1659-60, p. 183.
334 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 13.

20th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck	
Lt. Col.	Ethelbert Morgan	Senior capt. in the regt. Promoted 10/59|
Major	Francis Nicholls	Capt. in the regt.|
Captains	William Downes	

	John Miller	Capt. 11th regt. F. Succeeded Benjamin Groome[335] |
	Robert Wintour	Capt. Lt. in the regt. Took over Capt. Parker's co.|
	Thomas Mansfield	Lt. to Capt. Francis Nicholls. Took over Lt. Col. Gough's co. [336]|
	John Mutlow	Officer in the 17th regt. F. Took over Capt. George Walton's co.|
	John Collins	Ex 11th regt. F.[337] Took over Capt. Hatchman's co.|
	John Peters	Lt. to Capt. Stone 21st regt. F. Presumably given the co. formerly Major Holmes's which was to have gone to Robert Carter|
Capt. Lt.	John Paynter	Lt. to Capt. Morgan's co. in this regt. Succeeded Elias Cooper[338]|

335 Miller, Wintour, Mansfield and Collins were all company commanders by 12/59: Baker, *Chronicle*, p. 686.
336 Mansfield was captain by 12/59: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.
337 BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 31/10-7/11/59; F. and D., p. 541.
338 Paynter was lieutenant to Ethelbert Morgan in 7/59 and captain lieutenant in 11/59: CJ vii, p. 742; Davies, *Coldstream Guards*, p. 127; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter M.

21st Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Hubblethorne	Major early in 59, then capt., then reinstated as major. Lt. Col. 10/59. Col. 12/59 in succession to Talbot|
Lt. Col.	James Emerson	Formerly capt. Removed c. 5/59. Reinstated by Monck as major 10/59. Lt. Col. 12/59|
Major	John Clarke	Formerly capt. in the regt. Major by 12/59|
Captains	**Edmund Lister**	In post in 12/59| Gone by 25/2/60[339]|
	David/Daniel Francis	Lt. to Capt. Pledger. Succeeded Capt. Poole. In post by 1/60[340]|
	Richard Miller	Lt. 27/9/59. Capt. Lt. 10/59.[341]|
	Joseph Fellows	Lt. to Lt. Col. Gough 20th regt. F.[342] First capt. lt. and then replaced Capt. John Hargreave 11/59|
	Joseph Seymer	Lt. to Capt. Lister but did not succeed him. In post by 12/59[343]|
	Thomas Gwillym	Capt. 58. Lt. 59. Restored as capt. c. 11/59| Gone by 25/2/60. Succeeded by William Gudding his lt.|
	John Huitson	Demoted from full capt. to lt. to Capt. Hubblethorne 27/9/59. Restored by Monck c. 10/59[344]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Gullock	In post c. 2/60. Formerly lt. to Major Hubblethorne[345]|

339 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 10. Lister was one of the three officers sent by Monck to London to discuss a truce with Lambert all of whom changed sides when they arrived there. He was almost certainly the Edmund Littler who signed the letter of Lambert's supporters to Monck penned on 29/11/59: Clarke Papers iv, pp. 146-7.
340 MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards* i, p. 83.
341 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 10.
342 CJ vii, p. 742; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 10.
343 CJ vii, p. 787; Baker, *Chronicle*, p. 688.
344 Huitson signed the letter sent from Monck's supporters in Scotland to Lambert's at Newcastle on 1/12/59: Clarke Papers iv, p. 178.
345 Gullock's predecessors had been David Francis, Richard Miller and Joseph Fellows: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 10, 14; ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter H.

22nd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Fitch	Col. 5th regt. F. Replaced Charles Fleetwood. Succeeded by Thomas Sheffield 23/4/60|
Lt. Col.	Samuel Gooday[346]	
Major	Christopher Copperthwaite	Major 16th regt. F. 51-52|
Captains	Richard Holt	Gone by 4/60. Possibly transferred to another regt.[347]|
	William Burnell	
	William Sharpe	
	John Mann	Ens. to Lt. Col. Mann 19th regt. F. in 3/59[348]| Gone by 4/60. Succeeded by Capt. Bee[349]|
	Abraham Spooner	Ex capt.in 19th regt. F. in Scotland and in the 5th regt. F.| Gone by 4/60|
	Jonathan Hooper	XXX
	Jeremiah Hand	Ens. to Capt. Disney 10th regt. F. before 51 and lt. to Capt. Draper in 9/51.[350] Officer in Ireland late 58[351]| Gone by 4/60|
Capt. Lt.	Edmund Ellis	

346 A man of this name was colonel of the Norfolk Militia regiment of foot in 2/50 and previously major of the 1st regiment of foot 45- 5/47: CSPD 1650-51, p. 504; Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 65.
347 A Richard Holt appears as a lieutenant colonel in the list of officers attesting their loyalty to the new king on 2/5/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5).
348 Chequers, Ms 782, unfol.; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 13
349 There seem at first sight to have been two Captains John Mann, but possibly Mann was nominated for a position in the 22nd regiment of foot but did not take it up. Instead he swopped places with Captain Bee of the 19th regiment of foot.
350 TNA, E 121/3/5/25, fos. 79-80; CSPD 1651, p. 435.
351 T. Larcom, *The Cromwellian Survey of Ireland* commonly called the *Down Survey* (Dublin, 1851), pp. 265-7.

23rd Regiment[352]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Yaxley Robson	Formerly senior capt. in the regt. and then major|
Lt. Col.	Vacancy[353]	
Major	Edward Lunn	Capt. in this regt.[354]|
Captains	XXX	Robert Lytcott took over Leonard Lytcott's co. c. 11/59| Transferred to the 24th regt. F. by 25/2/60[355]|
	Thomas Lloyd	Prob. former ensign in 17th regt. F., he took over Capt. John Parker's co.|
	Kept vacant	Formerly Capt. Thomas Spencer's co.|
	John Hickson	Lt. to Major Crispe|
	John Fenning	Lt. to Capt. Robson|
	William Davies[356]	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	William Moore	Ens. to Col. Sawrey 9/59. In post before 25/2/60|

352 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 12.
353 Captain Timothy Langley of the 11th regiment of foot F. was commissioned as lieutenant colonel on 25/2/60: ibid, fo. 46.
354 For the changes made by Monck in 11/59, see ibid, fo. 12. There is no list of the company commanders after that date.
355 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 12; ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter L.
356 Ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 46.

24th Regiment[357]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Leonard Lytcott	Capt. in the regt. but formerly col. H. in the NMA|
Lt. Col.	Richard Hatt	In post in 10/59. Former capt. in the regt. removed in 7/59|
Major	James Dennis	Former capt. 25th regt. F. Removed 7/59| Major 17th regt. H. c. 3/60. Succeeded by Capt. Marvell|
Captains	Humphrey Mason	Recommissioned 25/2/60. Gone by 4/60|
	Thomas Thompson	
	John Holbrook[358]	Lt. to Major Robert Cobbett 9/59. Full capt. 11/59|
	Thomas Woodward	Former capt. lt. in the regt.Took over Capt. Broadhurst's co.|
	Anthony Taylor	XXX
	William Kent	Lt. to Capt. Roger Jones. Gone by 25/2/60. Succeeded by Capt. Marvell[359]|
	Robert Lytcott	Capt. 23rd regt. F|
Capt. Lt.	Jasper Weare	Ens. col's co. 9/59. Succeeded Thomas Woodward|
Independent co? Captain	Gideon Fisher	Formerly Major Dorney's co. of the 2nd regt. F.[360]|

357 All the company commanders except Major Dennis are named in ibid, fo. 9. The list dates from late January or early February 1660.
358 Holbrook, Woodward, Taylor, Marvell, Lytcott and Weare were in post in 25/2/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter L.
359 By late February 1660 Kent was stationed at Newcastle with companies of the 26th regiment of foot: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 12-19/3/60.
360 See above, pp. 116, 185.

25th Regiment[361] 1st Battalion	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Overton	Removed as col. and gov. of Hull 6/3/60[362]| Succeeded by 17/3/60 by William Daniel ex col. 18th regt. F. removed by Parliament in 7/59|
Lt. Col.	John Nary	At Hull in early 3/60[363]| Succeeded by the former major Michael Richardson prob. at the same time as Daniel replaced Overton|
Major	John Northend	Capt. Scarborough garr. Former capt. 27th regt. F.|
Captains	Michael Bacon	
	John Overton	Capt. Hull garr.|
	John Ramsey	Capt. Lt. 9/59. In post at Hull 2/60[364]|
Capt. Lt.	Robert Saunders	Lt. 27th regt. F. 59. Cashiered before 25/2/60|

361 The list of the first battalion was compiled just before 25/2/60 when it was with Overton in Hull. The other four companies had been in Scotland with Monck and were 'remodelled' in or soon after 10/59. The commanders of the companies in Hull signed a letter to Monck in late 2/60 just prior to Overton' s being cashiered: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 5-12/3/60.
362 CJ vii, p. 864.
363 CSPD 1659-60, p. 389.
364 Clarke Papers iv, p. 266.

2nd Battalion[365]		
Captains	George Traherne	Lt. to Capt. Southern, who he prob. succeeded [366]
	Francis Rawson	
	Stephen Blythe	In charge of Capt. Quick's former co.[367]
	Ralph Bernard	Formerly capt. lt. Promoted to full capt. by Monck c. 10/59. 17th regt. F. by 1/4/60[368]

365 There are two lists of the second battalion in the Clarke Manuscripts. I have reproduced the later of the two here. The earlier one gives the names of Rawson, Southern and Bernard with Blythe succeeding Captain Quick and Laverock succeeding Captain Robert Scrope: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fos. 17, 52. Scrope had refused to support Monck in 11/59: F. and D. Captain Edward Freer mentioned by F. and D. was no longer in the regiment. For Robert Laverock, see p. 125 above.
366 CJ vii, p. 743; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 52.
367 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 17. Blythe was possibly first selected for a captaincy in the 17th regiment of foot: ibid, fo. 6. This suggests he may have been a lieutenant in that regiment, but he was in fact the surgeon of the 25th regiment: CJ vii, p. 742. For his succeeding Captain Quick see above p. 109.
368 See above pp. 100, 126, and below p. 159.

26th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Robert Gibbon	
Lt. Col.	Henry Needler	Transferred to 31st regt. F. Replaced by Richard Yardley on 25/2/60[369]
Major	John Chamberlain	Replaced by George Annersley on 25/2/60
Captains[370]	John Gibbon	
	Mark Grime	Replaced by Capt. Lt. Masterson 25/2/60
	Robert Heath[371]	
	John Corker	
	Lionel Lingwood	
	Thomas Wright	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	Jeremiah Masterson	Full capt. 25/2/60. Succeeded by Jervis Jeffries, capt. 5th regt. F. before 5/59, quickly followed by Arthur Arscott[372]

369 Yardley was captain on Jersey in 4/58 when Gibbon was governor: CSPD 1657-8, p. 367.
370 All the full captains were removed by Monck on 25/2/60: F. and D.
371 The regiment was not remodelled by Parliament in early 1660, and so it is not clear if the five captains were still in post in 2/60. F. and D. imply that they were.
372 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 20-30; ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter G. Jeffries came under Monck's jurisdiction after his forces had occupied Newcastle where at least two of the companies of the 26th regiment were in garrison in 3/60. For this see BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 12-19/3/60.

27th Regiment[373]	**Name**	**Military career**

373 See p. 126 above.

28th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Samuel Clarke	In post on 17/2/60[374]
Lt. Col.	William Legard	Ditto
Major	Samuel Batterly	Ditto
Captains	John Baker	
	Edward Claypole	In post on 17/2/60
	Evan Harris	
	William Moore	
	William Richardson	At Durham in 2/60[375]. Possibly transferred to the 26th regt. F.

	John Manning	In post on 17/2/60|
	Edmund Geary	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	John Clarke	Ditto|

374 The officers with 17/2/60 against their names signed the letter from the regiments in Scotland of that date, which was printed in the issue of Parliamentary Intelligencer for 12-19/3/60. Baker, Harris and Moore did not sign, but they were in post as their companies were disbanded in 11/60. For this see below p. 165.
375 HMC, Leybourne-Popham Mss, p. 159.

29th Regiment[376]		

376 The regiment was disbanded in 1/60: F. and D.

Regiments raised in late 1659 / early 1660

30th Regiment[377]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Nathaniel Whetham	Gov. of Portsmouth|
Lt. Col.	Thomas Hurst	Capt. in the garr. at Portsmouth 7/59[378]|
Major	Abraham Peters	Lt. to Major Murford, deputy gov. of Portsmouth 7/59[379]|
Captains	John Dober	Lt. to Capt. Hurst in the Portsmouth garr. in 7/59.[380] Originally chosen for the 10th regt. F.|
	Samuel Biggs	XXX
	Thomas Newberry	Former storekeeper at Portsmouth[381]|
	John Clarke	Possibly lt. in Capt. John Redman's co. in the Northampton garrison in 5/46 when Whetham was garr. commander|
	Robert Thornton/ Thorneycroft	XXX
	William Davies	XXX. Gone by 25/2/60[382]|
	XXX Horsley	XXX. Ditto. Prob. transferred to 26th regt. F.|
Capt. Lt.	Peter Petite/Petis	Ens. to Capt. Hurst in the garr. at Portsmouth 7/59[383]| Gone by 25/2/60. Succeeded by Richard Goodwin|

377 The company commanders' names are given in CJ vii, p. 838.
378 A Captain Thomas Hurst was associated with the garrison at Portsmouth in 1656 and 7/59: CSPD 1655-6, p. 386; CJ vii, p. 730.
379 Ibid, p. 724. See below p. 166 for Major Peter Murford's garrison service in Hampshire.
380 Ibid,
381 Ibid,
382 Davies and Horsley were succeeded by Captains Francis Izod and Dorney in 25/2/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter W. There is a possibility that this was the final posting for Francis Dorney of the 2nd regiment of foot.
383 CJ vii, p. 724.

31st Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	William Farley	Farley became col. in 12/59. He was reinstated as lt. col. of the 1st regt. F. on 1/2/60. Succeeded as col. by John Fagg, col. of the Sussex militia, on 25/2/60|
Lt. Col.	Henry Needler	Former lt. col. 26th regt. F.|
Major	Richard Scott[384]	XXX
Captains	Thomas Pride	Former capt. 9th regt. F. removed in 7/59|
	XXX Corney	XXX
	Hannibal Vivian?[385]	Capt. in 25/2/60. Formerly capt. 10th regt. F.|
	Nathanial Harrison?	Ditto. Formerly lt. in the 26th regt. F.[386]|
	Benjamin Rudyard?	Ditto. Formerly lt. 10th regt. F.|
	Richard Gwyn?	Ditto. Ex lt. to Capt. Corker 26th regt. F.|

	Thomas Broxton?	XXX
Capt. Lt.	Francis Arundel	XXX

384 Farley, Scott, Pride, Corney and Arundel were involved in putting down a riot in London in 1/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 9-16/1/60. Corney's replacement by 25/2/60 was Moore Faultleroy: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 49.
385 The first four captains with question marks after their names were in post in 25/2/60 and in early 4/60. The fifth's name only appears in the list of 4/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1); Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter F.
386 CJ vii, p. 730.

Cavalry

1st Regiment[387]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Sir Arthur Haselrig	Succeeded Packer in 12/59. Removed 20/4/60[388]|
Major	John Browne	Formerly major in the regt. Left before 5/51|
Captains	John Spencer	Prob. removed before 30/4/60[389]|
	Thomas Goddard	Capt. 10th regt. H. to 5/49[390]|
	Peter Backhouse	Capt. Staffordshire Militia H. 8/59[391]| Succeeded by his cor. Timothy Clowdisley on 26/4/60|
	Robert Haselrig	Capt. H. Northumberland militia 1/9/59. Not in the regt. in 6/59. Sided with Lambert in late 4/60 and dismissed| Succeeded by Capt. Thomas Howard[392]|
Capt. Lt.	Samuel Palmer	Removed, prob. on 26/4/60. Succeeded by Capt. Backhouse [393]|

387 The names given here do not include changes made by Monck immediately after he became captain general in late February. The list that appears in his commissions' book under letter H dates from late April at the earliest. For this see below p. 168.
388 Clarke Papers iv, p. 303; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 19-26/4/60.
389 Given Spencer's staunchly republican background it seems most likely that Monck would have removed him on or soon after 25/2/60: See above p. 67.
390 Alexander Blake was first recommended to succeed Hunter. Goddard's commission was approved on 13/1/60: CJ vii, p. 810-11.
391 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 15; CJ vii, p. 772.
392 Ibid vii, p. 713; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter H.
393 Ibid, letter H.

3rd Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Matthew Alured	Removed 26/4/60.[394] Edward Montagu reinstated|
Major	John Nelthorpe	Former capt. 5th regt. H. and Adj. Gen. H. [395]| Replaced by Major Hart who was reinstated on 26/4/60. By then Nelthorpe was once again adj. gen.[396]|
Captains	Thomas Ingoldsby	
	Benjamin Oakshott	Disliked as capt. in 8/59. Re-appointed by 1/60. Removed 9/4/60. Replaced by Richard Winsmore, cor. 6th regt. H., who was replaced by William Clitheroe 25/4/60[397]|
	Christopher Alured	XXX. Commissioned in 10/59. Removed 9/4/60. Succeeded by John Clayton|
	James Strangeways	Capt. F. in Flanders 7/59.[398] Replaced John Coppleston 10/59| Removed 25/3/60 when Coppleston was reinstated, but transferred to the 22nd regt. F. as major[399]|
Capt. Lt.	John Green	Cor. to the col's troop. Capt. Lt. 10/2/60|

394 The colonel's and the major's troops had sided with Lambert in 4/60 apparently without the knowledge of their commanders. Nevertheless both were dismissed immediately afterwards: F. and D.
395 See above p. 51.
396 BL, Thomason Tracts 669 f25 (5).
397 F. and D.
398 F. and D.
399 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letters A and F.

4th Regiment[400]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper	Army Officer 1st Civil War. Commissioned to succeed Fleetwood 11/1/60|
Major	Thomas Izod	Ex capt. 14th regt. H.[401]|
Captains	Richard Walton	In post in 25/2/60| Gone by 25/4/60. Succeeded by Peter Betsworth[402]|
	Anthony Yardley	Prob. lt. to Capt. John Salt in the Irish army[403]|
	Hugh Parry	Lt. in the regt. Preferred to Peter Betsworth in 1/61[404]|
	Edmund Warcup	XXX
Capt. Lt.	Nathaniel Phillips	Replaced by Maurice Berkeley in c. 29/2/60[405]|

400 All of the officers appear to have been new apart from Hugh Parry and Nathaniel Phillips: CJ vii, p. 817. However, this may not have been so. A list of junior officers for the regiment does not exist for the summer of 1659. Walton and Warcup may therefore have already been in the regiment. See also above p. 11.
401 Monck thus restored Izod to the regiment in which he had previously been a troop commander. This mark of favour was repaid in full by Izod's conduct in the run-up to the restoration of the monarchy: F. and D.
402 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter A.
403 TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 65; HMC, Marquis of Ormond Mss ns iii, p. 416. A man of this name was lieutenant to Captain John Salt in Colonel Pretty's regiment of horse in Ireland from 1/53 to 9/59 when he was presumably discharged in the purge of Cromwellians authorised by the restored Long Parliament.
404 CJ vii, pp. 719, 817. Betsworth had previously been governor of Calshot Castle in Kent: TNA, SP 28/108, fo. 521.
405 BL, Thomason Tracts, Publick Intelligencer 27/2-5/3/60.

5th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Clobury	Succeeded Twistleton in 12/59. Formerly lt. col. 17th regt. F.|
Major	Jeremiah Smith	Capt. in the 8th regt. H. Succeeded Major Cambridge in 12/59[406]|
Captains	Thomas Deane	
	Giles Barnardiston	Lt. to Capt. Beale whom he succeeded in 10/59[407]|
	John Hill	XXX Took over Capt. Ashby's troop[408]|
	Thomas Munn/Mynn	Formerly lt. to Major Cambridge, whom he succeeded as troop commander[409]|
Capt. Lt.	Hugh Polden	

406 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 2.
407 F. and D.
408 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 143; Clarke Papers iv, p. 272. This officer may be Lieutenant Colonel Hills of the 19th regiment of foot.
409 TNA, E 121/4/7/104, entry 5. Munn was in post in late 11/59: Clarke Papers iv, p. 158.

6th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Valentine Walton	Gov. of Kings Lynn. Col. non-NMA regt. F. Succeeded Disbrowe 12/59| Removed by early 4/60 at which time Charles Howard was named as col.[410]|
Major	Robert Huntington	Resigned as major of this regt. in 48[411]|
Captains	Edward Scotten	
	John Butler	XXX Succeeded Capt. Jenkins[412]|
	Stephen Hanbury/Henbury	Capt. Westminster Militia H. 8/59.Succeeded Capt. Wallington in 18/1/60[413]| Replaced by Theophilus Barnard on 25/2/60|
	John Phelps	Capt. Oxfordshire Militia H. 8/59. Succeeded Capt. Fox| Replaced by Major William Salkeld as capt. in mid 3/60[414]|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Southwood	Succeeded by Henry Jones before 4/60|

410 Other officers in post in early 4/60 were Huntington, Butler, Salkeld, Scotten, Barnard and Jones: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1).
411 Huntington had denounced Oliver Cromwell's political machinations to the House of Lords in the summer of 1648. His accusations

were not followed up and he was not victimised thereafter.
412 It is unlikely but not impossible that this was the Colonel Butler who commanded a cavalry regiment in the New Model Army between 1645 and 1647.
413 CJ vii, p. 732. Wallington's name was suggested in 12/1/60 but rejected by the House of Commons: ibid vii, pp. 810, 815.
414 Ibid vii, p. 773. BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 15-22/3/60.

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Nathaniel Rich	In post in 1/60. Replaced by Richard Ingoldsby who was restored to the colonelcy of the regt. in 25/2/60|
Major	John Breman	In post in 1/60. Replaced by Major Thomas Babbington c. 1/3/60[415]|
Captains	John Barker	
	Gabriel Hopkins	Commissioned 1/60. Former lt. in Major Duckett's troop and presumably succeeded him[416]|
	Timothy Clare/Cleare	Commissioned in 1/60. Lt. in Capt. Merriman's troop 2/3/55. Still lt. in the regt. in 7/59| In prison after 22/4/60 for supporting Lambert's uprising[417]|
	John Toomes	Ex capt. lt. in the regt.| Prob. removed when George Elsmore was reinstated in c. 1/3/60|
Capt. Lt.	John Gregory	Cor. in the regt. in 7/59| Removed c. 1/3/60 when Edward Parry was reinstated|

415 It is most likely that Breman, Toomes and Gregory were removed at the same time as Colonel Rich, but the list of the regiment in Monck's commissions' book used to compile this table does not have a date: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter I.
416 CJ vii, p. 715.
417 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 46, unfol. 2/3/55; F. and D.

8th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck	
Major	Thomas Johnson	Capt. in this regt. Replaced Ralph Knight who became col. of the 14th regt. H.|
Captains	Thomas Symnell	
	Peter Wilmot	In post in 11/59. Lt. to Capt. Jeremiah Smith, who had been promoted to major in the 5th regt. H.[418]|
	John Paddon	Previously lt. and then capt. in the 14th regt. H.[419]|
	Michael Richardson	Formerly major 25th regt. F. but removed by Parliament in 9/59| Succeeded by Anthony Nowens c. 4/60 when he was reappointed as lieutenant colonel of his former regiment[420]|
Capt. Lt.	Phillip Wilkinson	Cor. to the col's troop. Succeeded Capt. Lt. Coventry 24/12/59|

418 Wilmot was in post by 11/59: Baker, *Chronicle*, *p. 688.*
419 If F. and D. are right, he had only just been promoted to captain.
420 It is possible that Anthony Nowens was in charge of the troop as early as 12/59. For this, see MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards* i, p. 83 citing Thomas Gumble's biography of General Monck; Clarke Papers iv, p. 210.

9th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Saunders	Formerly col. 14th regt. H. Replaced Col. Swallow|
Major	Nathaniel Barton	Formerly major 14th regt. H. Replaced Thomas Chamberlain|
Captains	Daniel Dale	
	Robert Greenwood	Capt. Derbyshire Militia 50[421]|
	Samuel Doughty	XXX[422]|
	John Sherman	Lt. to Capt. Beale 5th regt. H. 7/59[423]|
Capt. Lt.	John Scott	XXX[424]|

421 TNA, SP 25/119, fo. 20. Greenwood had also served as captain of a troop in the 16th regiment of horse in the Scottish campaign of 1650-51. For this, see below p. 73. In 7/56 he was pursuing an out-of-date claim for pay arrears from service in the war against Scotland five years earlier: CSPD 1656-7, p. 4.
422 Doughty had been a captain of horse for four months during the Scottish campaign of 1650-1: ibid, 1658-9, p. 58. He was active in Derbyshire in the second half of 1659, but possibly not as a militia officer: CCC i, pp. 754, 773-4; CJ vii, p. 772.
423 Ibid vii, p. 724.
424 Scott was an officer in the army in 9/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Hugh Bethell	Succeeded John Lambert by 16/1/60. Col. H. Northern Brigade late 40s[425]
Major	William Goodrick	Major in this regt. to 5/59, he was reinstated by Monck on 6/1/60[426]
Captains	John Pockley[427]	
	John Hatfield	
	Walter Bethell	Lt to Capt. Nicholas Conyers 1/61[428]
	George Packe/Parke	Capt. lt. 14th regt. H. Full capt. in this regt. by 24/2/60[429]
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Spilman**	Succeeded by Christopher Bacon by 4/60[430]
Possible Captain	Ralph Waterhouse	Suggested by Monck as a troop commander in 1/60[431]

425 Clarke Papers iv, p. 253; HMC, Portland Mss i, p. 694.
426 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 116.
427 Monck and Parliament were in dispute over two of the troop commanders in 2/60. The four names given are those appointed by Monck on 25/2/60 after he became commander-in-chief: C.J. vii, p. 842; F. and D.
428 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 19. He was probably not the former major of the 2nd regiment of horse: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 61, 105.
429 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 3.
430 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1).
431 Clarke Papers iv, p. 253. Waterhouse is included in a list of the troop commanders in the regiment dating from 1/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 19.

13th Regiment[432]	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Smithson	Previously major of the regt.
Major	Thomas Strangeways	Capt. in the regt.|Succeeded by Thomas Lilburne in 25/2/60 and out of the regt. but major in 4/60
Captains	William Peverell	Removed 25/2/60[433]
	Francis Wilkinson	
	Thomas Lilburne	Former capt. in the regt. Restored by Monck 1/60. Major 25/2/60. Capt. again in 4/60
	William Wheatley	Lt. to Major Smithson in the regt. Took over Major Grove's troop
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Fairfax	Appointed first as lt. to Capt. Wycliffe in 1/60 and then as lt. 10th regt. F. on 17/2/60[434]

432 These were the troop commanders commissioned by Parliament on 8/2/60. On 25/2/60 Monck appointed Lilburne as major instead of Strangeways with Strangeways and Captain Peverell replaced by Captains William Rhodes and John Wycliffe. However, Monck had already remodelled the regiment in 1/60 with Major Strangeways and Captains Lilburne, Wilkinson, Wheatley and John Wycliffe as troop commanders and Thomas Smithson as the captain lieutenant: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 20. Nothing is known about Wycliffe's previous military career but Rhodes had been a captain of horse in the war with Scotland in 1650-1. He was first commissioned by Monck as a lieutenant in the 12th regiment of horse, but later attained a captaincy. For this see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter B, and above p. 172.
433 Peverell was described as commander of his troop in late 4/60 when it declared for John Lambert: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 23-30/4/60. This was incorrect. The report should have described the troop as formerly Captain Peverell's.
434 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 20; CJ vii, p. 829.

14th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Ralph Knight	Major in the 8th regt. H. Replaced Saunders 12/59
Major	Phillip Prime	In post by 21/12/59[435]
Captains	Thomas Coulson	
	William Goodwin	XXX Succeeded Capt. Izod[436]
	Henry Ogle[437]	
	Francis Hacker junior	Capt. Lt. in the regt. Took over Capt. Paddon's troop after 21/12/59[438]
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Bourne	Lt. 8th regt. H. 8/59[439]

435 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 2-9/1/60; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter K.
436 A William Goodwin had been ensign in the 9th regiment of foot in the late sixteen-forties: ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 12.
437 This troop was new to the regiment. It was raised in Northumberland possibly as late as 12/59: F. and D.
438 Captain Lieutenant Hacker took over what had been Paddon's troop well before 25/2/60 with George Packe and then Thomas Bourne succeeding him as captain lieutenant: Worc College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 3; ibid, Clarke Ms 53, Letter K.
439 CJ vii, p. 781.

15th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Francis Hacker	
Major	William Hubbard	
Captains	Clement Needham	
	Thomas Craddock	XXX
	Edward Shepherdson	Lt. in Robert Lilburne's regt. H. 1/48. Capt. in Haselrig's regt. H. in late 40s. Succeeded Capt. Elias Whalley 21/1/60[440]
	William Watts	Former capt. lt.
Capt. Lt.	John Finnis	Formerly lt. to Major Hubbard he succeeded William Watts[441]

440 Hill and Watkinson, *Sanderson's Diary*, pp. 19, 71; TNA, SP 28/50, fo. 200; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 25.
441 CSPD 1659-60, p. 225; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 26/4-3/5/60.

16th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Unton Croke	Major in the regt. Succeeded James Berry, a Lambert loyalist
Major	George Sedacue	Long-standing Adj. Gen. H.
Captains	Nathaniel Whetham jun.	XXX Presumably son of the gov. of Portsmouth
	David Gascoyne	Former lt. to Unton Croke
	Thomas Randall	Possibly Major Yellow Regt. London Militia 7/59[442]
	Noel Boteler	Formerly capt. lt.
Capt. Lt.	Charles Croke	Cor. in this regt. 8/59

442 CJ vii, p. 728.

17th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Okey	
Major	Richard Wagstaffe	Capt. in the regt.[443] Succeeded Major Daborne| Replaced by Major James Dennis of the 24th regt. F. after 11/2/60 and before 4/60|
Captains	Henry Cleare junior	
	Thomas Crowther	
	William Linley	Reinstated to command the troop initially assigned to William Eyres[444]|
	Richard Ward	Former capt. lt. in the regt.|
Capt. Lt.	Robert Rose	XXX

443 Wagstaffe was associated with Okey in an abortive attempt to seize the Tower of London in 12/59: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 9-16/12/59.
444 Linley replaced Eyres in 1/60 when Eyres became a colonel: CJ vii, p. 816. See also p. 137 above.

18th Regiment[445]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Morgan	
Major	John Farmer[446]	
Captains	**William Hellin**	
	John Ogle	Formerly lt. in 17th regt. H.[447]|
	John Wetmore	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt.[448]|
	Theophilus Farmer	XXX[449]|
Capt. Lt.	Francis Kelly	Lt. to Capt. Hellin in 7/59[450]. Capt. Lt. 60|

445 Morgan's regiment had been converted from dragoons into cavalry in 11/59: F. and D.
446 Farmer retained his post despite his troop having abandoned him at Carlisle when he tried to occupy the city in 11/59: F. and D; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 23-30/1/60, ibid, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 12-17/3/60. However, Gumble in his biography of General Monck has the officer involved in the embarrassing incident as Thomas Deane of the 8th regiment of horse, and he may well be correct.
447 CSPD 1659-60, p. 183. When Captain Robinson and his troop joined Lambert, this troop was drafted into the regiment from the Northumberland militia.
448 Wetmore and Farmer raised additional troops in 11/59 when the regiment was converted into cavalry.
449 Farmer had been lieutenant to Captain Watson in the 10th regiment of horse in the late 1640s: TNA, E 121/2/9/32, unnumbered. He does not appear to have subsequently served with the regiment in Ireland.
450 CSPD 1659-60, p. 203.

Lifeguard	Name	Military Career
Captain	Vacancy[451]	
Lieutenant	Vacancy[452]	

451 The captaincy was probably vacant after Evelyn's dismissal in 10/59. Lieutenant Cathness commanded the troop in 11/59, but as he sided with Lambert he must have been dismissed soon afterwards. Monck had given the vacant captaincy to Phillip Howard by 4/60: TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 291; F. and D.
452 The lieutenancy was vacant from the date of Cathness's dismissal until 25/2/60 when Monck gave the post to Robert Harley, captain in Sir William Waller's regiment of horse in 44-5, and then major in Edward Massey's regiment of horse until 10/46: F. and D.; Spring, *Waller's Army*, p. 147.

Company and Troop Commanders: Late April 1660 (A) and after (B)

Infantry

1st Regiment (A)	Name	Military career
Colonel[453]	Herbert Morley	Succeeded by the earl of Peterborough|
Lt. Col.	William Farley	Reduced to major in10/8/60|
Major	Thomas White	Reduced to capt. 10/8/60|
Captains	Henry Cleare senior	In post 9/4/60 as Capt. Henry Hare and recommissioned in 6/60| Not in the regt. in 10/8/60|
	Nicholas Shepherd	In post in 4/60 and in mid-8/60|
	William White	25/2/60. Not in the 9/4/60 list, but only six captains were named. Lt. to Capt. Mordaunt 10/8/60|
	Robert Goffe	In post 9/4/60 and recommissioned in 6/60| Lt. in the regt. 10/8/60|
	Richard Collinson	Ditto| Not in the regt. in 10/8/60|
	John Height	In post 4/60 and mid-8/60|
	Cuthbert Carr	Capt. 14th regt. F. Succeeded Capt. James Priest|
Capt. Lt.	William Greenaway	In post 9/4/60. Lt. to Capt. Sir Edward Richards by 10/8/60|

453 The names of the officers who were in post in in early April are given in BL, Thomason Tracts E 1021 (1) together with a Captain Francis Prest, who was probably James Priest. For the regimental lists of 25/2/60 and 10/8/60, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letters M, P.

1st Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Earl of Peterborough	In post in 10/8/60 with all the co. commanders below[454]|
Lt. Col.	Sir John Ogle	Replaced Lt. Col. Farley|
Major	William Farley	Formerly lt. col. in the regt.|
Captains	Thomas White	Formerly major in the regt.|
	Nicholas Shepherd	
	John Height	
	Cuthbert Carr	
	Edward Howard	XXX In post in 10/8/60 but not in 9/4/60 or 6/60[455]|
	XXX Mordaunt	XXX Ditto|
	Sir Edward Richards	XXX Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Benjamin Rudyard	Lt. 10th regt. F. 59. Capt. 31st regt. F. in 25/2/60[456]|

Regiment disbanded in 11/60

454 The names of all the commissioned officers in 10/8/60 are given in BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 16-23/8/60.

455 An Edward Howard was captain lieutenant in Colonel Alured's cavalry regiment in Scotland in 1650-1: TNA, SP 28/82, fo. 485.

456 Rudyard was lieutenant to Captain Vivian in the 10th regiment of foot in 6/59 and then full captain in the 31st regiment of foot in 4/60: CJ vii, p. 682; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter F.

5th Regiment (A)[457]	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Twistleton	Demoted to lt. col. on Massey's appointment 7/60|
Lt. Col.	Samuel Barry	Commissioned 25/2/60| Demoted to major 7/60[458]|
Major	Dennis Taylor	Demoted to senior capt. 7/60|
Captains	Thomas Soulton	
	William Parker	
	Anthony Weldon	
	William Seymour	Succeeded Capt. Sharpe|
	George Thompson	XXX|
	Dalston Shaftoe[459]	
	Joseph Cooke	Full capt. by 16/4/60[460]| Gone by 7/60|
Capt. Lt.	**Joseph Trevers**	In post in 16/4/60|Gone by 7/60|

457 A list of the regiment dated 25/2/60 appears in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter T but with only six captains. All the first named officers including Trevers signed the declaration of loyalty after Lambert's uprising apart from Shaftoe and Thompson: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 19-26/4/60. In a pledge of loyalty composed on 16/2/60 Trevers' signature comes between those of Captains Cordy and Weldon: ibid, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 5-12/3/60.

458 For a claim that he was not the Samuel Barry who served in the New Model Army cavalry in the late 1640s see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 95.

459 A Major Dalston Shaftoe offered to raise soldiers for General Monck in 12/59: Clarke Letters iv, p. 189.

460 BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 23-30/4/60.

5th Regiment (B)[461]		
Colonel	Sir Edward Massey	Commissioned 7/60|
Lt. Col.	GeorgeTwistleton	Ditto|
Major	Samuel Barry	Ditto|
Captains	Dennis Taylor	Ditto|
	William Parker	Recommissioned 7/60|
	Anthony Weldon	Ditto| Succeeded by John Ashurst 2/8/60[462]|
	William Seymour	Ditto|
	John Gainsford	XXX Commissioned 7/60. Took over Capt. Soulton's co.|
	Thomas Gladstone	XXX Ditto. Took over Capt. Thompson's co.|
	John Bowler	Lt. to Capt. Shaftoe and took over his co.|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Elton[463]	Ens. Col's co. 14th regt. F. In post in 2/8/60|

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

461 A full listing of the officers under Massey's command appeared in the edition of Mercurius Publicus for 12-19/7/60 and in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter M.

462 Ashurst and Elton appear in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter M.

463 The son of Lieutenant Colonel Elton, he worked closely with his father in Hull garrison: CSPD 1656-7, p. 622.

6th Regiment (A)	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Lenthall	Succeeded by the earl of Northampton in 6/60|
Lt. Col.	Robert Warcup	Lt. Col. Oxfordshire Militia regt. F. 2/50.[464] Replaced Lt. Col. Mill prob. in 25/2/60|Succeeded by Sir Thomas Sandys by 6/60|
Major	Richard Barker	Commissioned 25/2/60|
Captains	John Buck	Ditto| Gone by 6/60|
	Stephen West	Ditto| Ditto|
	Richard Johnson	

	Gregory Tom	Commissioned 25/2/60. Succeeded Capt. Barry|
	Arthur Babbington	XXX Commissioned 25/2/60|
	William Turner	Formerly of the 10th regt. F. Commissioned 25/2/60. Gone by 6/60|
	William Pride	Capt. 9th regt. F.| Gone by 6/60|
Cap. Lt.	XXX	

464 Ibid, 1650-1, p. 511.

6th Regiment (B)[465]		
Colonel	Earl of Northampton	Commissioned 6/60|
Lt. Col.	Sir Thomas Sandys	Ditto|
Major	Richard Barker	Recommissioned 6/60|
Captains	Richard Johnson	Ditto|
	Gregory Tom	Ditto|
	Arthur Babbington	Ditto|
	John Errington	XXX Commissioned 6/60. Succeeded Capt. Buck|
	Francis Compton	XXX Commissioned 6/60. Succeeded Capt. West|
	Thomas Willoughby[466]	XXX. Ditto| Apparently succeeded Capt. William Pride|
	Samuel Underhill	XXX. Ditto| Succeeded Capt. Turner|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disbanded in 11/60

465 The company commanders' names are given in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter N.

466 Willoughby was possibly a former captain in the 15th regiment of horse, who had resigned in 9/59. See above p. 131.

8th Regiment (A)[467]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Mayer	Demoted from col. early 8/60. Succeeded by Lord Widdrington|
Lt. Col.	Peter Bannister [468]	
Major	Jeremiah Tolhurst	Restored as major. In post in late 4/60|
Captains	Nicholas Loyzhier	Removed 19/7/60|
	William Elmes	
	William Dyke	
	Christopher Orde [469]	
	Thomas Mayer	Lt. in Lt. Col. Mayer's co. in 1/60.[470] Succeeded Capt. Robert Anderson. Demoted to capt. lt. 8/60|
	Thomas Love	Lt. to Capt. Tolhurst in the regt. mid 4/60. Presumably took over Col. Haselrig's co. | Demoted to lt. to Capt. Villiers in 8/50|
	John Tongue	Formerly capt. 29th regt. F. Succeeded Capt. Cuthbert Studholme 3/60| Co. disbanded 10/60. Lt. to Capt. Atkins 1661[471]|
Capt. Lt.	William Mayer	Lt. to Capt. Elmes in the regt. Succeeded by Capt. Thomas Mayer by 8/60 at which time he became lt. to Lt. Col. Mayer. Later gov. of Holy Island[472]|

467 For Tolhurst, Dyke, Orde, Elmes, Love, and Thomas Mayer, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 19-26/4/60. Love was commander of the garrison at Tynemouth Castle. Tolhurst, Elmes and Tongue were at Carlisle: Ibid, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 16-23/4/60.

468 Bannister was briefly lieutenant colonel of the regiment during Mayer's colonelcy: MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards i, p. 83.*

469 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 14.
470 Ibid,
471 Ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letters H and M; C. Dalton, *English Army Lists and Commission Registers 1661-1685* (2 vols., 1892) i, p. 16; Calendar of Treasury Books i, p. 80.
472 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 156; ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter W.

8th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Lord Widdrington	Replaced Mayer in early 8/60. Berwick garr. 1661[473]|
Lt. Col.	John Mayer	Demoted to lt. col. 8/60|
Major	Peter Bannister	Demoted to major 8/60|
Captains	Jeremiah Tolhurst	Demoted to senior capt. Gov. of Newcastle|
	William Dyke	Recommissioned 8/60|
	William Elmes	Ditto|
	Christopher Orde	Ditto|
	Jonathan Atkins	Succeeded Capt. Loyzhier c. 7/60. Capt. at Carlisle 1661|
	Edward Widdrington	Seemingly succeeded Capt. Thomas Mayer. Berwick garr. 1661|
	Edward Villiers	Seemingly succeeded Capt. Love. Capt. at Tynemouth 1661|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Mayer	Demoted from capt.| Succeeded by Edward Thorold in 1661 when the co. was in garr. at Berwick|

Regiment disbanded in stages from 11/60 onwards
473 Companies still extant in 1661 were Lord Widdrington's under Captain Lieutenant Edward Thorold and those of Captains Charles Stanley, Edward Villiers, Jonathan Atkins, Edward Widdrington, George Connock and Francis Grove: Dalton, *English Army Lists* i, pp. 14-16. The wording of documents relating to the regiment suggests that, like the 20th regiment of foot, it was disbanded and then immediately recommissioned.

9th Regiment[474]

474 The regiment was disbanded by Monck before 30/4/60 on the grounds of economy, but it was also regarded as politically unreliable: F. and D.

10th Regiment (A)[475]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	George Fleetwood	Recommissioned in 25/2/60| Succeeded by Sir Henry Cholmley 4/6/60|
Lt. Col.	William Style	Recommissioned 25/2/60| Replaced by Sir Matthew Appleyard on or before 4/6/60|
Major	Benjamin Gifford	Recommissioned 25/2/60 and 4/6/60|
Captains	John Style	In post 25/2/60 and late 4/60.[476]| Removed in or before 4/6/60|
	Thomas Baxter	In post 4/6/60|
	Arthur Challinor	Removed from captaincy c. 4/60. Later reinstated|
	Thomas Hay	In post late 4/60 and 6/60| Removed before 4/7/60|
	John Northend[477]	Capt. 27th regt. F. 9/59. Commissioned in 25/2/60. Scarborough garr. |
	Richard Boult	Recommissioned 25/2/60 and 4/6/60|
	Phillip Eyton	Ex capt. in the regt. F. Removed 59. Reinstated 25/2/60|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Andrews	In post late 4/60 and 4/6/60|

475 For the eight known company commanders in late 4/60 see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 26/4-2/5/60.
476 For the officers in late 4/60 see ibid, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 23-30/4/60.
477 Ibid, 30/8-7/9/60.

10th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Sir Henry Cholmley	Commissioned 4/6/60|
Lt. Col.	Sir Matthew Appleyard	Ditto|
Major	Benjamin Gifford	In post c. 1/6/60 and 4/7/60[478]|
Captains	Thomas Baxter	Recommissioned 4/7/60|
	Arthur Challinor	Apparently reinstated in 14/7/60 replacing Capt. Hay[479]|
	Richard Boult	Recommissioned 14/7/60|
	John Northend	Ditto|
	Phillip Eyton	Ditto|
	Edward Molesworth	XXX. Commissioned 4/7/60|
	Francis Comyn	XXX Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Marsh	XXX Commissioned after 4/6/60|
Additional Captain	Sir Jordan Crosland [480]	Commissioned 4/6/60. Succeeded by Richard Ledger in 7/60|

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

478 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 26/4-2/5/60; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter C.

479 Monck's commissions' book gives Hay instead of Challinor on 4/6/60: ibid,

480 Monck's commission book appears to list eleven company commanders in 7/60, but there is a hint that Gifford had been replaced by Sir Jordan Crosland who was quickly followed by Ledger.

11th Regiment[481]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Hughes	Formerly senior capt. in the regt. Succeeded Wilkes in 12/59. In post 10/60|
Lt. Col.	XXX	
Major	Richard Clifton	Major c.12/59|
Captains	William Newman	Still in post in 8/60[482]|
	William Collinson	
	Thomas Hunt	
	Robert Forster	
	Benjamin Jackson	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	**Edmund Parsons**[483]	

9 companies of the regiment disbanded in 11/60 in Scotland

481 See above p. 136 for suggestions as to junior officers who may have become captains in late 1659 before Monck became Captain General. As with most of the other regiments he left behind in Scotland or sent back once England had been secured, there are no lists in Worcester College, Clarke Ms 53 or in the London journals.

482 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 30/8-6/9/60.

483 Parsons was a major when the last three infantry regiments in Scotland were disbanded in 5/62. He must therefore have moved to either the 18th or the 19th regiment of foot as the name of the major of the 25th regiment is known. The 19th seems the more likely as Colonel and Captain Mann are mentioned in the same document: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 157. However, see p. 136 above for a Major Edmund Parsons working on Leith fortifications in 1653.

12th Regiment (A)	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Streeter	Demoted to major in 7/60|
Lt. Col.	George Weldon[484]	In post in early 4/60[485]Demoted to capt. in 7/60|
Major	Robert Smith	Commissioned 25/2/60. Ex capt. in the regt. Lt. to Major Streeter in 7/60[486]|
Captains	John Hardier	In post early 4/60| Gone by 7/60|
	John Newton	Ditto|
	Morgan Powell	Ditto|
	Michael Bland	Ditto|
	Alexander Fry	Demoted to lt. to Capt. Hyldyard 7/60|
	Edward Turner	Gone by 7/60|
	Edward Birtles	Lt. to Major Duckenfield in the regt. Demoted to lt. to Capt. Broxholme 7/60[487]|
Capt. Lt.	Abraham Hoare	Lt. to Major Edward Hoare 7/59.Succeeded Matthew Scott before 11/4/60[488]| Gone by 7/60|

484 A man of this name was captain in the 8th regiment of foot in 46/47.
485 A list containing the names of the lieutenant colonel, five captains and the captain lieutenant was printed in BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus 4-11/4/60.
486 According to F. and D. using a report in a weekly journal Smith was demoted to captain in 7/60, but he is not named amongst the seven captains in the regiment listed in the commissions' book for that date. In fact he became a lieutenant.
487 Birtles' career as captain in the regiment was fleeting. However, he did sign the loyal address of 1/5/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5).
488 Ibid, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 9-16/4/60.

12th Regiment (B)		
Colonel[489]	John Lord Bellasis	Col. F. Royalist army 42-44. Commissioned 7/60. Hull garr. 1661[490]|
Lt. Col.	Anthony Gilby	Col. Royalist army 44-5|
Major	John Streeter	
Captains	George Weldon	Hull garr. 1661|
	Sir Phillip Monckton	Commissioned in 7/60|
	Sir Francis Cobbe	Possibly ens. 26th regt. F. 7/59 and capt. 15th regt. F. c. 5/60. Commissioned in this regt. in 7/60. Hull garr. 1661|
	Robert Hyldyard	Not in the regt. 2/60. Commissioned 7/60. Hull 1661|
	William Broxholme	Ditto|
	Henry Bellasis	Ditto|
	Thomas Izod	Formerly major 4th regt. H. Commissioned 7/60. D. 1661[491]|
Capt. Lt.	William Gower	In post 7/60. Hull 1661|

Regiment disbanded in part in 10/60
489 The regiment was disbanded in part on 5/10/60. Four companies were used to garrison Hull: F. and D. However, six appear to have been stationed there in 1661: C. Dalton, *English Army Lists* i, pp. 12-13; CSPD 1660-1, p. 314.
490 In 7/60 the regiment was almost completely remodelled. Streeter and Weldon kept their places as major and first captain, but six new captains and Captain Lieutenant William Gower were commissioned: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter B. All appear to have been ex-Royalists apart from Izod for whose career in the New Model Army see above pp. 67, 95, 114, 131.
491 See below p. 169.

14th Regiment[492]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Birch	Col. Lancs. regt. late 40s. Replaced William Eyres late 2/60|
Lt. Col.	Christopher Skipper	Former major in the regt. Succeeded Jeremiah Campfield as lt. col. in 25/2/60|
Major	Edward Bradshaw	Previously capt. in the regt . In post in 25/2/60[493]|
Captains	Thomas Fryer	In post in 25/2/60|
	Thomas Axtell	Ditto|
	Isaac Hague	Ditto|
	John Lakin	Ditto|
	William Cash	Ditto|
	William Elward	Reinstated in 25/2/60 replacing Capt. Cuthbert Carr, who was in the 1st regt. F. by 4/60. Recommissioned 6/60|
	Thomas Hooper	Capt. Lt. in the regt. in 6/59. Not in the regt. in 1/60. Commissioned 25/2/60. Recommissioned 6/60|
Capt. Lt.	John Young	Commissioned 25/2/60. Lt. to Capt. Lambert in the regt. in 6/59[494]|

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

492 All the first named officers were company commanders in 4/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 11-18/4/60. All the company commanders were recommissioned in 6/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter B.

493 Ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter B.

494 CJ vii, p. 742. Young had been ensign to Captain Coates and lieutenant to Captain Greenleaf when the regiment was Bright's, and then lieutenant in the Scottish campaign of 1650-1 when it was Lambert's: TNA, E 121/4/8/unnumbered, entry 270; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 288.

15th Regiment (A)[495]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Arthur Evelyn	Succeeded by the earl of Cleveland in 8/60. Demoted to lt. col.|
Lt. Col.	Devis Pepper	Demoted to major 6/8/60|
Major	William Walters	Demoted to capt. 6/8/60|
Captains	Richard Wisdom	In post in 25/2/60. Prob. in post until 8/60|
	Thomas Cooke	In post late 4/60[496]| Gone by 8/60|
	Thomas Ward	
	Brett Elie	
	William Sadlington	
	Samuel Price	Succeeded by Capt. Francis Cobbe c. 5/60 who was succeeded by Major Isaac Troughton by 8/60|
	John Drake	
Capt. Lt.	Gervase Harestaffe	Lt. to Capt. Westby 6/59. In post 25/2/60 and late 4/60. Demoted to lt. to Lt. Col. Evelyn in the regt. in 6/8/60|
Additional Captain	William Carpenter	Lt. to Major Walters 6/59.[497] Capt. in the regt. 4/60. Lt. to Major Devis Pepper 8/60|

495 For the officers in 4/60, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 22-29/4/60. For those in 8/60, see ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 9-16/8/60.

496 Ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 22-29/4/60.

497 CJ vii, pp. 683-5.

15th Regiment (B)[498]		
Colonel	Earl of Cleveland	In post 6/8/60. Brigadier H. Royalist army 44-5. In arms at Colchester in 48
Lt. Col.	Arthur Evelyn	In post in 6/8/80
Major	Devis Pepper	Ditto
Captains	William Walters	Ditto
	Thomas Ward	Ditto
	Brett Elie	At Dunkirk in 6/8/60
	William Sadlington	Ditto
Major	Isaac Troughton	In post 6/8/60
	John Drake	Ditto
	George Lissom	XXX. In post 6/8/60. Took over Capt. Wisdom's co.[499]
Capt. Lt.	Richard Burgess or John Luke[500]	XXX XXX
Additional Captain	Robert Hodgson[501]	

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

498 The officers in post in 6/8/80 are named in BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 9-16/8/60 and in Monck's commissions' book.
499 Ibid, Thomason Tracts Parliamentary Intelligencer, 6-13/8/60.
500 The commissions' book and Mercurius Publicus give different names for the captain lieutenant but Burgess may have followed Luke.
501 Hodgson is mentioned in Monck's commissions' book. Presumably he replaced one of the captains after 6/8/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter C.

16th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel[502]	Charles Fairfax	Col. until disbandment of regt. in 10/60
Lt. Col.	John Rogers	In post in 4/60 and 8/60[503]
Major	Rene Bailly	Ditto
Captains	Thomas Sutton	In post in 4/60
	Francis Sergeant	Gov. of Clifford's Tower, York 6/60[504]
	Robert Dineley	In post in 4/60
	Gregory Constable	Ditto[505]
	John Fairfax	Ditto
	Thomas Ambler	In post in 4/60. Succeeded Capt. Green. Lt. to Capt. Wilkinson in 8/59[506]
	Francis Hartley?	Capt. in the regt. but removed in late 59. Not in the regt. in 27/2/60 but later reinstated[507]
Cap. Lt.	William Riley	In post in 4/60. Ens. to Capt. Poole in 8/59[508]

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

502 A list of 25/2/60 gives the names of the colonel, the lieutenant colonel and Captains Sutton, Dineley, Constable, Sergeant, Lilburne, Skelton and Rhodes. Lilburne and Rhodes may have been cavalry officers, though this would not have prevented their commanding companies of foot as well. There were plenty of precedents for this in the Northern army and brigade in the 1640s. There are no full lists of the regiment after 4/60, but an undated list in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter F may be later in date as it contains Hartley's name as a full captain.
503 For the field officers in 8/60 see BL, Thomason Tracts, The Parliamentary Intelligencer, 13-20/8/60.
504 Only six captains are given in the list of 4/60: BL, Thomason Tracts E 1021 (1). Sergeant's name is almost certainly missing. The undated list in the commissions' book mentioned above includes Sergeant and Hartley also.
505 An officer in the 16th regiment of foot in 11/59, Constable signed a declaration by Monck's officers immediately following John Rogers and Francis Sergeant: Clarke Papers iv, p. 128.
506 CJ vii, p. 763; HMC, Leybourne-Popham Mss, p. 154.
507 CJ vii, p. 763; BL, Thomason Tracts. The Parliamentary Intelligencer, 27/2-5/3/60. Gaps in the last dated list of the regiment make it impossible to say if Hartley was commissioned before or after 4/60.
508 CJ vii, p. 763.

17th Regiment (A)	Name	Military career
Colonel[509]	Thomas Read	
Lt. Col.	James Mutlow	
Major	Sylam Callant	
Captains	George Everard	
	Miles Meredith	Succeeded by Samuel Jones, lt. in the regt. [510] |
	John Dirdo	Left the regt. after early 4/60. Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Young[511]|
	Anthony Belcham	In post in 6/60. Cashiered 7/60. Succeeded by Capt. Lt. Pike|
	John Street	
	Ralph Bernard	
	John/Fitzroy Winthrop	In post in 25/2/60. Formerly capt. lt. Succeeded Capt. Yardley|
Capt. Lt.	**Francis Young**	Succeeded by Lt. Peter Pike, and then by John Curtis[512]|

509 The company commanders commissioned in 2/60 were allegedly all recommissioned by the king in 6/60, though by that time Meredith had died, possibly in late March as his name does not appear in the list of company commanders published in early 4/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1); Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter R.
510 Samuel Jones had taken charge of Meredith's company by 2/5/60: ibid,
511 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter R.
512 Ibid; BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 30/6-7/7/60.

17th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Thomas Read	In post in 10/60[513]|
Lt. Col.	James Mutlow	Ditto|
Major	Sylam Callant	Ditto|
Captains	George Everard	Ditto|
	John Street	Ditto|
	Ralph Bernard	Ditto|
	John/Fitzroy Winthrop	Ditto|
	Samuel Jones	Ditto. Lt. to Capt. James Mutlow in the regt. in 9/4/60| Succeeded Capt. Meredith 2/5/60[514]|
	Peter Pike	Ditto. Lt. to Capt. Thomas Hunt in 59. Capt. Lt. 6/60. Capt. in early 7/60. Succeeded Capt. Belcham[515]|
	Francis Young	Ditto. Former capt. lt. Succeeded Capt. Dirdo c. 5/60|
Capt. Lt.	John Curtis	Ditto. Succeeded Peter Pike. Ens. to Capt. George Everard in 59. Lt. in 9/4/60|

Regiment disbanded in 10/60
513 John Winthrop's various promotions in the regiment and the list of captains at the regiment's disbandment derive from documents in the Winthrop family papers cited by F. and D.
514 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter R.
515 BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 30/7-6/8/60.

18th Regiment[516]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Thomas Morgan	
Lt. Col.	Joseph Witter	In post in 2/5/60 and 9/60[517]
Major	**Edward Freer**	
Captains	**James Thompson**	
	William Atkinson	
	Elias Cooper?	
	Thomas Rennalds	
	Roger Delves	
	John Bardesley[518]	
	Henry Pearson??[519]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

In garrison in Scotland to 1662. Volunteers recruited into the Portugal Brigade.

516 The final regimental list postdates its remodelling by Monck in the winter of 1659/60. It is therefore probable that most company commanders would have been in post at the end of April. Only Cooper is known to have changed regiment.

517 BL, Thomason Tracts 669 f25 (5); ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 20-27/9/60.

518 Bardesley was captain in 1661: HMC Leybourne-Popham Mss, pp. 192-3. He had been ensign to Captain Witter in the regiment in the list passed by Parliament in 1659: CJ vii, p. 763.

519 Lieutenant to Edward Freer in this regiment, he remained loyal to Monck and was serving in Scotland in 2/60, possibly as captain: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 12-19/3/60. He has been identified as the Colonel Henry Pearson who commanded a regiment in the brigade in Portugal from 1662: J. Riley, *The Last Ironside: the English Expedition to Portugal 1662-1668* (Solihull, 2014), p. 185.

19th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Miles Mann[520]	
Lt. Col.	John Hills[521]	
Major	George Bateman	
Captains	Edward Ersbury	
	Anthony Wilkes	
	Richard Lowry	
	William Browne	
	John Mann	Returned to the regt. from the 22nd regt. F. Gov. of Orkney in 3/60[522]
	Edward Mann	
	Henry Rothwell	
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Pinnock	

Regiment in garrison in Scotland until 1662. Volunteers entered the Portugal brigade.

520 The list comes from Worcester College, Clarke Ms 53, letter M, and unusually it relates to a regiment left behind in Scotland. Pages in the commissions' book relating to other such regiments such as the 18th and the 25th contain little or no information. The list is undated but it probably represents the regiment as it was in the spring of 1660. George Bateman, for example, appears as a major, whereas he was still a captain in Clarke Ms 52 (which records commissions Monck issued between 10/59 and 2/60).

521 Hills was very faithful to Monck in Scotland in 1660: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 148. This and a document from the sixteen-nineties quoted by F. and D. show that his surname was Hills not Hill.

522 A report in BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 12-19/3/60 shows that Mann was in post in 2/60 when he disarmed and dissolved Captain Watson's company stationed in the Orkneys: F. and D.

20th Regiment[523]	Name	Military career
Colonel	George Monck	
Lt. Col.	Ethelbert Morgan	Retired 9/65|
Major	Francis Nicholls	Resigned 1/63 when appointed surveyor of the ordnance. Succeeded by Sir James Smith of the 22nd regt. F.[524]|
Captains	William Downes	Retired 8/65[525]|
	John Miller	Major 65. Retired 73|
	Robert Wintour	Retired 76|
	Thomas Mansfield	Major in the regt. in 75, retired 81|
	John Mutlow	Left regt. c. 80|
	John Collins	Fate unknown post 1/61. Succeeded by Capt. Buckridge|
	John Peters	Retired c. 73|
Capt. Lt.	John Paynter[526]	

Regiment disbanded on 14 February 1661 but reformed immediately afterwards as the Coldstream Guards.

523 The officers of 25/2/60 were all in post in 8/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter M; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 16-23/8/60.

524 Ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 6-13/3/61.

525 Downes may have moved elsewhere in 8/60 and been replaced by John Huitson, formerly an officer in the 21st regiment of foot: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53; CJ vii, p. 787.

526 Paynter was lieutenant to Ethelbert Morgan in 7/59 and captain lieutenant in 8/60: CJ vii, p. 743; MacKinnon, *Coldstream Guards* i, p. 83. He left the regiment after 8/60 but before 1/61, and was succeeded by John Clarke, ensign in the regiment in 8/59.

21st Regiment[527]	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Hubblethorne	Major early in 59, then capt. in 9/59 but very rapidly reinstated as major. Lt. Col. in 10/59, Col. in 12/59 in succession to Talbot|
Lt. Col.	James Emerson	Formerly capt. Promoted to major by Monck 10/59. Lt. Col. by 2/5/60[528]|
Major	John Clarke	In post in 2/5/60|
Captains	David Francis	Formerly capt. lt. in the regt. In post before 25/2/60[529]|
	Richard Miller	
	Joseph Fellows	
	Joseph Seymer	
	John Huitson	
	William Gudding	Lt. in 1/57[530]. Ens. to Hubblethorne's co. 27/9/59. Lt. to Capt. Gwillym c. 11/59. Capt. in 25/2/60|
	Thomas Gullock	Formerly capt. lt. Commissioned 25/2/60[531]|
Cap. Lt.	George Hearon	Prob. lt. in the regt. in 11/52[532]|

Regiment disbanded in 11/60

527 The officers are those who signed a letter of loyalty on 9/4/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1). They were all in post on 25/2/60 and in 6/60: F. and D.

528 See BL, Thomason Tracts 669 f25 (5) for Emerson and Clarke in 5/60.

529 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 16.

530 Chequers Ms. 782, unfol.

531 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 48.

532 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnall, 29/11-6/12/52.

22nd Regiment (A)	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Sheffield	Succeeded Col. Fitch 23/4/60.[533] Col. H. NMA 45-47|
Lt. Col.	Christopher Copperthwaite	Succeeded Samuel Gooday 28/4/60. In post in 6/60. Gone by early 8/60|
Major	James Strangeways[534]	In post in 6/60. Succeeded Major Copperthwaite| Gone by early 8/60|
Captains	William Burnell	Gone by early 8/60|
	Jonathan Hooper	In post in 6/50| Demoted to lt. by early 8/60|
	William Herbert	XXX Took over Capt. Richard Holt's co.|
	Anthony Bee	Capt. 19th regt. F. 59. Took over Capt. Cleare's co.[535] |Gone by 6/60. Succeeded by Robert Sheffield as capt.|
	Henry Crispe	In post 4/60. Transfer from the 9th regt. F.|
	John Northcott	XXX
	Robert Mansergh	Lt. to Capt. John Mann. In post in 6/60. Demoted to lt. by 8/60|
Capt. Lt.	Martin Clifford?	XXX. Lt. to Lt. Col. Sheffield in 8/60[536]|

533 Ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 26/7-2/8/60.
534 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letters A and S.
535 Ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 13.
536 See ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letters S and O for Clifford's posts in 6 and 8/60.

22nd Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Lord Ossory[537]	Younger son of the Marquis of Ormond, he succeeded Col. Sheffield on 30/7/60|
Lt. Colonel	Thomas Sheffield	Formerly col. of the regt.|
Major	Sir James Smith	Succeeded James Strangeways by 8/60|
Captains	William Herbert	
	Henry Crispe	
	John Northcott	
	Robert Sheffield	XXX
	XXX Downing	XXX Replaced William Burnell by early 8/60|
	Edmund Sheffield	XXX. Succeeded Capt. Hooper who became lt. of the co.|
	XXX Hampden[538]	Appointed 30/7/60. Succeeded Capt. Mansergh who became lt. of the co.|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disbanded in 10/60
537 For the company commanders under the Earl of Ossory, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 2-9/8/60. The captain lieutenant's name was not given.
538 If William he was possibly a transfer from the 26th regiment of foot.

23rd Regiment[539]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Yaxley Robson	
Lt. Col.	Timothy Langley	In post on 25/2/60. Gone by 11/60|
Major	Edward Lunn	Lt. Col. at the regt's. disbandment in 11/60[540]|
Captains	**Thomas Lloyd**	Possibly in garrison at Newcastle in 2/60[541]|
	Kept vacant	
	John Hickson	
	John Fenning	
	William Davies	In post on 25/2/60[542]|
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	**William Moore**	

Regiment disbanded in Scotland in 11/60
539 There is no list of the commissioned officers in this regiment later than 2/60.
540 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 22-29/11/60.
541 Ibid, 12-19/3/60.
542 A Captain Davies's company was disbanded in Scotland in late 9/60: ibid, 4-11/10/60.

24th Regiment[543]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Leonard Lytcott	
Lt. Col.	Richard Hatt	In post in 4/60, 2/5/60[544]|
Major	Matthew Marvell	Former capt. in the regt. removed in 9/59. Recommissioned by Monck as capt. Major c. 3/60[545]|
Captains	Thomas Thompson	In post in 4/60|
	John Holbrook	Ditto|
	Thomas Woodward	Ditto|
	Anthony Taylor	Ditto|
	Robert Lytcott	Ditto|
	Thomas Scuttle	Lt. to Capt. Taylor. Ditto|
	Robert Goodwin	XXX Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Jasper Weare	Ditto|

Regiment disbanded in 10/60
543 The only lists of company commanders in this regiment are for 25/2/60 and early 4/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter L; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1).
544 Ibid, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5).
545 John Dirdo of the 17th regiment of foot appears as major in the regimental list of 25/2/60, but this seems to be an error. The officer concerned was James Dennis. Dennis was transferred to the 17th regiment of horse before early 4/60 and Marvell replaced him.

25th Regiment[546]	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Daniel	Former col. 18th regt. F. Commissioned 3/60. Col. 5/62[547]|
Lt. Col.	Michael Richardson	9/60, 5/62[548]|
Major	Ralph Waterhouse	XXX Commissioned 15/3/60| Gone by late 6/60[549]|
Captains	**Thomas Southern**	
	George Traherne	
	Stephen Blythe	
	Francis Rawson	

	Elias Cooper?	Formerly capt. 18th regt. F. Major of the 25th regt. at its disbandment in 5/62[550]|
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	**John Ramsey**	
Probables/ Replacements Captain	XXX Mason[551]	

Regiment stationed in Scotland until 5/62. Volunteers went to Portugal.

546 The last full list of the company commanders in this regiment is that for 2/52. Southern and Ramsey were in Scotland later in the month, but they were not necessarily still in the same regiment.
547 For the chief officers when the regiment was disbanded in 5/62, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 162.
548 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 20-27/9/59.
549 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter D. Captain Leonard Aizey had Waterhouse's company by 28/6/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 28/6-5/7/60.
550 Davies, *Coldstream Guards*, p. 128; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 162; ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 16.
551 Calendar of Treasury Books i, p. 80.

26th Regiment (A)[552]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Robert Gibbon	Succeeded by the duke of Buckingham 2/8/60|
Lt. Col.	Richard Yardley	Capt. in 2/60 in the island of Jersey of which Gibbon was gov. [553]|
Major	George Annersley	Capt. 29th regt. F. in England in 7/59[554]|
Captains	John Gibbon	Seemingly removed from his captaincy in late 59. Succeeded Capt. Dodgin as capt. in 25/2/60|
	Oliver Meade	Lt. to Major Chamberlain in 7/59. Took over his co. in 25/2/60. Gone by 8/60|
	William Bassett	Formerly captain in the 29th regt. F. disbanded in January 1660|Gone by 8/60. Possibly capt. lt. 16th regt. H. 7/60|
	Jeremiah Masterson	Former capt. lt. Full capt. 25/2/60 in succession to Capt. Grime. In post 4/60 but gone by 8/60|
	William Richardson[555]	
	Joseph Horsley	Prob. transferred as capt. from the 30th regt. F.|
	John Waller	Capt. 25th regt. F. in the mid-50s. Capt. 2nd regt. F. in 1/60[556]|
Capt. Lt.	Arthur Arscott	Succeeded Jervis Jeffries in 25/2/60|

552 The company commanders are as listed on 25/2/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter G.
553 Clarke Manuscripts 4/7, Harvester Microfilms reel 16, unfol. He was almost certainly the Captain Richard Yardley who was captain in Colonel Sydenham's Weymouth garrison regiment of foot in 1646: Spring, *Waller's Army*, p. 135.
554 F. and D.
555 Richardson may previously have been a captain in the 28th regiment of foot, but there may have been two Captain William Richardsons.
556 See above p. 93 and Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 116; ibid, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 24.

26th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	The Duke of Buckingham[557]	
Lt. Col.	Henry Washington	Col. F. Royalist 1st Civil War|
Major	Henry Norwood	
Captains	John Gibbon	
	William Richardson	
	Joseph Horsley	
	John Waller	

	Edward Barham	XXX Succeeded Capt. Masterson|
	Thomas Paulden	XXX
	XXX Hampden[558]	
Capt. Lt.	Arthur Arscott	

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

557 All the company commanders were in place in early 8/60: ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter B; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 2-9/8/60.

558 This officer was possibly William Haman, ensign to Captain Robert Heath in 7/59: CJ vii, p. 730.

28th Regiment[559]		
Colonel	Samuel Clarke	Capt. Coldstream Guards 2/61|
Lt. Col.	**William Legard**[560]	
Major	**Samuel Batterly**	
Captains	John Baker	Co. disbanded 11/60[561]|
	Edward Claypole	Ditto|
	Evan Harris	Ditto|
	William Moore	Ditto|
	William Richardson	
	John Manning	
	Edmund Geary	
Capt. Lt.	John Harrison	XXX In post before the disbandment.[562]|

Regiment disbanded in Scotland in 11/60

559 As with most of the regiments in garrison in Scotland after January 1660 there are no lists of company commanders in Monck's commissions' book.

560 F. and D. have Lieutenant Colonel Lunn and Captain Mason in this regiment, but they both served in the 23rd and the 25th regiments of foot respectively.

561 For the first four companies being disbanded see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 6-13/12/60.

562 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 49, fo. 157.

30th Regiment (A)[563]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Nathaniel Whetham	Succeeded as col. and gov. by Col. Richard Norton. 6/60|
Lt. Col.	**Thomas Hurst**	In post in 25/2/60|
Major	**Abraham Peters**	Ditto|
Captains	**John Dober**	Ditto|
	Samuel Biggs	Ditto|
	Thomas Newberry	Ditto|
	Robert Thornton	Ditto|
	John Clarke	Ditto|
	XXX Weston	
	Francis Izod[564]	Succeeded Joseph Horsley. QM to Capt. Thomas Izod in the 4th regt. H. 1/60|
Capt. Lt.	**Richard /John Goodwin**	In post in 25/2/60
Others Major	Peter Murford	

Regiment disbanded in 9/60

563 All the company commanders were in post in mid-6/60 as listed in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter N. There are no lists of officers between 25/2/60 and mid-6/60 or between 6/60 and the regiment's disbandment.

564 Thomas Izod, captain in 25/2/60, had been transferred as major to the 4th regiment of horse by mid-4/60. It is not known which of the officers in post in 6/60 replaced him, though Francis Izod seems the most likely as they were in the same troop in the 4th regiment of horse in 1/60: CJ vii, p. 817.

30th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Richard Norton[565]	Col. H. Waller's army. Appointed c. 18/6/60. Gov. of Portsmouth|
Lt. Col.	Daniel Bolton[566]	XXX In post 6/60. Replaced by Robert Legge 8/60|
Major	Richard Fincher	In post in 8/60. Major H. NMA 45-47|
Captains	John Clarke	Replaced by Capt. Spragg, possibly lt. in the 31st regt. F. in 8/60|
	Francis Izod	
	Charles Potts	In post in 6/60, he replaced Thomas Newberry|
	Samuel Pratt	
	Richard Whitehead	XXX Took over Major Murford's co.[567]|
	Christopher Kent	XXX
	David Cornelius	XXX Replaced Capt. Thornton|
Capt. Lt.	David Balston	XXX

Regiment disbanded in late 9/60

565 Clarke and Izod were the only company commanders in post in 25/2/60. For Norton, Fincher and Potts see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 28/6-5/7/60. Clarke was major by 8/3/60: TNA, WO 55/463.

566 A Major Daniel Bolton was serving under Lord Inchiquin in Ireland in 7/47: BL, Thomason Tracts E 399 (33).

567 Major Peter Murford was in the Portsmouth garrison from 1650 and before that governor of Southampton. See, for example, CSPD 1649-50, p. 557; ibid 1650, pp. 586; ibid 1656-7, pp. 149, 164, 454.

31st Regiment (A)[568]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Fagg	Still col. in early 7/60|
Lt. Col.	Henry Needler	Commissioned in 25/2/60. Ex lt. col. 26th regt. F.| Demoted to major in 7/60|
Major	Richard Scott	Recommissioned in 25/2/60| Left the regt. mid 6/60[569]| Replaced by Jeremiah Harrison before 14/7/60[570]|
Captains	Thomas Pride	Recommissioned in 25/2/60. In post in 4/60| Removed in 7/60|
	Hannibal Vivian	Commissioned in 25/2/60. In post in 4/60|
	Nathaniel Harrison	Ditto|
	Benjamin Rudyard	Ditto. In post 4/60|
	Richard Gwyn	Commissioned in 25/2/60|
	Thomas Broxton[571]	Commissioned in 25/2/60| Possibly gone from the regt. by 4/60|
	Faunteleroy Moore	Ditto| Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Francis Arundel	In post in 4/60| Demoted in 7/60 to lt. to Capt. Thomas Higgins|

568 The company commanders in 9/4/60 were Needler, Scott, Pride, Vivian, N. Harrison, Rudyard, Gwyn and Arundel. Higgins, Smith and Baron were not junior officers at the time: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1).

569 Ibid, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus 14-21/6/60.

570 Harrison had been commander of the garrison at Hartlepool in 1/59 and had then had a chequered career in the army: TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 572; ibid, SP 28/117, fo. 143; ibid, SP 28/119, fo. 208; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 14-21/6/60.

571 Neither Broxton nor Moore appears in the printed list of early 4/60 list, but only five captains were named: ibid, Thomason Tracts E 1021 (1).

31st Regiment (B)[572]		
Colonel	Viscount Mordaunt	
Lt. Col.	Sir Thomas Woodcock	Replaced Henry Needler in 14/7/60|
Major	Henry Needler	
Captains	Jeremiah Harrison	Took over Capt. Pride's co.|
	Thomas Pride[573]	Presumably he took over another capt's co.
	Nathaniel Harrison	
	Richard Gwyn	
	Hartgill Baron	A former Royalist, he took over Hannibal Vivian's co. [574]|
	Thomas Higgins	XXX
	XXX Butts	XXX. Succeeded Capt. James Smith[575]|
Capt. Lt.	George Beridge	XXX

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

572 The changes that occurred in 7/60 when Mordaunt became colonel are recorded in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter M.

573 The six captains from Pride downwards and Francis Arundel were in post in 30/7/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer 30/7-6/8/60. For the more senior officers, see ibid 12-19/7/60.

574 F. and D.

575 Smith had arrived in the regiment in the late spring. It is not known which of the former captains he replaced.

32nd Regiment (A)[576]		
Colonel[577]	Thomas Pury	Col. of the city of Gloucester militia in 8/59.[578] Col. in 4/60. Succeeded by Henry Lord Herbert in 7/60[579]. Demoted to lt. col. |
Lt. Col.	Thomas French	In post early 5/60. Demoted to major in 7/60|
Major	William Neast	Ditto| Gone by 7/60|
Captains	Thomas Millward	Succeeded Capt. Robert Hill|
	William Coates	Capt. in the disbanded 29th regt. F.|
	Alexander Bernard	Capt. 27th regt. F. 7/59. In post in early 5/60. Succeeded Capt. Kitterminster| Gone by 7/60|
	Godfrey Ellis	Militia capt. In post in 5/60| Gone by 7/60|
	Griffanus Phillips[580]	In post in early 5/60. Lt. in the regt. 8/60|
	John Green	In post early 5/60. Lt. in the regt. 8/60|
	XXX[581]	
Capt. Lt.	John Matthews[582]	In post in early 5/60| Gone by 7/60|

576 This was seemingly Pury's militia regiment which was absorbed into the New Model Army in the spring of 1660, but very few of the militia officers were still in post in 4/60. For Pury's commission and a list of his militia officers commissioned on 11/8/59, see CJ vii, p. 756. For the company commanders in late 4/60 listed in this table, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 3-10/5/60.

577 See ibid, 19-26/4/60 for the field officers and Captains Millward, Coates, Ellis, Phillips and Green and Captain Lieutenant Matthews. The other two companies were on the march northwards following Lambert's uprising, and their officers were therefore unable to sign the declaration of loyalty. However, Bernard was in the regiment in early 5/60: ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 3-10/5/60. For the company commanders in 8/6/60 see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter P.

578 CJ vii, p. 755.

579 For the brief 7/60 list see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 12-19/7/60.

580 Like Pury Phillips had a very strong association with Gloucester and had been a captain before the regiment was raised: ibid, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 27/12/59-3/1/60.

581 The names of only six of the company commanders are given in the list of early 5/60.

582 Matthews was Pury's captain lieutenant in the Gloucestershire militia regiment.

32nd Regiment (B)		
Colonel[583]	Lord Herbert	
Lt. Col.	Thomas Pury	
Major	Thomas French	
Captains	Thomas Millward	
	William Coates	
	John Grove	
	Edward Winter	Succeeded Capt. Ellis|
	Col. Roger Whitley	Succeeded Capt. Phillips who became his lt.|
	Henry Leicester	Succeeded Capt. Green who became his lt.|
	Richard Bassett	Took over Major Neast's co.|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Nanfan[584]	

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

583 The list of company commanders in 8/60 is printed in BL,Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 16-23/8/60.

584 Herbert's company with Nanfan as its lieutenant was garrisoning Chepstow Castle in 1661: Dalton, *Army Lists* i, p. 17.

Cavalry

1st Regiment (A)[585]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Lord Fauconberg	Succeeded Sir Arthur Haselrig 20/4/60. Demoted to capt. after the duke of York became col. 1/7/60 |
Major	Vacancy[586]	Theophilus Hart had gone by 26/4/60[587] Succeeded by Capt. Buller|
Captains	Thomas Goddard	In post in 4/60| Gone by 7/60|
	Anthony Buller	In post as capt. on 2/5/60[588]|
	Thomas Howard	Succeeded Capt. Haselrig. Possibly capt. 4th regt. H. 45-47 and not the royalist col. H.[589]|
	Timothy Clowdisley[590]	Cor. to Capt. Hunter in the regt.[591] Succeeded Capt. Backhouse| Gone by 7/60|
Capt. Lt.	Peter Backhouse	

585 There is no list for this regiment between early 2/60 and 14/7/60 other than the one in Monck's commission book. This still has Haselrig as colonel but with other officers who were not in post until May (e.g. it has Buller as major) but there are alterations that are clearly updates. It was probably compiled just before 20 April but corrected to represent the situation in mid-May: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter H.

586 John Browne was in post in early April, but had been replaced very soon afterwards by Theophilus Hart who was in the 3rd regiment of horse by the end of the month. Buller was still a captain on 2/5/60. See HMC, Leybourne-Popham Mss, p. 171 for Browne and Goddard, Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter M for Major Hart, and BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5) for Buller.

587 Theophilus Hart, Browne's successor, was in post for no longer than three weeks. His name is crossed out in the commissions' book.

588 BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5).

589 It is possible that Spencer was still in post at the time, but I very much doubt it. For this see above p. 145. I have inserted Howard's name rather than that of one of the other new captains of 7/60 as they were definitely ex-Royalists. For the Parliamentarian Hon. Thomas Howard see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 61, 82.

590 F. and D. have this officer as Timothy Clare whose troop was involved in Lambert's uprising in 4/60 citing the House of Commons Journal for 1/60, but the name appears twice in the journal as Clowdisley when the list of officers was passed by Parliament in 1/60: CJ vii, p. 810. Timothy Clare was in the 7th regiment of horse.

591 Ibid vii, p. 698.

1st Regiment (B)[592]		
Colonel	The Duke of York	
Major	Anthony Buller	Col. in the Jamaica expedition. Capt. in the reg. in 2/5/60. Major by mid-7/60[593]. Succeeded Theophilus Hart as major who succeeded John Browne[594]|
Captains	Lord Fauconberg	Acting col. after 6/60|
	Thomas Howard	
	Col. John Sydenham	In post in early 5/60[595]|
	Sir John Talbot	In post in 5/5/60[596]|
Capt. Lt.	Sir Alan Apsley	

Regiment disbanded in 1/61

592 The names of the officers listed below, who were commissioned by the king in 7/60, are given in BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 19-26/7/60.
593 Ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 27/7-3/8/60.
594 For Major Hart see pp. 94–5, 111, 145.
595 Worc College, Clarke Ms 53, letter H. Sydenham was still captain when the troop was disbanded in 12/60: ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 17/12/60-3/1/61.
596 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter F.

3rd Regiment[597]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edward Montagu	Reinstated in place of Col. Alured on 20/4/60|
Major	Theophilus Hart	Reinstated on 26/4/60 after a brief spell in the 1st regt. H. Replaced John Nelthorpe. In post mid-8/60 and 10/60[598]|
Captains	Thomas Ingoldsby	In post in 16/6/60|
	Sir John Coppleston	Reinstated. Replaced Capt. James Strangeways 25/3/60. In post 16/6/60|
	John Clayton	XXX Replaced Christopher Alured in 9/4/60. In post 16/6/60|
	William Clitheroe	QM Hart's troop 7/59[599]. Replaced Capt. Richard Winsmore on 25/4/60|
Capt. Lt.	James Wright	XXX Succeeded John Green. In post on 16/6/60 but prob. from 25/2/60[600]|

Regiment disbanded in 11/60

597 For the changes in the troop commanders in 3 and 4/60, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letters A, M.
598 BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 13-20/8/60; F. and D.
599 CJ vii, p. 810.
600 It is most unlikely that this is the Captain James Wright formerly of the 14th regiment of horse.

4th Regiment[601]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper	
Major	Thomas Izod[602]	In post in late 4/60. Gone in early 6/60| Succeeded by Major Robert Harley, ex lt. in King Charles II's lifeguard.[603]|
Captains	Anthony Yardley	In post in 8/60[604]|
	Hugh Parry	In post in late 4/60[605]|
	Edmund Warcup	In post in 8/60|
	Peter Betsworth	Succeeded Capt. Walton. In post in late 4/60 and 5/60. Lt. to Silas Taylor in 8/60, who succeeded him as captain[606]|
Capt. Lt.	Maurice Berkeley	Cor. to the col's. troop 1/60, 29/2/60. Capt. Lt. c. 3/60, late 4/60[607]| Succeeded by Capt. John Evelyn in 6/60, who was in post in 8/60|

Regiment disbanded in mid-11/60

601 For the troop commanders in late 4/60 see BL, Mercurius Publicus, 26/4-3/5/60.

602 Ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 14-21/6/60. In a certificate as to Izod's services Monck states that he remained in the army until it was disbanded, but he died soon afterwards: F. and D. Izod's final command appears to have been as a captain in the 12th regiment of foot. For this, see above p. 156.
603 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 14-21/6/60. Harley was promoted to colonel of a regiment of horse in Flanders in 7/60: ibid, 28/6-5/7/60. He was succeeded by Adam Browne who was in post at the regiment's disbandment in 11/60: ibid, 28/6-5/7/60; F. and D.
604 For the officers in post in 8/60 see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter C.
605 Parry's successor is not named in the commissions' book in the 8/60 list.
606 BL, ThomasonTracts, Mercurius Publicus, 31/5-7/6/60; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter A. Taylor had been commissioned as a captain of horse in 1/8/59. He may have been in the London Militia: CJ vii, p. 745.
607 Ibid, vii, p. 817: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1); ibid, Publick Intelligencer, 27/2-5/3/60; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter C.

5th Regiment[608]	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Clobury	
Major	Jeremiah Smith	In post in 5/60|
Captains	Thomas Deane	
	Giles Barnardiston	
	John Hill	
	Thomas Munn	In post in 2/5/60|
Capt. Lt.	Hugh Polden	

Regiment disbanded in late 10/60
608 All the troop commanders were named in a printed list of early 4/60 apart from Major Smith, but he was probably still at Hull making the garrison secure after Colonel Overton's dismissal: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1); F. and D., p. 559. The complete list is to be found Monck's commissions' book under letter C with no alterations. This implies that all the officers were in post until the regiment was disbanded.

6th Regiment[609]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Howard	Succeeded Valentine Walton by early 4/60. Former col. 8th regt. F. dismissed in 5/59|
Major	Robert Huntington	In post in 5/60|
Captains	Edward Scotten	In post until 26/4/60. Replaced by Capt. Lt. Sir Henry Jones by 2/ 5/60[610]|
	John Butler	In post in 2/5/60[611]|
	Theophilus Barnard	Lt. to Capt. Butler. Replaced Stephen Hanbury on 25/2/60[612]|
Major	William Salkeld	In post in 25/2/60 and 5/60. Major Col. Dalbier's regt. H. Earl of Essex's army 45. Succeeded Capt. Phelps|
Capt. Lt	Sir Henry Jones	Succeeded by William Fenwick|

Regiment disbanded in 10/60
609 The last list of the troop commanders in the 6th regiment of horse dates from 5/60: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter H. As there are no alterations, it is most likely that they were in post at the disbandment.
610 Ibid, Thomason Tracts 669 f25 (5). Jones was a lieutenant in the King's Lifeguard in 1662: ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 12-21/2/62.
611 Ibid,
612 CJ vii, p. 704.

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Ingoldsby	Removed as col. of the regt. 5/59. Reinstated in 26/2/60. In post till disbandment|
Major	Thomas Babbington	Former major in the regt. Dismissed 5/59. Succeeded Major Breman c. 2/3/60. In post in 6/60 and 12/60[613]|
Captains	John Barker	Still capt. in 2/5/60[614]. Succeeded by Edward Rolt, who was in post in 6/60 and 12/60[615]|
	Gabriel Hopkins	In post in 6/60 and 12/60|
	Timothy Clare[616]	Joined Lambert in 4/60 whilst still apparently capt. Succeeded by Henry FitzJames, who was in post in 6/60 and 12/60|

	George Elsmore	Removed 5/59. Reinstated 3/60.In post in 6/60 and 12/ 60[617]|
Capt. Lt.	Edward Parry	Removed 5/59. Reinstated 3/60. In post in 6/60 and 12/60|

Regiment disbanded in early 12/60

613 For the officers' names at the disbandment, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 13-20/12/1660.
614 BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5).
615 Edward Rolt was in the army in 9/58. He signed the army's address to Richard Cromwell: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 178.
616 For an account of Clare's behaviour in 4/60, see F. and D; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 28/6-5/7/60.
617 Elsmore must have replaced Toomes soon after Monck obtained the authority to commission officers in late February 1660.

8th Regiment[618]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	George Monck	
Major	Thomas Johnson	Major at disbandment|
Captains	Thomas Symnell	Capt. at disbandment|
	Peter Wilmot	Ditto|
	John Paddon	Ditto|
	Anthony Nowens	Lt. in 5/59 to Capt. Wilmot. Took over Michael Richardson's troop in 9/4/60| Capt. at disbandment|
Capt. Lt.	Phillip Wilkinson	In post in 4/60 and 8/60|

Regiment disbanded in 1/61

618 All the troop commanders and the captain lieutenant were in place in mid-8/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 16-23/8/60. For those at disbandment, see ibid, 3-10/1/61.

9th Regiment (A)[619]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Saunders	Succeeded by Lord Falkland in early 6/60|
Major	Nathaniel Barton	25/2/60. Succeeded by Major Morgan in early 6/60, but possibly earlier[620]|
Captains	**Daniel Dale**	Still in post in 25/2/60 but prob. later|
	Robert Greenwood	Succeeded by Thomas Morley in late 6/60[621]|
	Samuel Doughty	
	John Sherman	Succeeded by Col. Henry Heylin as troop commander in early 7/60[622]|
Capt. Lt.	**John Scott**	In post in 25/2/60 but prob. later|

619 There is a list of the regiment in Moncks' letter book under letter S. It is undated and could have been written in at any time between 25/2/60 and Colonel Saunders' departure. However, given that the 9th regiment had been remodelled by Parliament and not by Monck after the collapse of Lambert's coup, an early date seems likely. The names of five of the six troop commanders at the regiment's disbandment are recorded below. A comment in BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus for 27/12/60-3/1/61 shows that all six troops had been disbanded by early 1/61.
620 Ibid, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 14-21/6/60.
621 For Morley and Heylin see ibid, 29/6- 5/7/60.
622 Ibid, 28/6-5/7/60.

9th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Lord Falkland	Commissioned in early 6/60[623]|
Major	Bledered Morgan	Succeeded by Henry Heylin.Troop disbanded 4/12/60[624]|
Captains	**Daniel Dale**[625]	
	Samuel Doughty	Troop disbanded 11/60[626]|
	Thomas Morley	XXX Troop disbanded 4/12/60| Lt. in the King's Lifeguard 62[627]|
Colonel	Henry Heylin	XXX. Succeeded Capt. Sherman|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Replacements Captains	XXX James	Troop disbanded in 11/60|
	XXX Salkeld[628]	Ditto|

Regiment disbanded in Scotland in 11/60

623 See ibid, 14-21/6/60 for Falkland and Morgan.
624 See BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 10-17/12/60 for the disbandment of Heylin's and Morley's troops.
625 Dale left the regiment during the course of 1660.
626 For the first three troops disbanded, see ibid, Mercurius Politicus 15-22/11/60.
627 Ibid, 14-21/2/62.
628 It is possible that this officer may have been in the 6th regiment of horse earlier in the year.

12th Regiment[629]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Hugh Bethell	
Major	William Goodrick	In post in 4/60[630]|
Captains	John Pockley	Ditto|
	John Hatfield	Ditto|
	Walter Bethell	Ditto|
	George Packe	Ditto| Succeeded by William Rhodes Packe's lt., who was succeeded by his lt. Francis Stirling in 7/60[631]|
Capt. Lt.	Christopher Bacon	Ditto| Succeeded by 21/7/60 by Robert Cox, lt. to Capt. Hatfield[632]|

Regiment disbanded in 10/60

629 All six troop commanders were in the regiment in 9/4/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, E1021 (1). There are no lists later than that, but the entry in Monck's commissions' book implies strongly that all the officers apart from George Packe and Christopher Bacon were in post until disbandment.
630 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter B; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1021 (1).
631 For Rhodes as Packe's lieutenant see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 19.
632 For the changes in 7/60 see ibid, Clarke Ms 53, letter B.

13th Regiment (A)[633]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	George Smithson	Succeeded Col. Lilburne in 2/60. Demoted to major in 7/60|
Major	Thomas Strangeways	Succeeded Thomas Lilburne, major on 25/2/60, by late 4/60|Displaced by Smithson in 7/60 and left the regt.|
Captains	Francis Wilkinson	
	William Wheatley	
	Thomas Lilburne	Reverted to capt. from major by 4/60|
	William Rhodes	Lt. to Capt. Packe 12th regt. H. in 1/60[634]. Succeeded Capt. Wycliffe who was lt. to Capt. Wilkinson in 7/60[635]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Fairfax	Lt. to John Wycliffe 25/2/60| Lt. to Major Smithson in 7/60|

633 For the troop commanders in 4/60 see ibid, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 22-29/4/60, for those in 7/60, see ibid, 12-19/7/60.
634 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 19.

635 Wycliffe was commissioned on 25/2/60, but his name does not appear in any later list of the troop commanders in the regiment: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letters B and S.

13th Regiment (B)[636]		
Colonel	The Earl of Oxford	Commissioned by 12/7/60|
Major	George Smithson	Ditto|
Captains	Francis Wilkinson	Ditto|
	William Wheatley	Ditto|
	Thomas Lilburne	Ditto|
	William Rhodes	Ditto| Left regt. soon afterwards. Succeeded by Sir William Blakiston|
Capt. Lt.	Sir Thomas Armstrong	Commissioned by 12/7/60| Lt. King's Lifeguard 2/62[637]|

Regiment disbanded in 11/61

636 The list is printed in BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 12-19/7/60. A slightly later one is in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter O. This mentions Sir William Blackiston.

637 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 14-21/2/62.

14th Regiment (A)	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Ralph Knight	Demoted to acting col. for the duke 7/60[638]|
Major	Phillip Prime	In post 25/2/60 and 7/60|
Captains	Thomas Coulson	Ditto and ditto|
	William Goodwin	Ditto and ditto|
	Henry Ogle	Ditto and ditto|
	Francis Hacker junior	In post 4/60 and 2/5/60[639]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Bourne	In post 4/6/60. Became Knight's lt. in 7/60|

638 Knight apparently remained colonel during the six weeks Gloucester was in overall command. He was not recommissioned as major as was the case with other colonels demoted from June 1660 onwards. For this and the other changes in the troop commanders, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 19-26/7/60.

639 CSPD 1658-9, p. 389; BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5); ibid, E 1021 (1).

14th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	The Duke of Gloucester	Commissioned mid-7/60. D. 9/60|
Major	Phillip Prime	
Captains	Thomas Coulson	
	William Goodwin	
	Henry Ogle	
	XXX[640]	
Capt. Lt.	Phillip Howard	

Regiment disbanded in 12/60

640 Only five troop commanders are named in the list.

15th Regiment (A)	Name	Military career
Colonel	Francis Hacker	Succeeded by Lord Hawley|
Major	William Hubbard[641]	
Captains	Clement Needham	
	Thomas Craddock	His troop deserted to Lambert in late 4/60[642]|
	Edward Shepherdson	
	William Watts	
Capt. Lt.	John Finnis	

641 For the officers in late 4/60 see ibid, Mercurius Publicus, 26/4-3/5/60. All the troop commanders were removed in 7/60 . Their replacements all seem to have been former royalist officers.
642 Ibid, 19-26/4/60.

15th Regiment (B)		
Colonel	Lord Hawley[643]	Commissioned 23/6/60. Royalist col. 1st Civil War|
Major	Sir Christopher Wray	
Captains	Phillip Sherrard	
	James Muddiford	
	Sir Thomas Stukeley	
	Sir Francis Vincent	
Capt. Lt.	John Osbourne	

Regiment disbanded in late 11/60
643 The troop commanders were those in place in late 6/60: ibid, 28/6-5/7/60. The list is confirmed by Monck's commissions' book, which adds the name of the captain lieutenant: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter H.

16th Regiment (A) [644]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Unton Croke	Succeeded by Daniel O'Neale 7/60[645]|
Major	George Sedacue	Formerly Adj. Gen. H.| Gone by 7/60|
Captains	Nathaniel Whetham jun.	Gone by 7/60|
	David Gascoyne	Ditto|
	Noel Boteler	Ditto|
	William Upcott	Lt. to Capt. Gascoyne. Prob. replaced Capt. Thomas Randall by 30/2/60. In post by early 4/60[646]| Gone by 7/60|
Capt. Lt.	Charles Croke	Capt. Lt. 1/60, 4/60| Gone by 7/60|

644 For the officers in post in late 4/60, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus 22-29/4/60.
645 For the troop commanders in late 7/60, see ibid, 26/7-2/8/60.
646 Ibid, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 27/2-5/3/60; ibid, 16-23/4/60.

16th Regiment (B)		
Colonel[647]	Daniel O'Neale	
Major	Sir John Stevens	Succeeded Major Sedacue|
Captains	XXX Bertie	Formerly Capt. Upcott's troop|
	Lord Mandeville	Formerly Capt. Whetham's troop|
	Nicholas Armorer	Formerly Capt. Gascoyne's troop|
	William Cecil[648]	Formerly Capt. Noel Boteler's troop|
Capt. Lt.	William Bassett	Possible transfer from the 26th regt. F.| Lt. in the King's Lifeguard 2/62[649]|

Regiment disbanded in early 12/60

647 The new commissions were issued in late 7/60: ibid, Mercurius Politicus, 26/7-2/8/60.

648 Cecil was presumably the former captain in the 11th regiment of horse who had left the army at about the time of Charles I's execution. For this see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 54, 96.

649 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 14-21/2/62.

17th Regiment[650]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Edward Rossiter	Replaced Okey in late 2/60. Col. NMA 45-47|
Major	James Dennis	Replaced Wagstaffe|
Captains	**Henry Cleare junior**[651]	Replaced c. 4/60|
	Thomas Crowther	
	William Linley	
	Richard Ward	
Capt. Lt.	**Robert Rose**	Succeeded by Vesey Bouchier, lt. to Capt. Beke 5th regt. H. 7/59[652]|
Additions Captains	Richard Cornes[653]	Restored to his captaincy lost in 5/59. In post by 6/60|
	John Barker	In post in late 4/60. There were apparently two Captains John Barker in the army at that time|
	Francis Crewe	In post c. 11/60[654]|

Regiment disbanded in 11/60

650 There is only a partial updated list of the regiment when Rossiter was colonel. It appears to date from very early in his colonelcy: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, letter R.

651 One of the bolded captains had been replaced by John Barker by the time of Lambert's uprising according to F. and D. This is confirmed by the list in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 53, Letter R.

652 CJ vii, p. 725; CSPD 1659-60, p. 29. Bouchier had been lieutenant to Captain Hart in the same regiment in 6/53: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 43, unfol.

653 The three names are given together with Captain Linley in the undated list in Monck's commissions' book. It can be inferred that they were commissioned after Rossiter became colonel.

654 BL, Mercurius Publicus, 13-20/12/1660. This man had been commissioned as quartermaster in Captain Castle's troop in Colonel Okey's regiment in 5/50: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 26

18th Regiment[655]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Thomas Morgan	
Major	John Farmer	In post 5/60[656]
Captains	**William Hellin**	
	John Ogle	
	John Wetmore[657]	
	Theophilus Farmer	
Capt. Lt.	Francis Kelly	Lt. to Capt. Hellin 9/59. Capt. Lt. 60[658]

Regiment disbanded in Scotland in 10/60 apart from Morgan's troop

655 Morgan's regiment has been converted from dragoons into cavalry in 11/59: F. and D.

656 BL, Thomason Tracts, 669 f25 (5).

657 Wetmore and Farmer raised additional troops in 11/59 when the regiment was converted into cavalry. In 11/53 Wetmore had been serving as lieutenant to Captain Robinson on the Isle of Lewes: Chequers Ms 782, unfol.

658 CSPD 1659-60, p. 203. The troop went to Portugal with Morgan in 1662: Riley, *The Last Ironsides,* p. 49.

Lifeguard	Name	Military Career
Captain	Phillip Howard[659]	Commissioned in 25/2/60. In post in 2/5/60
Lieutenant[660]	Robert Harley Henry Monck	Ditto 2/5/60 Cor. 25/2/60, 2/5/60. Commissioned as lt. on 23/6/60[661]

Commissioned as the 3rd troop of the King's Lifeguard (the Duke of Albemarle's) in 2/1661

659 The command was probably vacant from Evelyn's dismissal in 10/59. Phillip Howard was not the man who had been captain in the 4th regiment of horse in 1647. For this see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 61-2.

660 The lieutenancy was vacant from the date of Cathness's dismissal in 12/59 for supporting Lambert against Parliament. Harley's most recent command had been as major of Edward Massey's regiment of horse disbanded in 1646: F. and D.; Spring, *Waller's Army*, p. 147.

661 Dalton, *Army Lists* i, p. 3.

Part IV

The Regimental Listings: Ireland

Company and Troop Commanders June 1649-May 1650

Infantry: New Model Army Regiments

3rd Regiment[1]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Hardress Waller	
Lt. Col.	Thomas Smith	X in 1/50 by explosion of gunpowder in London before he could join his co. in Ireland[2]
Captains	Richard Hodden	
	Brian Smith	
	Ralph Wilson	Former capt. lt. Full capt. by 12/49[3]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

1 The regiment was divided in two towards the end of 1649 with the first battalion being sent to Ireland and five new companies being added to the second to replace them. The five companies intended for Ireland were Waller's, Smith's, Hodden's, Brian Smith's and Wilson's. For this see BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 17-24/12/1649. They landed at Kinsale at the end of December: ibid, Thomason Tracts E 608 (6). The battalion in Ireland was increased to ten companies in early 1651.

2 ibid, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 7-14/1/1650. Smith's successor may have been William Wade, the captain of a company in the regiment not chosen for service in Ireland: ibid, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 17-24/12/49; Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 114. He may have taken over Smith's company whilst Lieutenant Lewis Northcott took over his. For this see above p. 198.

3 TNA, E 121/1/6/30, entry 165; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 17-24/12/1649.

4th Regiment[4]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Isaac Ewer	
Lt. Col.	Robert Saunders[5]	Col. of his own regt. in Ireland in 6/50. Succeeded by John Puckle
Major	William Disney John Puckle	Transferred to Foulke's regt. as lt. col.[6]
Captains	Isaac Smith	X at Drogheda
	John Puckle	Promoted to major by 4/50. Lt. Col. by 6/50[7]
	William Stratton	Major in succession to Puckle by 6/50[8]
	Francis Wheeler	
	Edward Humphreys	Prob. X at storming of Clonmel in 5/50[9]
	Richard Tonson	
	William Ewer??[10]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captains	James Hutchinson	In post in 10/50. Lt. to Capt. Wheeler 4th regt. F. NMA[11]
	Giles Gregory	In post in 10/50[12]
	John Ewer senior	In post in 1/51[13]
	John Ewer junior	Ditto

4 A document written in late 1649 or early 1650 itemising arrears owing to officers in the regiment listed for Ireland gives Lieutenant

Colonel Saunders, Major Disney and Captains Puckle and Stratton: TNA, E 121/4/1/38, entry 23.
5 Saunders was wounded at the siege of Drogheda in 9/49. but he recovered after returning briefly to England. He is first referred to as colonel in 6/50: ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 337.
6 Disney was also wounded at Drogheda: BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 28/9-4/10/49. As lieutenant colonel he returned to England in 1650 with Captain Edward Puckle to raise two companies of infantry for Colonel John Foulke's regiment. Later in the year he was described as having been seriously wounded: CSPD 1650, pp. 522, 592.
7 See below p. 199.
8 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 347.
9 F. and D. citing J. Gilbert, *A Contemporary History of Affairs in Ireland 1641-52* (3 vols., Dublin, 1879) ii, p. 409.
10 William Ewer was an ensign in the New Model Army in 4/47 and captain lieutenant to Colonel Ewer in 7/47. He became a full captain in 6/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 5, ibid, Clarke Ms 41, fo. 103. There is no evidence that he served in Ireland.
11 Ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo.6; TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 128.
12 Ibid.
13 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo.85.

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	Lord Lieutenant of Ireland 49|
Lt. Col.	Henry Bowen	
Major	Lewis Audley	Nominated in 7/49. Capt. H. in Scotland late 50[14]|
Captains	George Drury	Major by 6/50 in Gifford's regt.| D. by 11/51[15] Prob. succeeded by Capt. Thomas Betts[16]|
	Thomas Dancer	
	Thomas Creamer[17]	
	Henry Whittle[18]	
	Henry Flower	Major of this regt. in 6/50 and prob. earlier[19]|
	Thomas Walker	Capt. F. in Ireland before 2/50[20]|
	Thomas Segrave[21]	
	John Jewell	In post by 12/49| D. by 11/51[22]|
Capt. Lt.	**George Townshend**	In the regt. in England, but possibly not in Ireland|

14 Ibid, SP 28/61, fo. 452; CSPD 1650, pp. 352, 607.
15 CJ vii, p. 39.
16 Betts was a captain in the regiment by 6/50: TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 335.
17 Creamer almost certainly did not serve in Ireland. His company was probably commanded by John Jewell.
18 See p. 9 above for his earlier career.
19 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 359.
20 Walker was mentioned as being captain in this regiment before 1650 in Richard Elton's *The Compleat Body of the Art Military:* F. and D.
21 Segrave's company was disbanded in 1655: J.P. Prendergast, *The Cromwellian Settlement of Ireland* (1870), p. 134.
22 Jewell's company left Barnstable for Ireland in 12/49: BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 24-31/12/49. Notice of his death is given in CJ vii, p. 39.

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Hewson	
Lt. Col.	Daniel Axtell	Lt. Col. 4/50. Col. F. Ireland by 6/50[23]|
Major	John Carter	Succeeded possibly first by Thomas Atkinson and then by William Arnop[24]|
Captains	**Samuel Grime/Graeme**[25]	Listed for Ireland in 5/49[26]|
	Alexander Brayfield	Major to Axtell regt. F. in Ireland in 11/50[27]|
	Thomas Atkinson	Listed for Ireland 49|
	George Jenkins	Mortally wounded at Drogheda 9/49[28]|
	Samuel Axtell	Formerly lt. to Capt. Atkinson.[29] Listed for Ireland 49|
	George Smith	Formerly lt. to Capt. Brayfield. Ditto[30]|
	Ralph Gayle	Formerly lt. to Capt. Toppendene. Ditto|

	Edward Hoare?[31]	
	John Davies[32]	XXX
	Henry Jones?	In post in 6/50[33]
Capt. Lt.	XXX Ramsey	X at the storming of Drogheda in 9/49

23 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 8-15/4/1650; TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 325.
24 For Arnop's miraculous recovery from injuries sustained in the Second Civil War, see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 92. Neither Carter nor Atkinson seems to have gone to Ireland, though both were listed in 5/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 44.
25 It is possible that none of the bolded names served in Ireland.
26 Grime was in Ireland in 12/55, but not necessarily in the army: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 559.
27 Brayfield was lieutenant colonel by 3/54: ibid, p. 410.
28 CJ, vii, pp. 38, 40. It is not known who replaced him.
29 TNA, E 121/4/7/50, entry 14.
30 For George Smith's lieutenancy, see ibid, E 121/2/1/18, entry 11. For the remainder, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 67, fo. 44.
31 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 137.
32 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 154. A John Davies had been ensign in Captain Grime's company in the mid-1640s: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 119.
33 See below p. 202.

13th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	George Cooke[34]	
Lt. Colonel	William Throckmorton	In post in 8/49[35]
Major	John Overstreet	In post in 9/49. Seemingly lt. col. in the regt. in 4/53[36]
Captains	**Edward Tomkins**	Comptroller of the train of artillery in Ireland until 6/59[37]
	William Walker	Capt. in this regt. in 6/49 and 2/50[38]
	Henry Harbottle	In post in 2/50[39]
	XXX Combie[40]	
	Henry Cooper/Cope[41]	
	Alexander Staples	In post in 12/49[42]
	XXX Todd	X in Ireland in 12/49[43]
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Barrington	

34 The regiment left for Ireland in 8/49. F. and D. suggest that it may have marched under another colonel after Cooke had been appointed governor of Wexford in 1650, or else that it became the garrison regiment. The latter seems the more likely as, although the regiment was merged with Sadleir's regiment after Cooke' death, it still had an independent existence in 2/51: CSPD 1651, p. 34. In fact the number of company commanders from the 13th regiment of foot who served in Sadleir's regiment subsequent to the merger makes me wonder if Sadleir was colonel of the 13th regiment in succession to Cooke, and that he used his old regiment to recruit his new one. The survival of Sadleir's regiment beyond the disbandment of 1655 would also support the notion that it was indeed the 13th regiment of foot.
35 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 87.
36 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 369; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 329; BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 34.
37 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 609.
38 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 95; BL, Thomason Tracts E 608 (6).
39 Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, pp. 161-2.
40 Combie, Walker and Barrington were officers in Colonel George Cooke's regiment in 5/49 when it was chosen to serve in the expedition to reconquer Ireland: Worc. College, Clarke Ms. 67, forces for Ireland, unfol.
41 Cooper was in the regiment in 10/49 and 12/49: TNA, SP 28/63, fo. 41; ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 24.
42 ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 31.
43 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 7-14/1/1650.

Infantry: Regiments Raised for Service in Ireland in 1649 and Shipped to Ireland during that Year

Regiment[44]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Phayre	Lt. Col. Townshend's regt. F. in Ireland 47| Commissioned 4/49[45]|
Lt. Col.	Christopher Elsyng **[46]	
Major	John Nelson **[47]	In post mid-49| Lt. Col. of Reeves's regt. by 6/50. Succeeded by Capt. John Denison of Stubber's regt.|
Captains	Thomas Chandler **	Major in Stubber's regt. F. before 5/50|
	Andrew Ruddock	In post in 8/49. Capt. Henry Grey's regt. F. in Lincs. 4/45[48]|
	Alexander Barrington[49]	
	Michael Gale **	
	William Candler **[50]	
	Michael Bland	
	Samuel Jervis	
	Nicholas Spencer	In post in 10/49[51]|
Capt. Lt.	James Knight	
Possible Captain	Phillip? Carteret[52]	

44 TNA, SP 28/47, fo. 166. Some of Phayre's officers and many of the rank-and-file had served in Colonel Sir Michael Livesey's regiment of foot raised in Kent in 1648. The officers are identified above with the symbol ** but Nelson was only a captain: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 17, unfol.; CSPD 1649-50, pp. 66, 68. All the company commanders named above are listed in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, forces for Ireland, unfol. with Nelson as major. The regiment left England in the second half of 1649: CSPD 1649-50, p. 127. The State Papers do not give a date for the actual sailing, which probably means that it was shipped to Ireland with the New Model Army brigade in August. For this see the footnote for Ireton's regiment.
45 TNA, SP 28/47, fo. 166.
46 Elsyng was a major in Inchiquin's command in 7/47: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 399 (33).
47 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 38. Nelson, formerly a captain under Inchiquin's command, had gone over to Cromwell by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280. He was still major in this regiment in 11/49: TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 38.
48 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 123; LJ vii, p. 284.
49 Barrington had previously commanded a company in the Harwich garrison in England, but it had been disbanded: CSPD 1649, p. 550.
50 Candler was serving in the same regiment as Colonel Stubber in 1645: Spring, *Eastern Association*, pp. 89-90.
51 TNA, SP 28/63, fo. 267.
52 For a discussion of Phillip Carteret see p. 203.

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Peter Stubber[53]	Major in Col. Rainsborough's regt. F. serving in Lincolnshire to 5/45. Lt. Col. S. Ireland 7/47. Capt. of firelocks co. guarding NMA train of artillery 1/49[54]|
Lt. Col.	XXX John Gray[55]	Post unfilled in 5/49| In post in 5/50. Wounded at Clonmel|
Major	John Gray Thomas Chandler	In post in 5/49| In post by 5/50[56]. Formerly capt. in Stubber's regt.|
Captains	Humphrey Hurd	In post in 5/49[57]|
	Thomas Davies	Ditto|
	John Webb	Ditto|
	Benjamin Lucas	Ditto|
	John Markasset[58]	Ditto|
	Walter Clifford[59]	Ditto|

	John Denison	Ditto| Major in Phayre's regt. by 6/50|
	Robert Franklyn	In post in 5/49[60]|
Capt. Lt.	Andrew Grace	Ditto|
Possibles		
Captains	XXX Sydenham	In post in 5/49[61]|
	Thomas Burrell	In post in 9/50|

53 Ibid, SP 28/58, fo. 25. The names of the eight captains in the regiment in 4/49 together with those of the colonel and the major appear in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, forces for Ireland, unfol. Presumably the eighth company commanded by a captain became in due course the lieutenant-colonel's. The regiment arrived in Ireland in c. 6/49: CSPD 1649-50, pp. 131, 169.
54 Spring, *Eastern Association*, p. 90; TNA, SP 28/58, fo. 25; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 399 (33).
55 TNA, SP 28/67, fo. 303.
56 Ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 337.
57 Hurd had served under Inchiquin but gone over to Parliament by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280.
58 Markasset may not have served in Ireland. His name only appears in the list in the commissions' book.
59 Clifford was in charge of a company just prior to embarkation: F. and D. I have not come across any mention of his serving in Ireland.
60 I have no record of a Captain Robert Franklyn serving in Ireland.
61 CSPD 1649-50, p. 163. Sydenham's men had behaved monstrously on their march from Kent to the port of embarkation. Possibly he was cashiered as a result.

Regiment[62]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Hercules Huncks	Served in Munster in 47 as major of Lord Lisle's regt. F.[63]|
Lt. Col.	Thomas Raymond[64]	
Major	John Read?	In post in 9/50[65]|
Captains	Edward Godney[66]	
	Richard Aylett	
	Robert Lamport	
	Stephen Caine	
	James Flower[67]	
	John Ward?	In post in 2/51[68]|
	Richard Elliott	Capt. in the regt. when it left England[69]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

62 The regiment arrived in Ireland in 7/49 or thereabouts. Most companies went to Dublin but two were assigned to Derry: CSPD 1649-50, pp. 118, 182.
63 F. and D.
64 Raymond had served as a captain under Inchiquin but gave up his commission in the winter of 1649-9: CJ vi, p. 280. He was lieutenant colonel from 4/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, forces for Ireland, unfol.
65 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 182.
66 Lieutenant Colonel Raymond and the first five captains are named in Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, forces for Ireland, unfol.
67 TNA, E 121/1/6/46B, entry 10.
68 See below p. 204. Another John Ward was lieutenant in the 9th regiment of foot in the late 1640s: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 135.
69 CRO, Quarter Sessions Files, Easter 1654, fo. 174. All such references refer to maimed soldier petitions.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Henry Ireton[70]	Commissary general H. NMA. Lord Deputy to Oliver Cromwell in Ireland 49|
Lt. Col.	Edward Woolf	D. 11/49[71]|
	William Leigh	Wounded at Clonmel in 5/50[72]|
Major	William Leigh	In post in 9/49. Capt. 1st regt. F. NMA. Lt. Col. of the regt. by 5/50[73]|
	Charles Bolton	Major of the regt. by 5/50. X at Clonmel[74]|
Captains	Charles Bolton	Succeeded William Leigh as major|

	George Pepper	Senior capt. in 6/50[75]
	John Barrett[76]	In post in 6/50
	John Robotham[77]	
	William Buckham[78]	
	William? Morris	In post in 6/50
	John Galland	In post in 6/50
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

70 F. and D. described the date of the regiment's arrival in Ireland as obscure. However, it was there by early September. It almost certainly travelled in convoy with New Model Army regiments: CSPD 1649-50, p. 306.
71 A Lieutenant Colonel Rush was named in 7/49: TNA, SP 28/61, fo. 450. This was probably a clerical error, as Woolf was lieutenant colonel by 9/49: ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 443. For his death of a fever, see F. and D.
72 Gilbert, *Contemporary History* ii, p. 409.
73 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 409; ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 327.
74 Ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 339; CSPD 1653-4, p. 391.
75 For captains in post in 6/50, see TNA, SP 28/68, fos. 368-70.
76 CSPD 1651, p. 34.
77 Robotham's commission was issued on 24/4/49: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. I have no evidence that he served in Ireland.
78 Buckham was in post in 8/49: TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 99.

Regiment[79]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Robert Venables	Lt. Col. Sir William Brereton's brigade 46
Lt. Col.	Robert Barrow	Commissioned in 4/49. In post in 9/49[80]
Major	Phillip Pinchion	Major in Simon Needham's regt. F. in Ireland 47[81]. In post in 4/50[82]
Captains	XXX Sloper	Commissioned 4/49[83]
	John Duckenfield	Capt. at the raising of the regt.[84]
	XXX Done	Ditto[85]
	John Stevens	In post in 9/49[86]
	XXX Honeyford	Commissioned in 4/49[87]
	William Lane	Ditto
	XXX Hooper?	
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Chetham	In post in 10/49. Lt. to Lt. Col. Venables's co. in Cheshire 3/47[88]
Possibles Captains	XXX Bromwell	Capt. in this regt. His co. was disbanded in 55

79 The regiment was shipped to Dublin in 7/49 or thereabouts: CSPD 1649-50, p. 207. Venables' commission was signed on 1/4/49 as were those of Lieutenant Colonel Barrow and a Captain William Lewis: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. Pinchion's may have been issued at about the same time. A list of officers on the first page of Fairfax's commissions' book includes some names that are not recorded elsewhere in the book. Major Pinchion is one of these: ibid, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 1.
80 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69 unfol. 12/4/49; TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 412.
81 ibid, SP 28/47, fo. 216.
82 Ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 256.
83 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 24/4/49. If his first name was Simon, he had served under Inchiquin but had broken with him in the winter of 1648-9: CJ vi, p. 280.
84 TNA, E121/1/2/49B, unnumbered; CRO, Quarter Sessions Files, Trinity 1652, fo. 150.
85 Ibid, Trinity 1652, fo.150.
86 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 651.
87 Captains Honeyford and Lane were commissioned at the same time as Captain Sloper and Lieutenant Colonel Barrow: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 24/4/49. I have no evidence that either of them served in Ireland.
88 TNA, SP 28/124, fo. 25.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Tothill[89]	Gov. of Compton Wynates House in Warwickshire 1644-6|
Lt. Colonel	Charles O'Hara	In post in 11/49[90]| Gone from the regt. by c. 5/50|
Major	John Warren	Major in 9/49 and 5/50; lt. col. 6/50[91]|
Captains	John Woodcock	In post in 5/49[92]|
	Roland Oakley?[93]	
	Edward Browne?	
	XXX Gifford/Jefford?	
	Henry Gibbons?	
	XXX Duckenfield[94]	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

89 The regiment arrived in Ireland in late April or early May 1649: CSPD 1649-50, pp. 96, 149.
90 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 40. O'Hara had been company commander in the 4th regiment of foot from 1645 until May 1647 when he enlisted as senior captain in Colonel O'Connolly's regiment of volunteers from the New Model Army to fight in Ireland, but in the aftermath of the First Army Coup O'Connolly's regiment was disbanded: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 45, 87,155.
91 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 384, ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 301; ibid, SP28/68, fo. 418.
92 Ibid, SP 28/60, fo. 7.
93 There is no list of company commanders in the regiment in either Fairfax's commissions' book or the *State Papers*. The captains in the table were named in warrants issued in 9/ and 10/50. For this see below p. 206.
94 A Captain Duckenfield had served in Tothill's regiment before 6/50: TNA, SP 28/92, fo. 86.

Infantry: Regiments with Irish rather than English Antecedents

Regiment[95]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Owen O'Connolly Leonard Lytcott/Lydcott	X c. 10/49[96]| Col. H. Northampton garr. 1st Civil War[97]|
Lt. Col.	Robert Russell[98]	Replaced Lytcott as col. when he was commissioned to raise a regt. H. for the Scottish campaign c. 6/50[99]|
Major	Henry Clements	In post before 4/50[100]|
Captains	Lawrence Hyde	In post in 5/50[101]|
	Humphrey Barrow	In post by 4/50|
	Gideon Fisher	Ditto|
	John Goodwin	Ditto|
	XXX Spencer	Ditto|
	Henry Ellis?	7/50, 10/50[102]|
	Major Edward Allen	4/50, 10/50[103]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

95 Considerable uncertainty surrounds the origins of this regiment. F. and D. make a tentative connection with one raised by Sir John Clotworthy in 1642, but conclude that it probably ceased to exist before 1649. They also suggest even more tentatively that Owen O'Connolly, who had been a captain in the regiment in 1643 together with Lytcott and Russell, succeeded Clotworthy as colonel. That cannot have been the case as O'Connelly was still being described in London as lieutenant colonel in 8/49: CSPD 1649-50, p. 261. All I can suggest is that he was commissioned as full colonel by Cromwell when the New Model Army brigade landed in Ireland. This is implied in E. Hogan ed., *The History of the Warr of Ireland* (Dublin, 1873), p. 92. Possibly O'Connolly tried to reform Clotworthy's regiment by recruiting his former soldiers, but he could have achieved little by the time of his death.
96 Lytcott was raising seven new companies in England in 4/50. Five hundred recruits, however, were siphoned off to fill up the ranks of regiments chosen for the invasion of Scotland, but Lytcott's regiment remained part of the army in Ireland under Russell's command until 1653: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 575 (11); CSPD 1650, pp. 539, 575, 596.
97 There has been some doubt as to whether Lytcott's first name was Thomas or Leonard. That it was Leonard is made very clear by the sources used in the biographical sketch of his chaplain Edward Archer in A. Lawrence, *Parliament's Army Chaplains* (1990), p. 91.
98 Russell was commissioned as lieutenant colonel in 5/50 in preference to Captain Spencer: CSPD 1650, p. 139.
99 Lytcott had raised his new regiment by 7/50: ibid, 1650, p. 253.
100 TNA, SP 28/67, fo. 258.

101 Ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 266; CSPD 1651, p. 550.
102 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 176.
103 This was probably the Edward Allen who had served as major in Colonel Francis Martin's regiment until it was reduced in 4/44, and then as a lieutenant colonel in Pembrokeshire: ibid, SP 28/34, fo. 298. For Allen and the four captains below him in 4/50 see CSPD 1650, p. 539. The fact that he held a captain's commission in the regiment is clear from ibid, p. 596.

Regiment[104]	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Arthur Culme	Col. 48. succeeding Col. William Flower| X at Clonmel 5/50. Succeeded by Lt. Col. Sadleir|
Lt. Colonel	Thomas Sadleir	Adj. Gen. F. 8/49. In post as lt. col. in 12/49[105]|
Major	Adoneus Culme	Capt. in the regt. in 48. Major in 10/49[106]|
Captains	Edward Fisher	
	John Usher	Not encountered in sources later than mid-48|
	John Itchingham	Ditto|
	Richard St. George	Transferred later to Sir Charles Coote's regt.|
	William Draper	
	Henry Butts?	In post in 7/50[107]|
	XXX Tighe??[108]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles and Replacements Captains[109]	Richard May	Major Col. Henry Gray's regt. in Ireland 47[110]|
	William Broadbent	
	Henry Lewis	Capt. in Col. Long's regt. 48[111]|

104 The officers in 1648 were Lieutenant Colonel Culme, Major John Sanders, and Captains Fisher to Draper, but not Sadleir or Butts: HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 595.
105 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 250.
106 HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 595; TNA, SP 28/63, fo. 47.
107 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 540.
108 Tighe was authorised to raise men for Culme's regiment in 5/49: CSPD 1649-50, p. 535.
109 All three captains were in post by the end of 1650. For this see p. 208.
110 TNA, SP 28/47, fo. 176.
111 HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 592. Long's was one of the regiments disbanded by Cromwell in 8/49.

Regiment[112]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote	Lord President of Connaught. Col. by 6/49 but prob. very much earlier|
Lt. Col.	Jackson or Newborough[113]	
Major	Henry Gore	Lt. Col. in 6/50|
Captains	Francis Gore	In post in 6/50 as major. Lt. Col in 4/52[114]|
	Robert Parker/Parkes	
	William Moore?[115]	
	Charles Gore	Prob. in post c. 6/50[116]|
	Robert Blakeney	
	George St. George	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

112 Although F. and D. were aware of this regiment's existence, they did not give it a separate chapter in Regimental History. A brief account of its history is to be found in their chapter on the Coote family's cavalry regiments.
113 The officers named here are in the list of unidentified officers in BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 29/6-5/7/49 and also in documents of a later date cited in listings 2,3 and 4.
114 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 718; BL, Thomason Tracts, The Impartial Scout, 4- 11/7/50.
115 See below pp. 233, 243.
116 A Captain Gore was wounded at the battle of Scariffhollis, but this could have been Francis before he became major of the regiment:

Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, p. 148.

Regiment[117]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Coote	Brother of Sir Charles Coote. Col. in 6/49 but prob. much earlier[118]|
Lt. Col.	Jackson or Newborough	In post in 6/49|
Major	XXX Henderson	Ditto|

117 The earliest list I have found of this regiment dates from the time of its disbandment in 1653. It is reproduced below on p. 209. Both the field officers had left by then, but I do not doubt that some of the other company commanders were in post three years earlier.
118 BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Intelligencer, 10-17/8/49.

Unidentified officers commanding companies in the two Coote regiments in 6/49

Lt. Cols.	XXX Jackson	
	XXX Newborough	
Captains	XXX Hoore	Possibly Francis Gore|
	XXX Dun	
	XXX Weir	
	XXX Gore	Possibly Charles Gore|
	XXX Boule	
	Robert Ormsby	Also capt. H.|
	XXX Hamilton	Ditto|
	Col. Sanderson	

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Gifford[119]	Major in Inchiquin's army in Ireland in 7/47[120]| Left regt. c. 5/50. Regt. allotted to Col. George Monck|
Lt. Col.	Henry Smithwick	In post in 11/49[121]|
Major	**XXX Williams**[122]	
Captains	Peter Carey	Capt. 1/49, 12/49[123]|
	Richard Burnell	In post in 12/49[124]|
	Robert Myhill/Michael	Capt. in 12/49[125]|
	Maurice Murphy/Murfee	In post in 12/49 and 5/50[126]|
	Adam Loftus	Ditto[127]|
	John Congreave	In post in 12/49[128]|
	John Gibbons	In post in 12/49 and 5/50[129]|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captain	Vere Hunt[130]	

119 Gifford played a prominent part in the change in allegiance of Lord Inchiquin's forces in Munster from the royalist coalition to Parliament in 10/49. He was commissioned as colonel of foot and as governor of Cork soon afterwards. His company commanders appear to have taken the same route as he had: F. and D; Cary, *Memorials of the Great Civil War* (2 vols., 1842) ii, p. 185.
120 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 399 (33).
121 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 288.
122 Williams was major early in 1649: ibid, SP 28/58, fo. 2.
123 Ibid, SP 28/58, fo. 10; ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 381.
124 Ibid, SP 28/58, fo. 3; SP 28/64, fo. 305.
125 Ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 285, 307.
126 Ibid, SP 28/64, fos. 282, 299, 382; ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 345.

127 Ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 279.
128 Ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 309.
129 Ibid, SP 28/65, fo. 48; SP 28/67, fo. 312.
130 See below p. 210

Infantry: Regiments Shipped to Ireland in 1647 which Were not Disbanded by Cromwell in August 1649

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	James Castle[131] Henry Slade	Lt. Col. to Col. Bosseville's regt. of Warwicks. F. to 8/46. Commissioned as col. of a regt. to go to Ireland 9/46. X at Drogheda[132]| Succeeded by Lt. Col. Slade, col. by 5/50[133]|
Lt. Col.	Henry Slade	Capt. in Bosseville's regt. In post as lt. col. from 9/46|
Major	William Purefoy[134] Edward Richardson	Major in Castle's regt. 46-49| Lt. Col to Slade and to Leigh| In post in 5/50[135]|
Captains	Alexander Castle	In post in 5/48 and 9/49[136]|
	Edward Richardson	Ditto. Promoted to major|
	Abraham Coles	In post in 5/48|
	George Higbed/Higby[137]	Capt. Lt. of the regt. in 5/48. Capt. 9/49| X at the capture of Kilkenny in 4/50[138]|
	Samuel Brereton	In post in 5/48|
	Edward Arles	Ditto|
	Henry Piers	In post in 9/47 and later[139]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

131 For the officers with the date 5/48 against their names see HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 591.
132 Spring, *Waller's Army*, p. 30; F. and D.
133 Spring, *Waller's Army*, p. 31; TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 391; ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 384.
134 William Purefoy senior, the regicide and colonel of a regiment of horse in Warwickshire in the First Civil War was about 70 years of age in 1650 and did not serve in Ireland. This man was presumably his nephew, namesake and heir: A. Hughes, *Politics, Society and Civil War in Warwickshire, 1620-1660* (Cambridge, 1987), p. 333. The officer's first name is given in TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 158.
135 Ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 384.
136 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 453.
137 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 423. Higbed had succeeded Captain Fortescue in 8/48: BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 11-18/8/48.
138 Ibid, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 8-15/4/50.
139 HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 597. Piers's name is not in the 5/48 list. However, it gives the names of only six captains, and he was in the regiment in the early 1650s. For this see p. 211.

Regiment[140]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Roger Fenwick	Major in a Shropshire regt. H. in 1645. Col. of a new regt. F. for Ireland 8/46[141]|
Lt. Col.	John Huetson Matthias Westmoreland	In post in 5/48[142]| In post in 7/49 and 6/50[143]|
Major	Thomas Stanley	In post in 12/49|
Captains	Robert Fenwick[144]	
	Richard Dixon	5/48, 10/50|
	Thomas Stanley	Capt. in Shropshire in 45. In post in Fenwick's regt. as capt. in 6/47 and 5/48. Major of the regt. by 12/49[145]|
	John Homan/Honor	In the regt. in 5/50[146]|
	Henry Pakenham	In post in 6/47 and 5/48. Transferred to Daniel Abbott's regt. Dr.[147]|
	Jeremy Hartley	In post in 6/47 and 5/48|
	George Corlett	Ditto|

	Thomas Payne	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	**Leonard Thickpenny**	Ditto|

140 The lists of the regiment for 5/47 and 5/48 are in HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, pp. 590-8.
141 R.N. Dore, The Letter Books of Sir William Brereton, *Lancashire and Cheshire Record Society* (2 vols. 1984, 1990) i, p. 229; ibid, ii, p. 383; CSPI 1633-47, pp. 470, 601.
142 See HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, pp. 590-1 for officers in post in 5/48.
143 BL, Thomason Tracts, Moderate Messenger, 2-9/7/49; TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 520. Westmoreland had brought three companies to Ireland in 5/49 or thereabouts. At that time his rank was major: CSPD 1649-50, pp. 77, 148-50.
144 Fenwick was in post in 8/49: TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 11.
145 Ibid, SP28/224, fo. 48; HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, pp. 590-1; Gilbert, *Contemporary History* ii, p. 355.
146 TNA, SP 28/67, fo. 268. Homan was probably major in a regiment in which he had previously served.
147 For Stanley, Pakenham and Hartley in 6/47 see BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 8/5-5/6/47.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Moore[148]	Col. in Lancashire in the 1st Civil War. Col. of a new regt. to fight in Ireland 8/46| D. in 5/50 of pleurisy[149]|
Lt. Col.	John Blagrave	In post by 5/48 and in 5/50[150]|
Major	Oliver Jones	In post in 1/51[151]|
Captains	Thomas Mullineux[152]	In post in 5/48 and 6/49 and possibly 1/51|
	Phillip Higginbotham	In post in 5/48 and 6/49|
	Arthur Swanwick	In post in 6/49|
	Edward Moore	Ditto|
	William Arnold	In post in 5/48[153]|
	Peter Kennard	In post in 5/48 and 7/50[154]|
	XXX Pigott[155]	
	Sir John Sherlock[156]	
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Crofts**	In post in 5/48[157]|
Possible Captain	Matthew Potter[158]	

148 Moore had agreed to raise a regiment of foot for service in Ireland in 8/46: CSPI 1633-47, pp. 470, 601. For its previous history see F. and D.
149 BL, Thomason Tracts, The Impartial Scout, 21-28/6/50.
150 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 373; ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 378. For officers in post in 5/48 see HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 597.
151 Jones was formerly a major in Inchiquin's command and then a captain in Colonel Kynaston's regiment, which was disbanded by Cromwell in 1649: ibid, SP 28/47, fo. 217; CJ vi, p. 282. He may only have been a captain in Moore's regt.
152 For Mullineux, Higginbotham and Swanwick, see Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, forces for Ireland, unfol. This makes it highly likely that they commanded newly-raised men who landed in Ireland in 7/49: F. and D. Mullineux was mentioned in a warrant issued in 6/51 but his regiment was not named: TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 180.
153 HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 593. Arnold was raising men for the regiment in 10/49: CSPD 1649, p. 590.
154 TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 568. The document dates from 7/50, but gives Moore as colonel rather than Blagrave.
155 For Pigott's service in Colonel Moore's regiment, see ibid, SP28/81, fo. 87.
156 Sherlock was described as being in Moore's former regiment in 8/52: ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 228.
157 HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 593.
158 See below p. 212.

Dragoons

1st Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Daniel Abbott	Major Okey's regt. Dr. NMA 6/47-6/49|
Major	Francis Bolton	Formerly lt. to Abbott, then capt. in Okey's regt. Major of this regt. by 8/49[159]|
Captains	John Disbrowe/Disborough	In post in 10/49[160]|
	Henry Crewkerne?	In post by 10/50[161]. Lt. to Major Abbott in Okey's regt. NMA|
	Henry Fulcher	In post in 8/49[162]. Capt. Okey's regt. NMA|

	Miles Ashton/Aston	In post in 9/49[163]. Possibly an officer in Shropshire in 2/45. Capt. in Ireland in 47 in Hungerford's regt.[164]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possible Captain	Anthony Woodley/Stoodley	7/50, 8/52[165]

159 TNA, SP 28/62, fos. 46, 432; F. and D.
160 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 252. A Captain John Disbrowe had succeeded Richard Deane as commander of the company of firelocks which guarded the train of artillery in the early years of the New Model Army. There was a proposal that it should be included in the new 13th regiment of foot in 1647, but instead it seems to have been disbanded as an economy measure in 1648: J. Sprigg, Anglia Rediviva (1647), p. 331; TNA, E 121/1/7/25, entry 7; ibid, E 121/2/5/14, entries 1-3. It would therefore have been natural for Disbrowe to have taken up a commission in a dragoon regiment, as dragoons were normally armed with firelocks.
161 See below p. 218.
162 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 115. However, there is no further evidence that Fulcher actually went to Ireland.
163 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 421.
164 CSPI 1633-47, p. 611.
165 TNA, SP 28/83, fo. 236; Bodleian Library, Tanner Ms 53, fo. 107.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Ingoldsby	Capt. 6th regt. F. 4/45-c. 6/47. Col. of this regt. by 10/49[166]
Major	Nicholas/William Moore	In post in 6/50[167]
Captains	Thomas Walcot?	In post in 7/50[168]
	James Napper?	In post in 9/50[169]
	Thomas Wrenn?	Ditto[170]
	William Miller?	In post in 6/50[171]
Capt. Lt.	William Thornhill?	In post in 7/50[172]

166 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 78; TNA, SP 28/63, fo. 9.
167 F. and D. have the major's first name as Nicholas, Dunlop has it as William. See below p. 219 for a discussion of this conundrum. Nicholas had been major of Okey's regiment of dragoons in the New Model Army until 5/47.
168 TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 389.
169 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 262.
170 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 675.
171 Ibid, SP 28/ 68, fo. 339.
172 ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 544

Cavalry: New Model Army Regiments

2nd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Horton Jerome Zanchy	D. in Ireland 10/49. Succeeded by Major Jerome Zanchy of Oliver Cromwell's regt. H. In post by 18/12/49[173]
Major	Thomas Pennyfather	Capt. in the regt. In post by 10/49. Succeeded major Bethell[174]
Captains	Elias Green	
	John Godfrey?	In post by 6/50 but prob. earlier. Lt. to Major Bethell in this regt.[175]
	Thomas Ball/Bull?	Prob. in post in 5/50.[176] Ex cor. to Col. Horton
	Richard Essex	Capt. in the regt. by early 12/49. Ex cor. to Capt. Benjamin Burgess in this regt. and prob. succeeded him[177]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possible Captain	Samuel Gardiner[178]	

173 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 31/12/49-7/1/50.
174 TNA, SP 28/63, fo. 14.
175 Godfrey was probably promoted on Bethell's resignation in mid-1649. For the junior officers in the regiment who gained promotion

from 1649 onwards see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 139.
176 A Captain Ball was under Zanchy's command in 5/50: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 608 (6).
177 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol.
178 Gardiner refused to serve in Ireland according to a contemporary source. However, a later one states that he travelled to Ireland with Jerome Zanchy and subsequently served in the Lifeguard there: BL, Thomason Tracts, the Moderate 21-28/11/49; Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 61. Almost certainly the second source relates to Samuel Gardiner junior, who was cornet to his namesake in England in the late sixteen-forties: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 139.

11th Regiment[179]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Henry Ireton	Major General in the army in Ireland|
Major	Anthony Morgan	Capt. 11th regt. H. NMA 46-49|
Captain	**George Hutchinson**[180]	
Captains[181]	Samuel Moody[182]	Prob. out of the army or a reformado|
	Robert Thornhill[183]	
	Benjamin Perry[184]	
Capt. Lt.	George Tracey	In post in 6/50. Cor. to Capt. Zanchy 4th regt. H. NMA[185]|
Possibles Captain	Richard Franklin	In post in 6/50. Capt. H. going to Ireland 49. Formerly capt. lt. 5th regt. H. NMA[186]|

179 The regiment was shipped to Ireland in 8/49 having been extensively remodelled after the Leveller revolt in which four of its six troops had been heavily involved. F. and D. show that only two troops went to Ireland and suggest that these were Morgan's and Gibbon's, but a document dating from 6/49 shows that Gibbon's troop had been reduced into Henry Pretty's troop in Lieutenant Colonel Shelburne's division of Oliver Cromwell's regiment also destined for Ireland. The second troop was probably George Hutchinson's, which was still in Ireton's regiment in 6/49 as it prepared for the Irish campaign: TNA, SP 28/61, fo. 366.
180 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army,* p. 109.
181 Moody, Thornhill and Perry were appointed just before the regiment left for Ireland in 7/49: TNA, SP28/61, fos. 349, 368, 375.
182 Moody commanded a troop in Colonel Vermuyden's regiment in the *Eastern Association* army but was not chosen to serve in the New Model: Spring, *Eastern Association*, p. 102. He was involved in the suppression of the Leveller revolt in 4/49: Gentles, *New Model Army,* p. 346. He was dead by the late 1650s: CSPD 1656-7, p. 332.
183 Confirmation that Thornhill had volunteered for service in Ireland is given in TNA, E 121/4/9/96A, entry 1.
184 Perry was serving in the regiment in 6/50: ibid, SP 29/68, fo. 450.
185 ibid, E 121/3/6/4, unnumbered. He was commanding the troop in 6/50: ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 394.
186 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 414. It is possible that Franklin succeeded Captain Hutchinson who, if he went to Ireland, had returned home by the end of the year: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 24/12/49.

Cavalry: Regiments Raised in England in 1649

Regiment 1st Division[187]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	
Major	Jerome Zanchy Daniel Redman	In post in 8/49.[188] Major in Sir William Brereton's regt. H. 45-6[189]| Gone by 11/49. Col. 2nd regt. H. on Horton's death| In post in 1/50[190]|
Captains	Daniel Redman	In post in 9/49.[191] Major after Zanchy's promotion|
	John Hardman/Hurdman	In post in 9/49. Formerly lt. to Capt. Jenkins in the 6th regt. H.[192]|
	XXX Wallis[193]	Prob. Peter Wallis who transferred to Henry Cromwell's regt. H. by 9/50|
	Abel Warren?	In post by 9/50. Cor. 9th regt. H. in the mid-40s. Listed for service in Ireland 4/49[194]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Mosse?	In post in 8/50[195]|
Possible Captains	Edward Warren Robert Preston	In post by 6/50. Q/M in the 6th regt. H. 49. Lt. in Oliver Cromwell's regt. in Ireland in 1/50[196]| In post by 6/50[197]|

187 This was not the 6th regiment of horse, which Cromwell had commanded since 6/45, but a new one raised for the expedition to Ireland. Initially a double regiment with twelve troops, it was soon divided into two conventional regiments with Cromwell commanding what had been the first division and Lieutenant Colonel Shelburne the second. For further information about the double regiment, see above p. 15.
188 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 8.
189 Dore, Brereton's Letter Books i, pp. 179-80.
190 TNA, SP 28/65, fo. 32.
191 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 408. Major in Colonel Lytcott's regiment in the Northampton garrison in 11/44, Redman was listed for service in Ireland in 1649: Spring, *Waller's Army*, p. 164; TNA, E 121/4/5/94*A*, entry 1.
192 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 455.
193 Ibid, SP 28/61, fo. 303.
194 Ibid, SP 28/31, fo. 285; ibid, E 121/4/2/40, entry 31; ibid, SP 28/61, fo. 344; ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 691.
195 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 254. Mosse was mentioned in a warrant issued in 6/50 but his was not named: ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 331.
196 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 557 (10); HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 601; TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 355.
197 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 428.

Regiment 2nd Division	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell Thomas Shelburne	Lt. Col. of Cromwell's double regt. Formerly major H. Buckinghamshire. In independent command as col. in 1/50[198]
Major	Henry Pretty	Capt. 11th regt. H. NMA 45-49. Major in this regt. in 7/49[199]
Captains	Henry Alland	In post in 7/49[200]
	Lewis Pemberton	In post in 8/49[201]
	Roger Yates	In post in 7/49[202]
	Thomas Scott[203]	Ditto
Capt. Lt.	Robert Seabrook	In post in 1/50[204]

198 F. and D; TNA, SP 28/65, fo. 11.
199 Ibid, SP 28/61, fo. 384.
200 Ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 257. A Henry Owland was serving in Sir William Waller's regiment of horse in 1644-5: Spring, Waller's A*rmy, p. 147*.
201 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 6; ibid, E 121/5/5/33, entry 9.
202 A list of 7/49 gives Major Pretty and Captains Yates, Scott and Alland: ibid, SP 28/61, fo. 384.
203 Scott volunteered for service in Ireland: ibid, E 121/4/1/unnumbered, entry 32; ibid, SP 28/61, fo. 384. A Captain Thomas Scott had been in command of the garrison at Rye in Sussex in 1/49. He was replaced by Captain John Browne, formerly of the 7th regiment of foot, by 7/49 at the latest: ibid, SP 28/58, fo. 112; ibid, SP 28/61, fo. 538.
204 Ibid, SP 28/65, fo. 38.

Regiment[205]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Henry Cromwell	Major 3rd regt. H. NMA[206]
Major	Peter Wallis?	In post in 9/50. Cor. to Sir Thomas Fairfax[207]
Captains	Francis Barrington[208]	Capt. Dr. NMA 47-49. In post in this regt. by 6/50 but prob. by 11/49[209]
	Richard Nicholetts?	In post by 7/50. Formerly capt. lt. of Okey's regt. Dr. NMA[210]
	Thomas Evans	3/50, 7/50. Prob. former capt. in Okey's regt. Dr.[211]
	Robert Stannard?	In post by 9/50. Lt. to Capt. Griffith Lloyd of the 4th regt. H. NMA[212]
Capt. Lt.	John Frank?	In post in 7/50. Formerly lt. to Capt. Henry Cannon 9th regt. H. NMA[213]

205 Henry Cromwell's regiment was a substitute for the 15th regiment of horse commanded by Francis Hacker which seems to have been determined to stay at home: CSPD 1649-50, p. 593. As a compromise three troops only were to be sent, but the order was rescinded in 4/50 because of the prospect of war with Scotland. Instead Henry Cromwell was to complete his regiment by drawing on cavalry already sent to Ireland. In the meantime Cromwell had shipped to Ireland the three troops he was to supply – his own, Barrington's and Nicholetts'. His was the troop he had commanded in the 3rd regiment of horse, the other two were from Okey's regiment of dragoons. By the end of 1650 he had managed to raise the other three troops presumably in the manner suggested: CSPD 1650, pp. 50, 82, 87, 121.
206 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 106.
207 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 636; ibid, SP 28/48, fo. 420.

208 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 320; ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 209. The account of Barrington's previous military career in F. and D. is incorrect. See Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 92, 104.
209 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 320.
210 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 450; Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 104-5.
211 CSPD 1650, p. 531; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 7-14/1/1650; TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 396.
212 See below p. 51 and Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 141.
213 Ibid, p. 144; TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 448.

Regiment[214]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Reynolds	Formerly major 6th regt. H. NMA. Commissioned as col. of new regt. H. for Ireland 10/48[215]|
Major	Robert Sparrow John Strelley Henry Owen	Commission issued 17/4/49[216]| Listed as capt. in Reynolds's regt. for service in Ireland| D. in Ireland before 1/50[217]| In post in 1/50[218]|
Captains	Henry Owen	Capt. in 5/49[219]|
	Theophilus Sandford	Troop left for Ireland c. 11/49[220]|
	Lumley Thelwall	Appointed before 4/49. Troop dispersed before it could journey to Ireland. Out of employment in 9/50. Possibly the remnants were taken over by Edward Thelwall, his brother[221]|
	XXX Chapman/Chaplain	In post in 5/49[222]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX Barry	X in 5/49[223]|
Replacements and Possibles Captains	James Jennings	In post in 6/50[224]. Possibly lt. to Capt. Hutchinson in the 11th regt. H. NMA in 4/49|
	Philemon Owen	Capt. in 7/50| D. in Ireland before 11/51[225]|
	Samuel Norwood??[226]	
	William Smith	In post in 5/49[227]|

214 The regiment arrived in Ireland in c. 8/49: CSPD 1649-50, pp. 242, 360.
215 F. and D.
216 Sparrow had previously been a captain in the earl of Manchester's regiment of horse and then in the Abingdon garrison: Spring, *Eastern Association*, p. 54; TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 371; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. He does not seem to have served in Ireland. In 4/50 he was commissioned as captain of horse in the Suffolk Militia and was still serving in it in 1658: CSPD 1650, p. 506; ibid, 1658-9, p. 169..
217 TNA, E121 3/4/59C, entry 36; CJ vii, p. 39.
218 TNA, SP 28/65, fo. 1.
219 F. and D.; TNA, E 121/3/4/unnumbered, entry 24; ibid, SP 28/65, fo. 1.
220 CSPD 1649-50, p. 360.
221 Ibid 1649-50, pp. 79, 282, 326; ibid, 1650, pp. 364, 430. Edward Thelwall's troop sailed for Ireland in 6/50: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 10-17/6/50.
222 CSPD 1649-50, p. 162; TNA, E 121/2/1/53, entry 4. These are the only evidence of his being in the regiment. He may not therefore have gone to Ireland.
223 F. and D.
224 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 321. Jennings was a captain in 4/51 when taken prisoner by a royalist boat operating out of the Scilly Isles whilst he was travelling to England to escort back his wife and family: CSPD 1651, p. 294. He or a man with the same name was lieutenant in the 11th regiment of horse in 1649: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 16, fo. 103.
225 TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 432. As a lieutenant Owen had served under Inchiquin but had changed his allegiance by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280. For his death see ibid vii, p. 39.
226 Norwood was listed for Ireland in 1649: TNA, E 121/4/5/94B, entry 0. His troop left via Liverpool in c. 11/49: CSPD 1649-50, p. 381, 480. It was probably incorporated into Sir Theophilus Jones's regiment because it crossed over at the same time and probably in the same vessels as Alexander Elliott's troop: ibid.
227 TNA, SP 28/60, fo. 681.

Cromwell's Lifeguard		
Captain	Lt. Col. Richard Le Hunt William Allen	Capt. 4th regt. H. 4/45| Left c. 4/50. Succeeded by William Allen[228]| Adjutant General H. in Ireland in 51[229]|
Lt.	John Maunsell	In post by 6/50[230]|
Cor.	XXX	

228 Le Hunt was in place by 8/49: ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 56. He was still Captain Le Hunt in 3/50 but received a commission to raise a regiment of foot in 5/50 after being chosen as lieutenant colonel of Colonel Cole's regiment the month before: CSPD 1650, pp. 112, 146, 574.
229 See below p. 223.
230 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 316.

Regiments already in Ireland

Regiment[231]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Lord Broghill	Col. H. under Lord Inchiquin|
Lt. Col.	William Warden	In post in 12/49 as lt. col. Downgraded to major by 6/50[232]|
Major	Nicholas Purden/Poore	In post in 12/49. Major in Inchiquin's army in 7/47.[233] Demoted to capt. by 6/50|
Captains	Maurice Fenton	In post in 12/49|
	Henry Rogers[234]	Ditto|
	James Cuffe	Ditto|
	XXX Dormer	Ditto|
	George Bishop	Ditto|
	XXX Dethick	Ditto|
	Peter Courthorpe	In post in 6/50[235]|
	John Aymes	In post in 6/50. Capt. Dr. Inchiquin's army 47[236]|
	XXX Pierce?	In post in 7/50[237]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

231 This was intended to be a double regiment of twelve troops, but only nine may initially have been raised. The names of the troop commanders in 12/49 are given in ibid, SP 28/64, fos. 275-8.
232 For the officers in 6/50 see ibid, SP 28/68, fos. 502, 506.
233 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 399 (33); TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 502.
234 Ibid, SP 28/67, fos. 333, 374.
235 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 506.
236 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 382; ibid, SP 28/47, fo. 168.
237 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 464.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Michael Jones	Lt. Col. H. in Sir William Brereton's brigade. Army commander at Dublin from 47 as lt. gen.|D. 11/49[238]|
Major	John Villiers	In post in 5/48, 12/49|
Captains	Anthony Otway/Ottoway	5/48, 6/50. Prob. capt. in William Purefoy's regt. Warwickshire. H. in the 1st Civil War[239]|
	William Meredith[240]	5/48, 12/49|
	Robert Glegg[241]	In post in 5/48|
	Henry Fisher[242]	Ditto|
	William Parsons	Ditto|
	John Annersley	Ditto|

Capt. Lt.	Michael Cusack	Ditto, 12/49[243]|

238 Dore, Brereton's Letter Books i, p. 111. For Jones's officers in 5/48, see HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, pp. 595-6.
239 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 39; ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 416; Spring, *Waller's Army,* p. 122.
240 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 41.
241 Glegg had been a captain of horse in Sir William Brereton's brigade in Cheshire: Dore, Brereton's Letter Books i, p. 163.
242 The three bolded names appear in a list of the regiment's officers compiled in 5/48 together with those of Villiers, Ottoway, Glegg, Meredith and Cusack: HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, pp. 595-6. I have no record of their service post 8/49.
243 Cusack was in the regiment in late 1649 with Villiers and Meredith: ibid, p. 600. He had been lieutenant in Michael Jones's troop in Cheshire in the First Civil War: TNA, E 121/5/5/30A, entry 174.

Regiment[244]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Sir Theophilus Jones	Brother of Col. Michael Jones. Col. F. in Ireland 47[245]|
Major	William Cadogan	In post in 9/49[246]| Gone by 8/50|
Captains	Alexander Elliott	Troop raised in England before 7/49. In post in 7/50[247]|
	Samuel Norwood[248]	Troop raised in England by 7/49.[249] In post in 7/50. Possible transfer from Reynolds's regt. H.|
	XXX Dunbar	In post in 12/49[250]|
	XXX Price	In post in 7/50|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

244 This appears to have been a newly raised regiment: F. and D.
245 Ibid.
246 TNA, SP 28/62, fo. 420.
247 For the four captains in 7/50, see ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 434.
248 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 337. He served under Inchiquin but had changed his allegiance by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280.
249 For Norwood and Elliott in 7/49 see F. and D.
250 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 597 (1).

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote	Lord President of Connaught. Col. of a regt. of H. in 6/49 and prob. much earlier[251]|
Major	Robert Ormsby	In post in 6/49|
Captains	John Ormsby	Ditto|
	Charles Ormsby?	In post in 10/50|
	Oliver St. George	In post in 6/49|
	William Lord Caulfield?	Capt. H. 10/50[252]|
	Lewis Jones?	In post in 10/50|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

251 The troop commanders with 6/49 against their names are in a list of four of the Coote regiments, two horse and two foot, printed in ibid, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 29/6-5/7/49. Other officers of horse named in the document were Captains Montgomery and Hamilton, Colonel Sanderson and Lord Ranleigh.
252 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 210. Caulfield's troop commander was a Captain Forster: Hogan, *Warr of Ireland,* p. 145.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Chidley Coote[253]	Lt. Col. Sir William Brereton's regt. H. Cheshire[254]|
Major	William Aston	In post in 5/48|
Captains	Thomas Hunt	In post in 5/48 and 6/49[255]|
	John Campbell	In post in 5/48[256]|
	James Peasley	Ditto|
	Emmanuel Palmer	Ditto| Capt. Lt. Sir Charles Coote's regt. 11/53|
	Richard Edmonds	Ditto|

Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Proctor**	Ditto|

253 For the troop commanders in 1648, see HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 596.
254 Dore, Brereton's Letter Books i, pp. 27-8.
255 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 196.
256 Captain John Campbell's troop of horse was disbanded in c. 8/53, but it may no longer have been in the regiment. His troop was described as non-regimented in 10/51: TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 397; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 164.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Richard Coote	Brother of Sir Charles Coote[257]|
Major	John King[258]	In post in 6/49|
Captains	Francis King	Ditto|
Colonel	John Cole	In post in 10/50[259]|
	Robert Morgan?	
	Arthur Gore	In post in late 49[260]|
	Robert Oliver	In post in 6/49|
	Phillip Taylor	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

257 BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 10-17/8/49.
258 Major King and the five captains immediately below him were in post at the disbandment in 1653: F. and D.
259 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 162.
260 Hogan, *Warr of Ireland,* p. 102.

Company and Troop Commanders June 1650 to October 1653

Infantry: New Model Army Regiments Shipped to Ireland in August 1649

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Hardress Waller[261]	
Lt. Col.	John Widenham Simon Finch??[262]	11/50, 10/51[263]. Still apparently in post in 4/53[264]|
Major	George Drury Richard Hodden	In the regt. but D. by 11/50.[265] Former major in John Gifford's regt.| Major in the regt. after Drury's death. In post by 1/51[266]|
Captains	Richard Hodden	
	William Wade	Former capt. 3rd regt. F. NMA. Possibly in post in early 50[267]|
	Brian Smith	Capt. in the regt. in 1/51.[268] Major in Ireton's regt. F. by 7/51|
	Ralph Wilson	Still capt. in 5/52 and 4/53[269]|
	William Skinner	New co. 3/51. In post in 4/53[270]|
	Robert Wilkinson	New co. 2/51, 4/53[271]|
	Vere Hunt	Ex Gifford's regt. In post 11/50, 4/53 [272].|
	John Gibbons	Ditto. In post 7/51, 4/53[273]|
	Thomas Holmes	In post in 10/51[274]|
	John Congreave	Ex Gifford's regt. In post in 10/51[275]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

261 The five new companies were commanded by Captains Skinner to Gibbons. The first two and possibly the third were raised in England. Two others were transfers from Gifford's dismembered regiment.

262 For a discussion of Simon Finch's military career see p. 199.

263 Widenham took some responsibility for the pay of Gifford's regiment during the last weeks of its existence. He was almost certainly its lieutenant colonel as this is the rank he was given in the warrant: F. and D. For his time in Waller's regiment see TNA, SP 28/72, fo. 213; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 177.

264 A letter of support for Cromwell's expulsion of the Long Parliament from commissioned officers in Clare and Limerick gives the names of some of the officers. They were John Widenham, Ralph Wilson, William Skinner, Robert Wilkinson, Vere Hunt and John Gibbons: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 28/6-4/7/53. To these officers in post in 4/53 can be added Richard Hodden and Thomas Holmes who were in the regiment in 1652 and 1655.

265 Ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 213.

266 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 611. Major Hodden and Captains Wilson, Wade and Holmes were in the regiment in 2/52: ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 107.

267 There were two Captain Wades in Ireland in the sixteen-fifties, William and Samuel, but Samuel was in the 4th regiment of foot. William was in the 3rd regiment of foot by 10/51 at the latest and was still in post in 2/53: ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 177; Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 98; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 319; Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, p. 364.

268 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 534.

269 Ibid, SP 28/86, fos. 49-51 for Captains Wade and Wilson in 5/52.

270 His company was ordered to be shipped to Ireland in 3/51: CSPD 1651, p. 522.

271 TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 534.

272 Ibid, SP 28/81, fos. 119, 144; ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 113.

273 Ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 324; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 23.

274 See ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 125 for Holmes and Congreave in 10/51.

275 It is most likely that Congreave had left the regiment before 4/53 as he did not sign the letter from Limerick congratulating Oliver Cromwell on his dissolving the Rump Parliament. For this document see note 264 on this page.

The Cheshire Battalion[276]		
Lt. Col.	Simon Finch[277]	
Major	William Duckenfield	
Captains	James Stopford[278]	
	Edward? Birtle[279]	Prob. transferred to Leigh's regt. F.|
	Thomas Massey	Co. raising in 1/51[280]|

276 These were officers commanding a draft from Colonel Robert Duckenfield's disbanded regiment ordered to join Waller's battalion in 11/51 to make it into a full regiment, but their companies were not used for that purpose when they arrived in Ireland: TNA, SP 28/87, fo. 178; CSPD 1651-2, pp. 79, 110, 117-18, 184. This is not surprising as Waller had already raised his battalion to a full regiment from companies he found there. The Cheshire companies therefore remained unregimented: TNA, SP 28/88, fo. 148. However, Finch himself soon found a position in the 4th regiment of foot.

277 Finch had served in Ireland in 1642-3 and then in Brereton's brigade in Cheshire. In 1647 he was lieutenant colonel of Colonel Percy Smith's regiment in Munster, and in 1650/51 he was major and then lieutenant colonel of Colonel Duckenfield's Cheshire militia regiment: Dore, Brereton's Letter Books i, p. 34; TNA, SP 28/47, fo. 213; CSPD 1650, p. 509; ibid, 1651-2, pp. 19, 78-9, 117-18.

278 Stopford had served in Sir William Brereton's brigade and in Colonel Duckenfield's Cheshire militia regiment: Dore, Brereton's Letter Books i, pp. 290-1, 327; CSPD 1650, p. 509.

279 Birtle's company was disbanded in 9/53: TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 395.

280 CSPD 1651-2, p. 118, 152. The index assumes that this officer was Robert, the brother of Major General Edward Massey. However, he was almost certainly the Captain Thomas Massey who was associated with Captain Birtle's company at the time of its disbandment: TNA, SP 28/96, fos. 35, 169.

4th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Isaac Ewer Richard Lawrence	D. after 31/10/50[281]| Succeeded Isaac Ewer by 2/51[282]|
Lt. Col.	John Puckle Simon Finch	In post in 6/50 and 7/53| Prob. transferred to Sadleir's regt. as lt. col. in 7/53[283]| In post in 8/53[284]|
Major	William Stratton Richard Tonson	6/50, 8/53[285]| In post in 1/53[286]|
Captains	Francis Wheeler	Lt. Col. of Phayre's regt. c. 7/51[287]|
	Edward Humphreys	Prob. X at storming of Clonmel, Ireland 5/50[288]|
	Richard Tonson	Still capt. in 8/52.[289] Promoted to major in the regt.by 1/53|
	James Hutchinson	10/50, 8/53[290]|
	Giles Gregory[291]	10/50, 5/53[292]|
	John Bennett	Ens. in the regt. in the late 1640s. In post as capt.1/51, 4/53[293]|
	John Ewer sen.	1/51, 7/53|
	John Ewer jun.	1/51, 7/53|
	Samuel Wade	In post in 6/51[294]|
	John Grice	6/51, 10/52 [295]| Left before 8/53 when co. was disbanded|
	William Rideout	In post in 6/51[296]|
	XXX Holmes	Ditto|
	John Potter	Possibly lt. in the 11th regt. F. NMA in 1647. In post in 9/51, 5/53[297]| Left by 7/53[298]|
	Mark/Michael Mould	7/53, 8/53[299]|
	XXX Stratton	In post in 8/53[300]|
Capt. Lt.	John Taylor?	In post in 10/53 and prob. in 1/52[301]|

281 F. and D.

282 TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 71.

283 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 490; BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 34. For the officers in post in 7/53 see TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 34.

284 For the officers in post in 8/53, see ibid, fo.385.

285 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 385. Stratton was major until at least 1654 according to F. and D, but their source was Dunlop who recorded the ranks as well as the names of former officers when transcribing documents concerned with the transfer of land. However, both

Stratton and Tonson are described as majors in Lawrence's regiment in 7-8/53. For discussion of this seeming paradox see the entry for Captain Stratton on this page.

286 TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 326.
287 See below p. 202.
288 F. and D.
289 SP 28/87, fo. 208.
290 Ibid, SP28/71, fo. 128; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 385.
291 Two men with this surname were junior officers in the regiment in the late 1640s, but he was neither of them. The captain's first name appears in a warrant dated 10/52: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 131; TNA, SP 28/88, fo. 128.
292 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 128; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 88; CSPD 1651, pp. 34, 540. Gregory transferred to the 11th regiment of horse shortly after **5/53**.
293 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 131;TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 142; ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 346.
294 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 224. Captains Wade and Grice were raising companies in England to fight in Ireland in 3/51: CSPD 1651, p. 522.
295 See ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 214 for Grice, Rideout and Holmes. For Grice in 10/52 see ibid, SP 28/88 fo. 384. For his leaving the regiment see ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 26.
296 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 392. He was dead by 4/57: CSPD 1656-7, p. 332.
297 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 118; TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 556; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 67.
298 The company is referred to as late Captain Potter's in 7/53: TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 34.
299 A Michael Mould had been captain lieutenant to Colonel Mason in Major General Thomas Mitton's brigade in North Wales: TNA, E 121/5/5/41B, entry 1.
300 Both Major and Captain Stratton's names appear in a warrant dated 8/53. There were therefore two Strattons commanding companies in the regiment at the time, but this does not solve the problem of the two majors in the regiment identified in note 285 above. In fact it complicates matters by ruling out the possibility that William Stratton had resigned as major but retained command of his company and the right to use his former title.
301 TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 61.

7th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	Regt. passed to General Charles Fleetwood by 1/53[302]|
Lt. Col.	Henry Bowen	Prob. expelled from the army for atheism 7/52[303]| Prob. succeeded by Lt. Col. Alexander Brayfield of Axtell's regt. F. after 4/53|
Major	Henry Flower Samuel Shepherd	Major in 6/50 and 5/51 in this regt.[304]|Lt. Col. in Ireton's regt. F. by 9/51| In post in 10/51, 10/53[305]|
Captains	Thomas Dancer	In post in 4/52[306]|
	Henry Whittle	Major in Reeves's regt. by 9/51[307]|
	Thomas Walker	In post in 11/50[308]| Major Ireton's regt. F. by 12/50|
	Thomas Segrave	
	John Jewell	In post in 6/50| D. in Ireland by 11/51. Prob. succeeded by Capt. Thomas Leigh before 1/52[309]|
	Thomas Betts	6/50, 8/52[310]|
	XXX Walters/Waller	11/50[311], 1/51|
	William Heydon	12/50[312], 4/51|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Replacements and Possibles Captains	 William Hayles	 1/51, 7/51[313]|
	Col. Thomas Long's co.	9/51, 12/51. Disbanded c. 8/53[314]|

302 H. Maclean, I. Gentles and M. O Siochru eds., Minutes of Courts Martial held in Dublin in the year 1651-3 (recte 1652-3), Archivium Hibernicum 64 (2011), p. 65; TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 351. The regiment passed to Fleetwood rather than from Cromwell to Henry Cromwell as F. and D. claimed.
303 Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, p. 373.
304 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 359; ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 209.
305 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 171; ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 181. Shepherd's company had been armed with firelocks. It was raised in England between 8 and 10/50: CSPD 1650, pp. 277, 353, 383-4, 522. At first it had been attached to Stubber's regiment, but was subsequently transferred: TNA, SP 28/79, fo. 172; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 171.
306 Ibid, SP 28/125, fo. 70.
307 Whittle was still captain in 8/51: ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 55.
308 Ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 174.

309 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 329; CJ vii, p. 38. For Leigh see TNA, SP 18/183, fo. 117.
310 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 335; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 296.
311 Ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 174.
312 Ibid, SP 28/73, fos. 77, 165.
313 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 609; ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 209.
314 Ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 564. Long had commanded one of the regiments disbanded by Cromwell in 9/49. He retained command of a company presumably composed of some of his former officers and men. At first it was independent but it was attached to the 7th regiment of foot by 9/51. At the time Long was serving as adjutant general in the army in Ireland: F. and D.; TNA, SP 28/82, fos. 8, 89. The company was commanded by Captain Cope when it was disbanded in 1653: ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 3.

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel[315]	John Hewson	
Lt. Col.	XXX William Arnop	Daniel Axtell had gone from the regt. by 6/50| In post by 1/52 at the earliest|
Majors	John Carter[316] Thomas Atkinson? William Arnop Henry Jones	 8/50, 7/51[317]| Formerly capt. in the regt. In post by 10/51[318]|
Captains	**Samuel Grime**[319]	
	Alexander Brayfield	Major in Axtell regt. F. in Ireland by 11/50[320] |
	John Davies	In post in 6/51[321]|
	Henry Jones	6/50, 9/51[322]. Major by 1/52|
	William Arnop	In post in 8/50 but very quickly promoted[323]|
	John Digby	8/50, 8/52[324]| Gone by 10/52[325]|
	Thomas Shepherd	9/51, 3/53[326]|
	Edward Hoare	In post by 8/52. Lt. to Capt. Grime in 5/49[327]|
	John Jeacock/Jaycock	2/52, 1/53[328]|
	William Sandys	1/52, 10/53[329]|
Capt. Lt.	William Willersley XXX Carter	In post in 6/52[330]| In post in 3/53[331]|
Replacements and Possibles Captains	 XXX Hinksman[332]	
	Edward Turner[333]	
	XXX Hewlett	In post in 2/52. Gone by 8/52[334]|
	XXX Cantrell	

315 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 19. Eight company commanders in post in 10/53 were Lieutenant Colonel Arnop, Major Jones and Captains Hoare, Hinchman, Jeacock, Shepherd, Cantrell and Turner: ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 191. The missing ones are the captain lieutenant and possibly Captain Grime.
316 According to Spring Alexander Brayfield succeeded Carter: *Eastern Association*, p. 87. This is incorrect. Brayfield gained promotion by transferring to another regiment.
317 TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 343.
318 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo.97; ibid. SP 28/83, fo. 35. Jones was a captain when Arnop was major: ibid, SP 28/73, fos 203, 205. A Henry Jones was also scoutmaster general by 11/50, but he was the brother of Michael and Sir Theophilus and the former Bishop of Clogher: TNA, SP 28/72, fo. 57; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 768.
319 Grime was in Ireland in 12/55, but not necessarily still in the army: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 559.
320 See below p. 212.
321 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 154.
322 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 150; ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 528; ibid, SP 28/83, fo.19..
323 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 314. He was major by early 9/50: ibid, fo. 343.
324 Ibid, fo. 371; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 208.
325 Ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 368.
326 Ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 524; ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 312.
327 Ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 218; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fo. 44. He was earlier described as Captain Hoare, but may only have been captain lieutenant at the time: TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 79; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 20-27/4/51.
328 Courts Martial, p. 65; TNA, SP 28/90, fo. 361.

329 Courts Martial, pp. 65, 89; TNA, SP 28/96, fo. 157.
330 Ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 39. He had been lieutenant in Captain Shepherd's company: ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 232.
331 Ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 312.
332 In 1650 a Captain Nicholas Henchman was involved in raising recruits for this regiment in England: CSPD 1650, p. 600. A Captain Hinksman was in the army in Ireland in 11/52: Courts Martial, pp. 122, 137.
333 Turner conducted recruits for Hewson's regiment to Bristol for transport to Ireland in 7/52: ibid 1651-2, p. 610.
334 TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 28; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 210.

13th Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	George Cooke	Gov. of Wexford. X by Irish guerrillas 4/52. He was succeeded by Thomas Sadleir who amalgamated the 13th regt. F. with what had been Colonel Culme's regt. which he already commanded[335]
Lt. Colonel	William Throckmorton	In post in 6/52[336]
Major	John Overstreet	
Captains	XXX Combie	
	William Walker	
	John Overstreet	Seemingly a lt. col. in Ireland in 4/53[337]
	Henry Harbottle	
	Henry Cooper	
	Alexander Staples	
	Henry Nicholas	In post in 2/51[338]
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Barrington**	Apparently capt. in Abbott's regt. Dr. in 55[339]

335 F. and D. The captains of the 13th regiment of foot who subsequently commanded companies in Sadleir's regiment were Combie, Walker, Nicholls and Staples. Throckmorton and Overstreet seem to have served successively as Sadleir's lieutenant colonels. For this, see below p. 207.
336 Ludlow, *Memoirs* i, pp. 518, 524. Given the date it is likely that Throckmorton transferred to Sadleir's regiment as lieutenant colonel, but if Sadleir did not take charge of the regiment until some months after Cooke's death Throckmorton may have resigned in protest having served for a time as acting colonel.
337 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii p. 329.
338 CSPD 1651, p. 63.
339 See below p. 234.

Infantry: Regiments Raised for Service in Ireland in 1649 and Shipped to Ireland during that Year

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Phayre	Co. disbanded 55|
Lt. Col.	Christopher Elsyng Francis Wheeler	6/50, 7/51. Prob. D. in Ireland[340]| Ex capt. 4th regt. F. In post by 7/51[341]|
Major	John Denison	6/50, 11/53[342] Formerly capt. in Stubber's regt. Succeeded John Nelson as major in c. 6/50|
Captains	Andrew Ruddock	In post in 3/51[343]|
	Alexander Barrington	
	Michael Gale	
	William Candler[344]	
	Michael Bland	
	Samuel Jervis	
Capt. Lt.	James Knight	
Possibles and Replacements Captain	Phillip? Carteret[345]	

340 For 7/51, see BL, Thomason Tracts E 640 (2) when Elsyng was involved in the fighting around Limerick. For the officers in post in 6/50, see TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 490. For his death see F. and D.
341 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Account, 30/7-6/8/51.
342 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 379.
343 TNA, SP 28/75, fo. 156.
344 This man was in the regiment in 2/51. He had served as a field officer under Colonel Rainborough in the wars in England: Spring, *Eastern Association*, p. 89. A Captain Candler was serving in Sir Hardress Waller's regiment in the mid-1650s: Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 131.
345 Phillip Carteret, advocate general of the army in Ireland in 1/51, held the rank of captain: TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 573. However, it may have been merely an honorary rank. If so, the company commander was probably Francis Carteret: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 16-23/4/54.

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Peter Stubber	
Lt. Col.	John Gray Humphrey Hurd	Wounded at Clonmel 6/50[346]| In post by 4/51[347]|
Major	Humphrey Hurd Andrew? Gray Thomas Davies	7/50, 1/51. Succeeded Major Chandler[348]| In post in 6/51[349]| In post by 10/51[350]|
Captains	Humphrey Hurd	Promoted to major c. 6/50|
	Thomas Davies	9/50, 4/51[351]. Promoted to major after 6/51|
	John Webb	9/50, 4/51. Lt to Lt. Col. Axtell 12th regt. F. NMA[352]|
	Benjamin Lucas	
	Thomas Burrell	
	Andrew Grace	X at Limerick in 7/51[353]|
	Isaac Jackson	In post in 3/51. Possibly transfer from Ireton's regt. F.[354]|
	Edward Shepherd	Lt. in 9/50, capt. 1/51[355]|
Capt. Lt.	Andrew Grace Thomas Prive	Full capt. by 1/51[356]| In post in 1/52[357]|
Replacements and Possibles		

Captains	George Dyos	In post in 7/51[358]. Succeeded Capt. Grace. Cashiered in 12/52 for surrendering a garr.[359]|
	Thomas Graham	6/51, 9/51[360]|
	XXX Knight	In post in 6/51[361]|

346 Gilbert, *Contemporary History* ii, p. 409.
347 TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 184.
348 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 420; ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 577.
349 Ibid, SP 28/78., fo. 275.
350 For Davis and Burrell, see ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 166.
351 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 620; ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 228.
352 Ibid, fo. 636; CSPD 1651, p. 63; TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 184; Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 137.
353 BL, Thomason Tracts, .A Perfect Account, 30/7-6/8/51.
354 CSPD 1650, pp. 384, 591; TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 618**.**
355 CSPD 1650, p. 384; TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 646.
356 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 575.
357 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 153.
358 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 134.
359 Ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 245; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 20-27/12/52.
360 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 242; ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 77. Graham's company was disbanded in c. 8/53: ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 510.
361 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 242.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Hercules Huncks	In post in 7/53[362]|
Lt. Col.	Thomas Raymond Pyne Rochford	 In post in 4/51. Executed for murdering a fellow officer in 2/52[363]|
Major	John Read Robert Lamport	In post in 8/50. Later gov. of Charlemont[364]| In post in 9/50| Co. disbanded in 6/53[365]|
Captains	Edward Godney	Served in the regt. Succeeded by Capt. John Monckton before 10/51[366]|
	Richard Aylett	In post in 7/51 and in 53[367]|
	Robert Lamport	In post 8/50.[368] Major in 9/5**0**|
	Stephen Caine	Co. disbanded in c. 8/53[369]|
	James Flower	In post in 53|
	John Ward	In post in 2/51[370]|
	Richard Elliott	In post in 53. Co. disbanded c. 6/53[371]|
	XXX Hoyle	His co. was disbanded in 1653[372]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disbanded in 1653
362 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 518.
363 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 370; Courts Martial, p. 82.
364 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 756; Hogan, *Warr of Ireland*, p. 133. Read was described as 'a mere knave', suggesting lowly origins.
365 TNA, SP 28/70, fos. 304, 734; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 496.
366 CSPI 1647-1660, p. 677.
367 Aylett, Caine, Flower and Elliott were in this regiment at an unspecified date in 1653: F. and D. The names appear on a pay warrant I have not managed to discover.
368 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 304.
369 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 528.
370 CSPD 1650-51, p. 552.
371 TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 528.
372 F. and D.; TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 494.

Regiment[373]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Ireton	D. 11/51. Succeeded by Charles Fleetwood|
Lt. Col.	William Leigh XXX?? Henry Flower	Col. of Slade's regt. by 8/50| Lt. Col. by 9/51 but after 5/51. Formerly major 7th regt. F.[374]|
Major	Charles Bolton Thomas Walker Brian Smith	X at Clonmel| In post in12/50. Formerly capt. 7th regt. F.| X at Limerick in 7/51[375]| Major in 7/51. Formerly capt. 3rd regt. F.[376]|
Captains	George Pepper[377]	
	John Barrett[378]	
	William? Morris	Co. prob. disbanded in 55[379]|
	John Galland	
	William Pelham	In Ireland by 11/50[380] |
	George? Owen	12/50, 10/52[381]|
	William Shaw	In post in 12/50| Co. disbanded 10/53[382]|
	Nathaniel Wilmore	12/50, 3/51| Prob. disbanded 53[383]|
	Thomas Waltham	12/50, 3/51[384]|
	Isaac Jackson	In post in 12/50[385]|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Oliver	In post in 12/51[386]|
Replacements and Possibles Captain	 Robert Stearne	 10/52, 3/53[387]. Prob. transfer from Sadleir's regt.|

373 The regiment clearly had more companies than the normal foot regiment. For this and the company commanders in 12/50, see ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 147. This gives the names of the field officers and 10 captains.
374 See above p. 180.
375 Ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 147; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Account, 30/7-6/8/51; CJ vii, p. 48.
376 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 258.
377 In 6/50 Pepper was the senior captain. Others mentioned were Galland, Morris and Barratt. Both the field officers had been wounded at Clonmel, one mortally: TNA, SP 28/68, fos. 368-70. See also pp. 183–4.
378 CSPD 1651, p. 34.
379 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 135.
380 TNA, SP 28/72, fo. 113. Pelham's company was raised in England between 8 and 10/50: CSPD 1650, pp. 384, 521, 591-2. It was serving in Ireton's regiment in Ireland a month later, but may have been transferred to the 7th regiment of foot by 1655: Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 134.
381 TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 147; ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 30.
382 CSPD 1650-1, p. 564; TNA, SP 68/73, fo. 83; ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 207.
383 Ibid, SP 28/75, fo. 200; ibid, SP 28/98, fo. 35. Captains Nathaniel Wilmore and Thomas Waltham were raising troops in England in 6/50: CSPD 1650, pp. 208, 549.
384 TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 94; ibid, SP 28/75, fo. 200.
385 Ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 111. Jackson's company was raised in England between 8 and 10/50 at the same time as Pelham's: CSPD 1650, pp. 384, 591-2. Jackson appears to have been moved into Stubber's regiment early in 1651.
386 TNA, SP 28/82, fo. 30. The warrant was for pay for late General Ireton's company. Oliver may have been ensign to Major Wroth Rogers in the 10th regiment of foot in the late sixteen-forties: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 135.
387 TNA, SP 28/88, fo. 78; ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 322.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Venables	
Lt. Col.	Robert Barrow Phillip Pinchion	Col. of Fenwick's regt. c. 2/51[388]|
Major	Phillip Pinchion John Duckenfield	Major 6/50, 1/51; lt. col. of the regt. by 5/51[389]|
Captains	XXX Sloper	X at the battle of Scariffhollis 6/50[390]|
	John Duckenfield	Capt. in 4/51, major in the regt. by 6/51[391]|

	XXX Done	Still in post when Duckenfield was major[392]
	John Stevens	
	XXX Honeyford	
	William Lane	
	XXX Hooper	Ditto[393]
	Thomas Gill	9/50, 10/50[394]
	William Lowe	In post in 4/51[395]
	William Duckenfield	Arrived in Ireland c. 3/52[396]
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Chetham**	
Replacement Captain	XXX Bromwell	Capt. in this regt. Co. disbanded in 55[397]

388 Barrow was still being described as lieutenant colonel in 11/50: CSPD 1650, p.566. He was a colonel of a regiment in Ulster by 3/51: TNA, SP 28/75, fos. 14-18.
389 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 518; ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 674; ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 404.
390 Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, p. 148.
391 TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 380; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 518.
392 CRO, Quarter Sessions Files, Trinity 1652, fo. 150.
393 BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 10-17/7/50.
394 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 726; ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 214.
395 CSPD 1651, pp. 129, 524. Lowe was raising troops for the regiment in Cheshire and Lancashire in the spring of 1651. The wording of one of the documents suggests that he had only recently been commissioned as captain in the regiment.
396 CSPD 1651-2, p.117-18, 185.
397 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 132.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Tothill Richard Le Hunt	Dismissed in 7/51 for dishonourable conduct[398] Col. from late 7/51 until the regt's. disbandment[399]
Lt. Colonel	John Warren	6/50, 6/53[400]
Major	John Warren George Walters/Waters	In post in 6/50.[401] Succeeded by George Walters 8/50, 6/53[402]
Captains	John Woodcock	Co. disbanded 9/53[403]
	Roland Oakley	9/50[404], 1/51
	Edward Browne	10/50, 7/53[405]
	XXX Gifford	In post in 10/50 Gone by 2/51. Succeeded by Capt. Bernard[406]
	Henry Gibbons	Ditto Co. disbanded 10/53[407]
	Thomas Clayton	12/50, 4/51[408]
	Nicholas Moore	12/50, 4/51
	Arthur Stapleton	In post in 2/51 and 2/52 Gone in 3/52[409]
	XXX Sheares/Shoare	5/51, 3/52[410]
	XXX Bird	His lt. was X in Ireland[411]
	XXX Shaw	In post in 3/52[412]
	XXX Garrett	In post in 3/52
Capt. Lt.	Richard Walton	In post in 9/53[413]

Regiment disbanded in 1653
398 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 638 (12).
399 Ibid, Thomason Tracts. A Perfect Account, 30/7-6/8/51. Le Hunt remained in the army as commander of a company of foot until 1658 at the earliest: ibid, SP 28/116, fo. 248.
400 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 418; for 6/53 see Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 365.
401 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 420.
402 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 22. For Walters in 6/53, see BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 30/6-6/7/53. Walters petitioned for losses suffered at the hands of the Spaniards and was seemingly an overseas merchant: CSPD 1655, p. 372; ibid, 1655-6, p. 179.
403 TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 58.

404 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 618; ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 515.
405 For Browne in 10/50 and the three captains immediately below him see ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 60. For Browne's company's disbandment in 7/53 see ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 584.
406 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 658.
407 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 520.
408 For Clayton and Moore in 12/50 and 4/51, see ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 169; ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 186.
409 CSPD 1651, p. 550; TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 81; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 43.
410 Ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 207. See ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 398 for Sheares and Garrett in 3/52.
411 CJ vii, p. 38.
412 TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 75. This captain may not have existed. Shaw could be a variant spelling of Shoare.
413 Ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 66.

Infantry: Regiments with Irish rather than English Antecedents

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Russell	Succeeded Col. Lytcott after 10/50[414]
Lt. Col.	XXX	
Major	Henry Clements James Garston Humphrey Barrow	In post in 6/50[415] In post in 9/50[416] In post by 3/51[417]
Captains	Lawrence Hyde	In post in 10/50 and 2/51 but transferred to Col. Lytcott's regt. being raised for service in Scotland[418]
	Humphrey Barrow	Promoted to major
	Gideon Fisher	
	John Goodwin	
	XXX Spencer	
	Henry Ellis	7/50, 10/50 [419]
	Major Edward Allen	In post in 10/50[420]
	XXX Bishop	Co. disbanded 10/53[421]
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment probably disbanded in 1653
414 The regiment was still being described as Lytcott's in late 50: ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 176.
415 Ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 258.
416 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 713.
417 Ibid, SP 28/75, fo. 24.
418 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 194. Hyde was senior captain in Russell's regiment in 2/51. His transfer was as a result of a petition to the Council of State's Irish committee. Possibly he had been passed over for promotion when Barrow became major. Lytcott had previously been colonel of Russell's regiment: CSPD 1650-51, pp. 64, 550.
419 TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 114; ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 788.
420 See above p. 185.
421 TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 114.

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Thomas Sadleir	In post in 8/50[422]
Lt. Colonel	Francis Foulke William Throckmorton?? John Overstreet John Puckle	In post in 1/51 and 2/52[423] Transfer from 13th regt. F. Ditto[424] Gone by c. 8/53 In post c. 8/53. Transfer from 4th regt. F.[425]
Major	**Adoneus Culme** Francis Foulke Richard May John Overstreet Samuel? Brereton	 In post by 10/50. Promoted to lt. col.[426] 2/51, 1/52[427] Ex 13th regt. F. In post in c. 5/52
Captains	William Draper	Co. disbanded in 8/53[428]

	Edward Fisher	Ditto[429]|
	Henry Butts	Ditto[430]|
	Robert Stearne	9/50, 8/52[431]. Prob. transferred to Fleetwood's regt. F.|
	Henry Lewis/Lewins	8/50, 10/53[432]|
	Richard May	In post in 9/50. Promoted to major after 10/50 and before 2/51[433]|
	XXX Fernisley	In post in 1/51[434]|
	William Broadbent	8/50, 2/51[435]|
	Henry Lucas	In post in 5/52[436]|
	Felix Long	Capt. in Col. Long's regt. 48. In post in this regt. in 3/51 and 6/51[437]|
	Henry Levins	In post in 10/51[438]|
	XXX Brett	In post in 10/52[439]|
	XXX Combie	Ex 13th regt. F.|
	William Walker	Ditto
	Henry Cooper	Ditto
	Alexander Staples	Ditto
	Henry Nicholas/Nicholls	Ex 13th regt. F. In post in 11/53. Co. disbanded 55[440]|
Capt. Lt.	John Peake	In post in 11/50[441]|
Replacements Captain	XXX Thomas	Co. disbanded in 55[442]|

422 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 315.
423 For Foulke, Stearne, Draper and Butts in 2/52 see ibid, SP 28/84, fo. 60.
424 BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 34.
425 See above p. 199. Confirmation that Puckle served in Sadleir's regiment is given by BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 34.
426 For Major Foulke and Captains May, Draper, Fernisley and Fisher in the autumn of 1650, see TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 673; ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 106.
427 CSPD 1651, pp 34, 540-44. For Lieutenant Colonel Foulke, Major May and Captain Draper in 1/52, see TNA, SP 28/83, fo. 89. It is just possible that May was not major in the regiment, but that he was referred to as major because he had held that rank in Inchiquin's army. The reason for my caution is that Overstreet was major in Cooke's regiment before the merger. If Throckmorton had entered Sadleir's regiments as lieutenant colonel (and this is by no means certain), Overstreet would have been in limbo if May was still been in post. However, May may have left by then and, if not, there might have been some arrangement for him to continue as major with Overstreet reverting to captain with the promise of becoming lieutenant colonel should Throckmorton subsequently leave. This would have made sense as a compromise if Overstreet's commission in the 13th regiment predated May's in Sadleir's.
428 TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 550.
429 Ibid, SP 28/98, fo. 15.
430 Ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 22. For Butts's first name, see ibid, SP 28/125, fo. 399.
431 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 616; ibid SP 28/87, fo. 238.
432 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 315. All or part of his company was disbanded: ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 31.
433 May had served as major in Inchiquin's army in 1647. He was captain in Sadleir's regiment in 9/50: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 399 (33); TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 106; CSPD 1651, p. 34.
434 TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 551.
435 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 352; CSPD 1650-1, p. 545.
436 TNA, SP 28/86, fo. 31.
437 HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 592; CSPD 1650-1, p. 551; TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 402. For Colonel Long see p. 201.
438 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 95.
439 Ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 356.
440 Ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 19; ibid, SP 28/99, fo. 7. He was a direct transfer from the 13th regiment of foot.
441 Ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 119.
442 See Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 134 for Nicholls and Thomas in 1655.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote[443]	
Lt. Col.	Henry Gore Francis Gore	6/50, 3/51[444]| Gone by 4/52|
Major	Francis Gore William Moore	6/50, 10/50[445]. Promoted to lt. col. by 4/52| Former capt. in the regt. Major in1/54[446]|
Captains	Robert Parker	Capt. in 7/53| Gone by 10/58|
	Charles Gore	
	Robert Blakeney	Capt. in 7/53| Gone by 10/58|
	XXX Geare	Ditto| Ditto|
	George St. George	
	John Ponsonby??	In post 10/50 as a capt. F. but possibly not in this regt.| Co. disbanded in c. 10/53[447]|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX Collis	In post in c.7/53[448]|

Regiment disbanded in 1653

443 For an incomplete list of the company commanders in 7/53, see TNA, SP 28/93, fo. 100. The officers named were Major Gore, the first four captains and Captain Lieutenant Collis. A longer list in Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 468 gives the lieutenant colonel's name and those of eight captains all of whose companies were disbanded in 8/53 – Blackins, Collins, Gore, Parker, Webb, and George, William and Richard St. George. This is difficult to explain as the regiment continued in existence until 1659 at the earliest with several of the officers still being in the army in the late 1650s, but more than anything else it persuades me that the lists in the Carte Mss were compiled at a later date by somebody with an imperfect memory.

444 For Lieutenant Colonel Henry and Major Francis Gore at the battle of Scariffhollis in 6/50, see CJ vi, p. 438. For Henry Gore in 3/51 see TNA, SP 28/75, fo, 46.

445 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 158.

446 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 398.

447 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 150; ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 2.

448 Ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 100.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Coote[449]	
Lt. Colonel	Tristram Beresford	In post in 9/50 and 6/53[450]|
Major	Richard Sampson[451]	In post in 1/52 and 6/53[452]|
Captains	Edward? Cary[453]	Ditto and ditto|
	Oliver? Anktill[454]	Ditto and ditto|
	XXX Coates/Coaches	Ditto and ditto|
	XXX Blewett	Ditto and ditto|
	XXX Freming	Ditto. Not in the Carte Ms list|
	William Holland	Ditto. Not in the Carte Ms list|
	XXX[455]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disbanded in 1653

449 For the captains in 6/53 just prior to disbandment see ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 101. They are very similar to those named by F. and D. as being in John Cole's regiment when it was disbanded in 8/53, their reference being Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 468. However, a completely different list of John Cole's company commanders for 8/53 can be found in TNA, SP 28/93, fo. 102. The mistake was Davies's. The list in the Carte Mss is clearly headed Colonel Coote's regiment.

450 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 776; ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 46; Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 468.

451 Major Sampson's first name is provided by an entry in ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 770.

452 Ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 46.

453 A Captain Edward Cary's company was disbanded in 1653: ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 556.

454 A Captain Oliver Anktill was in command of a company of foot in 1653: ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 492.

455 Additional names that appear in the Carte list are Captains Round, Hart and Blennerhasset.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Gifford[456]	Succeeded by Colonel George Monck, who did not take up his command[457]
Lt. Col.	Henry Smithwick John Widenham	In post in 6/50[458] Succeeded Henry Smithwick by 7/50
Major	**XXX Williams** George Drury	 In post in 6/50 D. by 11/50[459]
Captains	Robert Myhill	Transferred to Reeves's regt. as major by 6/50[460]
	Peter Carey	Ditto as capt.
	Richard Burnell/Barnell[461]	Ditto as capt.
	Adam Loftus	Capt. in 1/52, 7/53 either of an independent co. or in another regt. Co. disbanded in 53[462]
	Maurice Murphy	Transferred to Axtell's regt. by 12/50
	Vere Hunt	In post in 2/51[463] Transferred to Sir Hardress Waller's regt. by 10/51
	John Congreave	9/50, 11/50[464] Ditto
	John Gibbons	10/50, 1/51[465] Transferred to Sir Hardress Waller's regt. by 7/51
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disaggregated between c. 8/50 and 3/51

456 Gifford had left by 6/50: F. and D.

457 ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 488. The regiment seems to have been slowly disaggregated with companies being transferred to other regiments. However, Captain Hunt was still raising men for Gifford's regiment in London in 3/51: CSPD 1650-1, pp. 69, 551.

458 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 436. For Widenham, see ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 397.

459 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 363; ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 213; CJ vii, p. 39.

460 For the transfer of Myhill's, Burnell's, and Carey's companies, see TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 410.

461 Ibid, SP28/58, fo. 3.

462 Ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 279; ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 296; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 77. Loftus was described as belonging to Monck's regiment in 1/51: ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 563.

463 CSPD 1651, pp. 63, 547.

464 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 643: ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 213.

465 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 118; ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 611.

Infantry: Regiments Shipped to Ireland in 1647 which were not Disbanded by Cromwell in August 1649

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Slade William Leigh	Gone by 4/51.[466] Succeeded by Lt. Col. William Leigh of Ireton's regt. F.| Col. by late 7/51[467]|
Lt. Col.	William Purefoy	Major in Castle's regt. 46. Lt. Col to Cols. Slade and Leigh 2/51, 2/52[468]|
Major	Edward Richardson	Major in late 49 after Purefoy's promotion. Still major at the disbandment in 10/53[469]|
Captains	Alexander Castle	In post in 12/50[470]|
	William Purefoy	In post in 2/52[471]|
	XXX Smith	In post in 4/51[472]|
	Henry Piers/Pearce	4/51, c.10/53[473]|
	XXX Wilkes	In post in 4/51[474]|
	John Garrett	10/51, 2/52[475]|
	XXX Anstle	In post in 6/51[476]|
	James Mansergh	In post in 3/52[477]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Replacements Captain	 Edward Birtill	 Co. disbanded c. 9/53 but Birtill had left by then[478]|

Regiment disbanded in 1653

466 F. and D. have Slade as dying early in 1650, but there is evidence that he was alive just before 2/51: CSPD 1651, p. 57. He no longer commanded the regiment in 4/51 when it was described as late Slade's: TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 174. It was still so described in 6/51: ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 504.

467 BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Account, 30/7-6/8/51.

468 Colonel Leigh, Lieutenant Colonel Purefoy, Major Richardson and Captains Garrett, Castle, Piers and Purefoy were in the regiment in 1/ and 2/52: TNA, SP 28/83, fos. 69, 177. Purefoy was already lieutenant colonel in 2/51: CSPD 1651, p. 34. Leigh commanded an independent company in late 57:TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 28.

469 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 365; TNA, SP 28/96, fo. 212.

470 Alexander Castle, the next four captains in the list, and Major Richardson were in post in 12/50: ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 109.

471 Ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 158. There were apparently two William Purefoys in the regiment in 12/50.

472 For Smith and Wilkes in 4/51 see ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 174.

473 Ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 177.

474 If Thomas, he was lieutenant to Captain Abraham Coles in the regiment in 5/48: HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 591.

475 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 167.

476 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 504. It is possible that he was Edward Arles, captain in the regiment in 5/48. For this see above p. 188.

477 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 63.

478 Ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 18; ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 35; ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 4.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Roger Fenwick Robert Barrow	X at the battle of Scariffhollis in 6/50[479]| In post by 3/51. Ex lt. col. of Venables' regt.[480]|
Lt. Col.	Matthias Westmoreland[481]	In post in 6/51| Co. disbanded in 10/53 after Westmoreland had left[482]|
Major	Thomas Stanley	Still in post in 6/53[483]|
Captains	Robert Fenwick	In post at the disbandment[484]|
	Richard Dixon	In post in 10/50[485]|
	Jeremy Hartley	
	George Corlett	
	Thomas Payne	

	Major John Homan	10/50, 1/51?[486]
	Major Andrew Mainwaring	In post in 1/52. Co disbanded 9/53[487]
Capt. Lt.	**Leonard Thickpenny**	

Regiment disbanded in 1653

479 Ibid, SP 28/71, fos. 168, 223.
480 The regiment was still being described as Fenwick's in 10/50
481 For his first name see ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 740.
482 Courts Martial, p. 70; TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 98.
483 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 365.
484 TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 39.
485 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 223.
486 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 168; ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 81. The entry for 1/51 suggests he had left the regiment, but it is slightly ambiguous.
487 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 65; ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 48. When his company was disbanded Mainwaring was described as captain, not major. It is likely that major was a rank he had held before entering the regiment.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Blagrave	Lt. Col. in the regt. Succeeded Col. Moore by 7/50[488]
Lt. Col.	XXX	
Major	**Oliver Jones**[489]	
Captains	Edward Moore	7/50, 9/50[490]
	William Arnold	
	Peter Kennard	6/50, 7/50[491]
	Robert Clough	9/50, 12/50[492]
	XXX Pigott[493]	
	Sir John Sherlock	Co. commander but no regt. given in 7/51[494]
	George Corbett	7/50, 9/50[495].
	Thomas Hughes[496]	
	Thomas Mullineux[497]	
	Matthew Potter	In post in 1/51. Late Moore's regt. Co. disbanded 7/53[498]
Lt. Col.	Isaac Dobson[499]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment probably disbanded in the winter of 1650-51

488 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 558. I agree with F. and D. that there is little doubt that the regiment came to an end during the winter of 1650-1. All the later references in warrants relate to pay arrears. However, at least three companies, Sherlock's, Potter's and Dobson's, appear to have survived.
489 Jones was mentioned twice in early 1651 as being in late Moore's regiment. The implication is that he did not serve under Blagrave: ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 86; ibid, SP 28/75, fo. 146.
490 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 582; ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 373. The warrants make it clear that he was in Blagrave's regiment.
491 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 522; ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 568. The regiment in which Kennard served was also described as late Moore's.
492 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 34.; ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 211. Both warrants describe the regiment in which he served as late Moore's.
493 Pigott served under Colonel Moore: ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 87.
494 Ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 41. He was dead by 4/53: ibid. SP 28/91, fo. 292.
495 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 558; ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 319. He may be the Captain George Corlett who was serving in Fenwick's regiment in 1648.
496 Ibid, SP 29/69, fo. 558; ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 22. He served in Moore's regiment.
497 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 75. The implication is that he served whilst Moore was colonel.
498 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 515; ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 70.
499 Ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 346; ibid, SP 28/89, fo. 84.

Infantry: Regiments Raised in England and Ireland during 1650

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Daniel Axtell	Former lt. col. 12th regt. F. In post by 6/50[500]|
Lt. Col.	XXX Alexander Brayfield	 In post in 4/53[501]| Gone by 3/54. Prob. lt. col. 7th regt. F.[502]|
Major	Alexander Brayfield	11/50, 4/52.[503] Formerly capt. 12th regt. F. |
Captains	Thomas Rawlins	In post in 12/50.[504] Prob. lt. to Capt. Samuel Axtell 12th regt. F. NMA[505]|
	XXX Newman	11/50, 4/53[506]|
	Nathaniel/Nicholas Whiting	In post in 11/50| X at Limerick in 7/51[507]|
	XXX Crimes	12/50, 4/53|
	Martin Jubbs	12/50/ 4/53. Formerly lt. 12th regt. F. NMA[508]|
	Maurice Murphy/Murfee[509]	12/50, 4/53. Formerly capt. in John Gifford's regt.|
	Benjamin Woodward	12/50, 4/53[510]|
	Nathaniel Gough	In post in 5/50| X in Ireland at Meleek in 11/50[511]|
	Thomas Cheshire	7/51[512], 4/53|
	XXX Humphreys	In post in 8/52[513]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Replacements and Possibles Captains	 XXX Cornock[514]	
	XXX Gardiner	

500 His commission must have been issued in the previous month. For this see CSPD 1650, p. 575.
501 TNA, SP 28/91, fo 296. The warrant also names Captains Jubbs, Murphy, Crimes, Woodward and Newman.
502 See below p. 240.
503 Major Brayfield and Captains Newman and Whiting were named as company commanders in 11/50 in TNA, SP 28/72, fo. 137. Brayfield was still major at the surrender of Galway in 4/52: Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, p. 305.
504 Captains Rawlins, Crimes, Jubbs, Murphey and Woodward are named in a warrant of 12/50: TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 161.
505 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 137.
506 It is possible that this man was the former Ensign Thomas Newnham of the 12th regiment of foot: ibid.
507 TNA, SP 28/72, fo. 137; CSPD 1651, p. 34; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Account, 30/7-6/8/51.
508 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 119, 137. Jubbs was adjutant general of the army in Ireland by 1/53: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 319.
509 For Murphy's first name, see TNA, SP 28/79, fo. 295.
510 Woodward was a captain in Inchiquin's command who had gone over to Parliament by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280.
511 CSPD 1650, p. 575; Whitelock, *Memorials*, p. 483; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 25/11-2/12/50.
512 TNA, SP 28/79, fo. 295. He may be the Captain Chester who died in Jamaica in William Moore's regiment: Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 2
513 TNA, SP 28/87, fo. 260.
514 Cornock and Gardiner were in post when the regiment was disbanded in 1655: Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 132.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir William Cole[515] John Cole[516]	Succeeded as col. by his son[517]| In post at the disbandment in 7/53|
Lt. Colonel	Richard Le Hunt Edward Jackson	Commissioned in 4/50. Ex Cromwell's Lifeguard| In post in 7/53|
Major	Edward Jackson John? Folliott	In post in 4/50| In post in 7/53|
Captains	Samuel Potts	In post in 4/50| Gone by 7/53|
	Stephen Squibb	4/50, 7/53|
	Arthur Swanwick	4/50, 7/53|
	Richard Blumfield	In post in 4/50| Gone by 7/53|

	Henry Brooke	Co. disbanded 7/53[518]|
	XXX Cosen	In post in 7/53|
	S? Cole	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX Allen	Ditto|

Regiment disbanded in late 1653

515 Sir William Cole had commanded a regiment in Ireland, but it had joined Ormond in 1648. In mid-1649 he petitioned Parliament for permission to raise what from the language used must have been a completely new one, half of which, it seems, was to be raised in Ireland and half in England. The names of the commanders of six companies being raised in England in 4/50 are given in CSPD 1650, p. 574.

516 John Cole was referred to as colonel before his father's death. He appears to have commanded a regiment which was absorbed into his father's when he succeeded him as colonel. The references to the regiment in F. and D. are unconvincing, but at least two officers served under him, John Folliott and Thomas Bull: TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 170; ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 102; CJ vii, p. 39.

517 Amongst John Cole's officers in 7/53 were three of Sir William's company commanders – Lieutenant Colonel Jackson and Captains Squibb and Swanwick: TNA, SP28/93, fo. 102. The list of the regiment in Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 470 gives two and possibly three additional names – Captains Henry Brooke, Francis Coles and William Cosby.

518 TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 534.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Cole[519]	
Lt. Col.	XXX	
Major	John? Folliott	In post in 10/50[520]|
Captains	Thomas Bull	X in Ireland at capture of Charlemont[521]|
	Richard Lee??	X in Ireland before 11/51, but possibly in Sir William's regt.[522]|
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment probably disbanded before 1653

519 According to F. and D. the names of the company commanders in John Cole's regiment in 1653 are given in Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 468. However, the information is incorrect. The officers named belonged to Thomas Coote's regiment. For this see above p. 210.

520 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 170.

521 CJ vii, p. 39.

522 Ibid.

Regiment[523]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Saunders	Lt. Col. in the 4th regt. F.| No longer col. of a regt. but commanding a co. in 58[524]|
Lt. Col.	Simon Eaton??[525]	
Major	Robert Cuppage/Coppage	4/51, 7/51[526]|
Captains	William Harmer[527]	
	John Taylor	In post in 4/51|
	James Sicklemore	Ditto| His co. was disbanded c. 8/53[528]|
	William Radford	In post in 4/51|
	Robert Jacobs/Jacombe	Ditto|
	John Blackburn	Ditto|
	William Hext	Lt. to Capt. Francis Barrington in Okey's regt. Dr. NMA and Henry Cromwell's regt. H. in Ireland before 6/51| Died in Ireland before 11/51[529]|

	XXX Levitt[530]	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment probably disbanded in 1653

523 I have not been able to add much to the brief account of the officers of this regiment given in F. and D. However, the large sum of money awarded it in pay means that it cannot have been disbanded earlier than 6/53: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 640; CSPI 1647-1660, p. 641.
524 TNA, SP 28/116, fo. 258.
525 In 7/51 it was Ireton's intention that Eaton, designated lieutenant colonel of Le Hunt's regiment, should move to Saunders's regiment or be commissioned as major in another regiment: F. and D., p. 665. I have not found evidence of this happening, but it does show that by then Le Hunt had given up trying to raise a new regiment of foot. This is not surprising as he had just taken over Robert Tothill's regiment. For the officers who served in Le Hunt's first regiment see below p. 218.
526 TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 232; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 638 (12).
527 Warrants concerning the raising of this regiment and its being transported to Ireland give the names of six captains from Harmer to Blackburn: CSPD 1650, p. 601. The same six names and that of the major appear in a warrant in a file for 4/51 with Jacobs as Jacombe: TNA, SP 28/76, fo. 232.
528 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 546.
529 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 138; TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 314; CJ vii, p. 39.
530 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 73.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Reeves/Ryves[531]	Lt. Col in Munster. Won over by Cromwell 10/49[532]|
Lt. Col.	John Nelson[533]	In post c. 6/50, 11/51. Formerly major of Phayre's regt.|
Major	Robert Myhill[534] Henry Whittle	Ex capt. in Gifford's regt. Major in this regt. 6/50, 7/51| Gone by 9/51[535]| 9/51, 2/52. Former capt. in the 7th regt. F.[536]|
Captains	Richard Weston[537]	3/50, 10/52. D. by 7/53[538]|
	Hercules Arnott	3/50, 1/51[539]| Gone by 5/51|
	Thomas Campion	3/50, 9/53[540]|
	John Cope/Cooper	In post in 3/50|
	John Mansergh	3/50, 1/52[541]|
	Peter Carey	In post in 6/50. Ex capt. in Gifford's regt.| Co disbanded 6/53[542]|
	Richard Burnell	6/50, 3/52[543]. Ex capt. in Gifford's regt.|
	XXX Payne	1/51, 5/51[544]|
	XXX Conyers	In post in 5/51[545]|
	Stephen Hall	Co. disbanded in 53[546]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disbanded in 1653

531 There is an almost complete list of the company commanders in post in 5/51 – colonel, lieutenant colonel, major and Captains Mansergh, Conyers, Payne, Campion, Weston and Burnell: ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 277. Carey is presumably the missing captain.
532 BL, Thomason Tracts E 399 (33); F. and D. The regiment sailed for Ireland in c. 4/50: CSPD 1650, pp. 498, 571.
533 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 142. F. and D. imply that Cromwell appointed him in 3/50.
534 Myhill, Burnell and Carey were in the regt. by 6/50: ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 410. For Myhill in 7/51 see ibid, SP 28/79, fos. 111, 305.
535 He left the regiment in early 8/51: ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 305.
536 For Whittle, Carey, Weston and Mansergh in 1/52 see ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 133. For Whittle as major in 9/51 and 2/53, see ibid, SP28/80, fo. 572; ibid, SP 28/ 84, fo. 93.
537 For Weston and the next four captains, who were commissioned by 3/50, see CSPD 1650, p. 570-1. Their companies and two others were raised in England: ibid, p. 498.
538 TNA, SP 28/88, fo. 16. Weston's widow was paid his arrears in 7/53: ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 3.
539 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 650.
540 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 476; ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 22.
541 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 133.
542 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 486.
543 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 39.
544 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 634; ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 277. Payne may have succeeded Capt. Arnott.
545 Ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 277. He may be Captain Congreave of Gifford's regiment.
546 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 558.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Foulke[547]	Lt. Col. in Shropshire c. 45 and then prob. lt. col. Hungerford's regt. in Ireland[548]|
Lt. Colonel	William Disney[549]	10/50, 6/53|
Major	Joseph Fox	In post in 8/51. Co. disbanded in 10/53[550]|
Captains	Edward Puckle	10/50, 2/52[551]|
	Edward Geares	In post in 10/50[552]|
	William Jones	In post in 5/52. Co. disbanded in 10/53[553] |
	Robert Wynn	In post in 4/52. Co. disbanded in 10/53|
	XXX Gilbert	In post in 3/52[554]. Co. disbanded 10/53|
	John? Kennington	New co. in 3/51 raised in England.[555] In post in 2/52. Co. disbanded 10/53|
	XXX Candler	Co. disbanded 10/53|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disbanded in 1653

547 F. and D. were aware of the regiment's existence but did not discover enough information about it to write its history. It took the field under Colonel Hewson's command in 3/51, and Foulke and Disney attended the council of war held in 6/53 which decided on how the first slimming down of the army in Ireland was to be carried out: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 626 (11); Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 365.

548 TNA, SP 28/134; BL, Harleian Ms 427, fo. 117; HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 591.

549 Disney and Puckle were raising troops in London in 1650 for this regiment: CSPD 1650, pp. 522, 592, 604.

550 TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 146. For his company being disbanded, see ibid, SP 28/98, fo. 15.

551 Courts Martial, p. 74.

552 CSPD 1650, p. 596; CJ vi, p. 281.

553 TNA, SP 28/96, fo. 209. Jones and the four captains below him are the only names in the list of the regiment at its disbandment: Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 468.

554 For Gilbert, Wynn, Jones and Kennington in 2/ and 3/53, see Courts Martial, pp. 76, 86, 88, 93, 106.

555 CSPD 1651, p. 521.

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Solomon Richards[556]	
Lt. Col.	John Brett	9/50[557], 6/53[558]|
Major	Francis Conway	12/50, 1/51[559]|
Captains	Peter Spencer	Raising co. in 4/50. In post 1/52[560]|
	Richard Stamper	Ditto. In post in 1/51|
	Edmund Heygate/Hyegate[561]	Ditto. 6/50, 1/52|
	John Webb	Ditto. 9/50, 6/51[562]|
	XXX Thorne/Thorney	Ditto| Gone by 9/50[563]|
	Daniel Prescott[564]	9/50, 1/51|
	William Halsey	9/50, 4/51. Prob. succeeded Capt. Thorne[565]|
	Thomas Tomlins/Tomkins	1/52, 6/53[566]|
	XXX Richards	1/51, 10/51[567]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment disbanded before 9/54

556 Richards's officers in 12/50 were Lieutenant Colonel Brett, Major Conway, and Captains Spencer, Webb, Prescott, Stamper, Heygate and Halsey: TNA, SP 28/73, fos. 113, 117, 145. There is no account of the regiment in F. and D. It was disbanded before 9/54: CSPD 1654, p. 358.

557 For Brett, Spencer, Prescott and Webb in 9/50, see TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 681.

558 For the officers known to have been in the regiment in 1/52, see ibid, SP 28/83, fos. 220, 243. For 6/53 and Brett's first name see Dunlop. *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 365.

559 Brett, Conway, Stamper, Prescott, Webb, Richards, and Spencer were company commanders in 1/51: TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 119.

560 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 220. The officers charged with raising the companies in 4/50 also included Edmund Parsons and Michael Pember:

CSPD 1650, p. 515.
561 TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 323; ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 220.
562 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 295.
563 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 222.
564 Prescott's claim for pay arrears indicated that he was commissioned in 1649 to serve in this regiment in Ireland: ibid, E 121/4/7/48B, 1-2.
565 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 218. Phillip Constable was lieutenant to both captains: ibid, SP 28/70, fos. 222, 631.
566 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 243; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 399.
567 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 160.

Infantry: Units Transferred to Ireland after June 1650

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	John Clarke	Lt. Col. in the 3rd regt. F. and commander of the battalion that remained in England[568]
Lt. Colonel	Philip Ebzery	Major in 12/51 in Jersey; Lt. Col. in Ireland in 1/55 and prob. much earlier[569]
Major	Richard Aske	Capt. in the regt. in England 46-51. Major in Ireland in this regt. in 8/52. Signed 54 letter[570]
Captains	Nathaniel Chase	Capt. 3rd regt. F. in England c. 48. Capt. in the regt. in Ireland in 8/52[571]
	Lewis Northcott	Lt. in ditto. Capt. by 2/50
	Robert Smith	Lt. to John Clarke in the 3rd regt. F. in England. Capt. by 5/50
	XXX Hooper	Capt. 3rd regt. F. in England in 5/50 and in post in Ireland in 8/52
	John Filkins	In post in Ireland in 8/52. Lt. to Major Ebzery in England 49[572] Left regt. by 12/54[573]
	Richard Kingdom	In post in 8/52 Co. disbanded c. 6/53[574]
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Replacements and Possibles Captains	XXX Hardier/Hardware?[575]	Ens. to John Clarke in 3rd regt. F. c. 48
	Thomas Tandy	Ens. to Capt. Aske 3rd regt. F. in England c.48
	Edward Allen	Ens. to Capt. Nathaniel Chase 3rd regt. F. in England c. 48

568 See p. 45 above.
569 BL, Thomason Tracts, The Faithful Scout, 19-26/12/51; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 474. Ebzery was probably lieutenant colonel at the commissioning of the regiment in 11/51: F. and D.
570 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 66; TNA, SP 28/87, fo. 256. The 54 letter was from the officers in the regiments stationed in Ireland congratulating Oliver Cromwell on becoming Lord Protector: Nickolls, *Original Letters*, pp. 144-5. It is wrongly assigned in the text to Cromwell's second proclamation as lord protector in 1657.
571 For Chase, Northcott, Aske, Hooper and Filkins as captains in the regiment in 8/52, see TNA, SP 28/87, fos. 256, 292. Chase appears to have been promoted to major before his death 'overseas' in 1653: PCC Wills Index 1653-6, p. 102.
572 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 130.
573 Filkins had been commissioned as captain in Colonel Carter's regiment which sailed for Jamaica in 12/54. He subsequently became the major: CSPD 1655, p. 431; Firth, Narrative of Venables, p. 120.
574 TNA, SP 28/87, fo. 32; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 560. Kingdom had links with the regiment when it was in England. At the time he was an ensign. For this see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 130. Kingdom was secretary of the Committee of the Army in 7/59: TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 70.
575 Hardware, Tandy and Allen were captains in the regiment in 1655: Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 226.

Unit[576]	Name	Military Career
Major	James Harrison	In post in 5/53
Captains	Samuel Clarke	Ditto. Officer in Limerick in 2/54[577]
	Arthur Helsham	Ditto and ditto
	John Clarke[578]	

	James Symcock[579]	

576 This group of companies had formed the second battalion of the New Model Army's 2nd regiment of foot. It had assisted in the capture of the Channel Isles and served in the garrison on Guernsey until late in 1651 when it was shipped to Ireland. All five company commanders are mentioned in a warrant dated 3/52: TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 364. Firth and Davies thought the battalion might have been used to complete Clarke's regiment on the grounds that Clarke had served in the 2nd regiment of foot in the past. However, the connection they made was erroneous. Clarke's career in the New Model Army in England had been in the 3rd regiment of foot. Little is known about the battalion's length of service in Ireland but it appears to have been responsible for security in the Limerick area in 1653, as Harrison, Helsham and Clarke signed a letter supporting Oliver Cromwell's expulsion of the Rump Parliament: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 26/6-4/7/53.
577 Thurloe, *State Papers* ii, p. 118.
578 This was the other Captain John Clarke whom F. and D. identified as the colonel in the army in Ireland.
579 Symcock saw service in Ireland: BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 37.

Infantry Unit Disbanded soon after Being Raised

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Richard Le Hunt	In post in 10/50[580]| Col. of Tothill's regt. 7/51|
Lt. Colonel	Simon Eaton	10/50, 3/51[581]|
Major	John Pares XXX Warren	In post in 10/50| In post in 7/51[582]|
Captains	Thomas Burrell	10/50, 4/51[583]|
	James Clarke	10/50. X in Ireland[584]|
	William Shaw	In post in 10/50|
	XXX Mowbray	In post in 4/51|
	Rice Thomas	Ditto|
	William Smith	3/51, 6/51[585]|
	John Dickenson	In post in 6/51| Gone in 7/51[586]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment seemingly discontinued by Ireton in c. 8/51
580 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 78-80 gives the names of some of the officers in post in 10/50.
581 CSPD 1651, p. 550; TNA, SP 28/75, fo. 164.
582 F. and D., p. 665.
583 For officers in post in 4/51 see TNA, SP 28/76, fos. 204, 214.
584 CJ vii, p. 39.
585 TNA, SP 28/75, fo. 168; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 307.
586 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 321; ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 192.

Dragoons

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Daniel Abbott	
Major	Francis Bolton John Disbrowe	Transferred to Pretty's regt. H. as major c. 12/51[587]| Major of the regt. by 12/51[588]|
Captains	John Disbrowe	In post in 9/50[589]|
	Henry Crewkerne	10/50, 11/51[590]|
	Henry Fulcher	
	Miles Ashton	
	Harold Scrimgeour	12/50, 5/52[591]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles and Replacements Captains	Henry Pakenham	In post 11/51. Transfer to Ludlow's regt. H. by 55[592]|

	Anthony Woodley	In post by 11/51[593]

587 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 46; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 382; F. and D.; TNA, SP 28/83, fo. 273.
588 Ibid, SP 28/82, fo. 95.
589 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 287.
590 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 66. There was a captain of dragoons with this surname in Ireland in 5/52 campaigning with Captain Pakenham: Ludlow, *Memoirs* i, p. 518.
591 TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 268; ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 9. Formerly captain in Okey's regiment of dragoons in the New Model Army, Scrimgeour resigned or was removed in 6/47: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 81.
592 TNA, SP 28/82, fo. 149; Ludlow, *Memoirs* i, p. 518; Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 131.
593 See above pp. 209–10.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Henry Ingoldsby	
Major[594]	William Moore Nicholas Moore	6/50, 8/52| 7/50, 12/50, 1/52|
Captains	James Napper	
	Thomas Wrenn	
	Thomas Walcot	In post in 12/51[595]|
	William Thornhill	Capt. in 2/52. Major at the troop's disbandment in 10/53[596]|
	William Miller	In post in 10/52[597]|
	Thomas Wood	Lt. at first in the regt.| D. in 51[598]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles and Replacements Captains	John Campbell	Troop disbanded in 55[599]|
	XXX Gibbons	Ditto[600]|
	XXX Hassett	7/51, 1/52[601]|
	William Staffe	6/51, 1/52| X in 2/52[602]|
	John Blennerhasset	In post in 9/51. Troop disbanded in 8/53[603]|

594 There is some confusion over the major's first name. It was Nicholas according to TNA, SP 28/68, fo. 484; ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 127; and ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 101, and William according to ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 345 and ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 302. F. and D. opt for Nicholas, Dunlop for William. My suspicion is that Nicholas was the officer's first name and that William was always in Sir Charles Coote's regiment.
595 TNA, SP 28/82, fo. 95.
596 Ibid, SP 28/84, fo. 66; ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 163. He was in the army in some capacity in 10/58: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A 61, piece 187.
597 TNA, SP 28/88, fo. 152.
598 F. and D.
599 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 132.
600 Ibid. This was probably Francis Gibbons, lieutenant to Captain Walcot and then to Captain Staffe, who signed a warrant on the troop's behalf in 2/52: TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 699; ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 178; ibid, SP 28/84, fo. 91.
601 Ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 272; ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 135.
602 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 351; ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 91; Ludlow, *Memoirs* i, p. *506.*
603 TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 544; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 536.

Cavalry: Old New Model Army Regiments

2nd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Jerome Zanchy	
Major	Thomas Pennyfather	D. in Ireland before 1/51. Succeeded by Capt. Green[604]
Captains	Elias Green	Major by 1/51[605]
	John Godfrey	In post by 6/50[606]
	Thomas Ball	Capt. by 5/51 at the latest X in Ireland c. 2/52[607]
	Richard Essex	Capt. by 7/50[608]
	Thomas Gibson	In post in 11/50. QM to Capt. Samuel Gardiner 2nd regt. H. late 40s[609]
	James Whitelock	In Oliver Cromwell's lifeguard in 2/51. Capt. in the regt. by 3/52[610]
	Giles Gregory	In post in 8/53[611]
Capt. Lt.	XXX Blackway	In post in 9/50[612]
Possible and Replacement Captain	XXX Ingoldsby?? [613]	

604 CJ, vii, p. 38.
605 TNA, SP 28/74, fo. 626.
606 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 366.
607 Ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 261; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 12-19/4/52.
608 Two of Zanchy's captains were said to have been killed in 9/51: ibid, Thomason Tracts, E 641 (19). They were presumably Captains Essex and Gibson.
609 TNA, SP 28/72, fo. 191; ibid, E 121/4/1/59A, entry 117.
610 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 616; ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 134. Whitelock was described as captain when he took part in a council of war with Godfrey and Sankey in 3/52: Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, p. 296; BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 12-19/4/52.
611 TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 464. Gregory seems to have formerly been a captain in the 4th regiment of foot.
612 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 656.
613 A Captain Ingoldsby sat on the council of war at Cashir in 2/52 with Captains Whitelock and Godfrey. A month later he was in a mixed body of horse and foot commanded by Colonel Zanchy in action against enemy units. Other officers included Major Green and Captains Whitelock and Godfrey: Gilbert, *Contemporary History* iii, p. 296. It is possible that this is the earliest mention of George Ingoldsby, a major by 1660, who was the younger brother of Colonels Richard and Henry Ingoldsby.

11th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Ireton Charles Fleetwood	D. 10/51 Col. of the regt. by 10/52[614]
Major	Anthony Morgan	
Captains	Robert Thornhill	In post in 1/52 Gone by 3/52[615]
	Benjamin Perry	6/50, 1/53[616]
	Richard Franklin	
	Daniel Lisle	10/52, 7/53[617]
	Samuel Porter	9/50, 4/53[618]
Capt. Lt.	George Tracey John Degennis Henry Baker William Shaw William Southwell	In post in 7/50[619] D. before 11/51[620] 10/50, 5/51[621] In post in 2/52[622] In post in 8/53[623]

614 Fleetwood replaced Ireton as deputy lieutenant in Ireland in 7/52 eight months after Ireton's death. Cromwell remained lord lieutenant: F. and D.
615 TNA, SP 28/83, fo. 95; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 31.
616 Ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 450; ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 201; ibid, SP 28/90, fo. 399.
617 Ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 362; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 24.

618 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 667. Porter signed a letter from officers stationed in the Limerick area in 4/53 approving Cromwell's forcible dissolution of the Long Parliament: BL, Thomason Tracts, A Perfect Diurnal, 27/6-4/7/53. He may have served very briefly in the 9th regiment of horse in the New Model Army in 1645: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 53, 63.
619 TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 458. He was in the regiment in 1/52: ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 95.
620 Degennis had served in Ireton's troop early in the First Civil War, but does not appear to have held a position in the New Model Army until Ireton was commanding troops in Ireland: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 64. There is no doubt that when he died Degennis was in Ireton's regiment, and that he was lieutenant of Ireton's troop, but it is not clear from the entry in the Commons Journal if he came between Tracey and Baker or between Baker and Shaw: CJ vii, p. 39.
621 TNA, SP 28/72, fo. 123; ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 202.
622 Shaw was described as captain lieutenant of the deceased General Ireton's troop in 1/ and 2/52: Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 85; ibid, SP 28/84, fo. 156.
623 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 576. He may have previously been a troop commander in Sir Theophilus Jones's regiment: ibid, fo. 574.

Cavalry: Regiments Raised in England in 1649

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	
Major	Daniel Redman	
Captains	John Hardman[624]	D. before 11/51[625]|
	Thomas Scott	In post in 7/50 and prob. in 11/50[626]|Prob. major H. in England by 12/50|
	Edward Warren	
	Robert Preston	In post in 3/52[627]|
	Abel Warren	
	John Frank	6/51,11/51. Ex capt. lt. Henry Cromwell's regt. [628]|
	William Thornhill	In post in 3/52[629]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Mosse|	In post in 6/53[630]|

624 Ibid, SP 28/62, fo. 455.
625 CJ vii, p. 39.
626 TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 404; ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 172. In 11/50 Major Redman took responsibility for Scott's troop.
627 Bodleian Library, Tanner Ms 54, fo. 155.
628 TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 289; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 173.
629 Ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 360.
630 Ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 52.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Shelburne Henry Pretty	Col. of the regt. by 1/50| D. 4/51[631]|
Major	Henry Pretty Lewis Pemberton Francis Bolton	Col. in succession to Shelburne by 6/51[632]| In post in 9/51|Left regt. by 5/52[633]| Gone by 5/52| In post by 1/52. Former major in Abbott's regt. Dr.[634]|
Captains	Lewis Pemberton	Major in 9/51. Gone by 5/52 |
	Henry Alland	
	Roger Yates	In post in 7/50[635]|
	Sampson Twogood	In post in 10/50. Lt. in Capt. Pretty's troop 11th regt. H. in England 49 and lt. in Ireland in 10/49[636]|
	Jasper Synott	In post in 1/51[637]|
	William Burden	Ditto| D. before 10/51[638]|
	Robert Seabrook	Former capt. lt.|
	William Bolton	In post by 9/51[639]
	Henry Ward	Capt. in 2/52. Gone by 8/52[640]|
Capt. Lt.	Robert Seabrook	Captain of Pemberton's troop by 5/52[641]|

	Henry Ward	In post in 9/51. Formerly lt. to Major Pretty[642]|
	John Salt	In post by 10/52[643]|

631 Ibid, SP 28/65, fo. 11; BL, Thomason Tracts, Weekly Intelligencer, 6-13/5/51.
632 Bodleian Library, Tanner Ms 54, fo. 81.
633 Ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 540; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* i, p. 36. Pemberton had been demoted to captain as he is referred to by that rank in 5/52. He then seemingly left the regiment: TNA, SP 28/86, fo. 63.
634 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 273.
635 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 508.
636 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo.104; ibid, SP 28/63, fo. 49; Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 145.
637 TNA, SP 28/74, fos. 85, 143.
638 CJ vii, p. 39.
639 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* i, p. 36.
640 TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 5; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 186
641 Ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 63.
642 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 284; ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 117.
643 Ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 382.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Henry Cromwell	
Major	Peter Wallis	
Captains	Francis Barrington	
	Samuel Hart	Lt. to Capt. Scott in Oliver Cromwell's regt. H. in 7/50. In post as capt. in 5/51|X at Limerick in 9/51[644]|
	Robert Stannard	9/50, 5/52[645]. Lt. to Capt. Griffith Lloyd, 4th regt. H. 46-49[646]|
	Richard Nicholetts John Friend	X at Limerick in 9/51[647]| Succeeded Capt. Nicholetts as troop commander by 3/52[648]|
	Thomas Evans[649]	
	Joseph Deane	In post by 8/52[650]|
Capt. Lt.	John Frank	7/50, 11/50| Promoted to full capt. in Oliver Cromwell's regt. H. in Ireland in 6/51[651]|

644 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 404; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 285; ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 404; ibid, SP 28/77, fo. 235.
645 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 641; ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 59.
646 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 123, 141.
647 F. and D.
648 Friend had brought his own troop of horse to Ireland. It was then presumably combined with Nicholetts's troop: TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 438; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 336; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 246; CSPD 1651-2, pp. 147-8, 159. A John Friend had been lieutenant to Lieutenant Colonel Puckle in the 4th regiment of foot in the late 1640s: TNA, E 121/1/1/ 26B, entry 2.
649 The latest mention I can find of this troop commander is in 7/50: ibid, SP 28/68, fo. 351.
650 Ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 246. Dean had served as captain lieutenant in Henry Cromwell's former regiment: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 140.
651 TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 448; ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 145; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 173.

Regiment[652]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Reynolds	
Major	Henry Owen	
Captains	Theophilus Sandford	Troop disbanded by 10/53 but possibly only in part[653]|
	Edward Thelwall	In post in 6/50| D. by 1/51[654]|
	Philemon Owen	In post in 7/50| D. in Ireland after 8/51 but before 11/51[655]|
	James Jennings	6/50, 4/51|
	John Eyres/ Ayres	7/50, 3/52[656]|
	Richard McLaughlin	1/52, 2/52[657]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX[658]	

652 The troop commanders in 7/50 included Owen as major and Captains Sandford, Owen, Thelwall and Ayres: ibid, SP 28/69, fos. 411, 432.
653 Ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 96.

654 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 660. He was presumably the Captain Thelwall who died of a fever in 11/50. Lumley Thelwall was his executor: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 21-28/11/50.
655 TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 562; CJ vi, p. 280. A lieutenant serving under Inchiquin Owen had changed sides by 8/49.
656 TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 432; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 69.
657 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 79; ibid, SP 28/84, fo. 68.
658 Probably Captain Anthony Baskett who took responsibility for this troop's pay in 7/51: ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 88.

The Lifeguard		
Captain	William Allen[659]	
Capt. Lt.	John Maunsell[660]	
Cor.	James Whitelock	10/50, 2/51. Capt. 2nd regt. H. by 3/52[661]|

659 Allen was adjutant general of horse by 3/51: BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Occurrences, 4-11/4/51.
660 Captain Lieutenant Maunsell and his men were discharged from the army in Ireland in late 1653: ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 233.
661 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 82. Also see above p. 220.

Cavalry: Regiments already in Ireland

Double Regiment[662]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Lord Broghill	He was commanding an independent troop in late 57[663]|
Majors	William Warden Nicholas Purden	In post at that rank by 6/50| Transferred to Ludlow's regt. H. as major by 10/51|
Captains	Maurice Fenton	
	Henry Rogers 2nd div.[664]	
	James Cuffe 1st div.	In post in 4/53[665]|
	XXX Dormer	
	George Bishop 1st div.	In post 3/51[666]. Transferred to Ludlow's regt. H.|
	XXX Dethick 2nd div.	In post in 1/51[667]|
	Peter Courthorpe 2nd div.	
	John Aymes	In post in 11/50[668]|
	XXX Pierce prob. 1st div.	In post in 7/50[669]|
	Thomas Southwell 1st div.	In post in 9/50| Transferred to Ludlow's regt. H. |
	Richard Kyrle 1st div.	In post in 12/50[670]|
Capt. Lt.	Timothy Rutter	In post in 9/50[671]|

662 For the double regiment as a unit see above p. 15.
663 Ibid, SP 28/115, fo. 32.
664 The divisions were given in warrants issued between 6/50 and 2/51 but not thereafter.
665 Ibid, SP 28/92, fo. 65.
666 Ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 254.
667 Ibid, SP 28/75, fo. 553.
668 Ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 204.
669 See above p. 195.
670 TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 69.
671 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 652.

Regiment[672]		
Colonel	Lord Broghill	
Major	Nicholas Purden	
Captains	Maurice Fenton	
	Peter Courthorpe	

	Richard Kyrle	
	Henry Rogers	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Disbanded in 1653 apart from Broghill's troop

672 These were the troop commanders at disbandment in 8/53 according to Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 59, fo. 463. It is one of several sheets of manuscript calendared as if dating from the 1660s. A small number of errors and omissions suggest that they constitute a reasonably successful attempt to reconstruct the troops and companies in certain regiments as they were ten years earlier. See also the regiments of horse of Sir Charles Coote, Richard Coote, Sir Theophilus Jones and Chidley Coote, and the regiments of foot of Sir Charles Coote, Thomas Coote, John Cole, and John Foulke. Most were stationed in Ulster and Connaught, but Broghill's is the exception as it had very strong associations with Munster.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Michael Jones deceased	Regt. combined with Sir Theophilus Jones's before 12/50|
Major	John Villiers Anthony Otway	X in Ireland c. 6/50[673]| In post before 12/50[674]|
Captains	Anthony Otway	Still capt. in 7/50.[675] Promoted soon afterwards| Left army c. 12/50|
	William Meredith	Major in 11/50 after transferring to Sir Theophilus Jones's regt.[676]|
	Robert Glegg	Transferred to Sir Theophilus Jones's regt. after 9/50 and before 1/51[677]|
	Henry Fisher	
	William Parsons	
	John Annersley	
Capt. Lt.	Michael Cusack	Left by 10/50[678]|

673 CJ vii p. 38. Villiers was reported as badly wounded in the London press on 20 June: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 13-20/6/50.

674 Otway became major on Villiers' death but had left by 12/50. He did not transfer to Sir Theophilus Jones's regiment: TNA, SP 28/73, fo. 119.

675 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 532.

676 Meredith was captain in the regiment in 11/49: ibid, SP 28/64, fo. 41. For his becoming major in Sir Theophilus's regiment, see F. and D and TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 164.

677 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 436.

678 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 94.

Regiment A[679]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Theophilus Jones	
Major[680]	**William Cadogan** William Meredith	 In post in 11/50| Troop disbanded c. 10/53[681]|
Captains	Samuel Norwood	7/50, 5/52| Gone by the time of the troop's disbandment in c. 8/53[682]|
	XXX Price	In post in 7/50|
	XXX Dunbar	In post in 7/50|
Major	Alexander Elliott	In post in 2/52[683]| Troop disbanded by 11/53[684]|
Captains	Henry Sankey	In post in 7/50| Troop disbanded by 10/53[685]|
	Robert Glegg	In post by 1/51| Troop disbanded c. 8/53[686]|
	Adam Molyneux	In post in 8/52. Ex lt. to Major Meredith| Troop disbanded c. 8/53[687]|
	XXX Southwell	Troop disbanded by 11/53[688]|
Capt. Lt.	Richard Edwards	10/50, 8/52[689]|

679 This list is based on the captains' names as given in a warrant issued in 7/50: ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 434.

680 There is a degree of uncertainty as to who succeeded Cadogan as major. F. and D. opt for William Meredith who was promoted

on transferring from Michael Jones's regiment. However, Alexander Elliott is described as major between 8/50 and 6/51: TNA, SP 28/70, fo. 807; ibid, SP 28/73, fos. 213, 231; ibid, SP 28/75, fo. 280; ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 152. My hunch is that Firth and Davies were right. Elliott had previously served in another regiment as major and was therefore entitled to use it as a title. There is a very strong hint of this in CSPD 1649-50, p. 211.

681 TNA, SP 28/96, fo. 242. After 8/53 Jones and Meredith commanded troops in Ludlow's regiment of horse: F. and D.

682 TNA, SP 28/79, fo. 283; ibid, SP 28/94, fos. 470, 472. Norwood had served under Inchiquin, but had given his allegiance to Parliament by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280.

683 TNA, SP 28/84, fo. 26.

684 Ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 54.

685 Ibid, SP 28/80, fo. 130.

686 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 656; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 452. In the document in the Carte Manuscripts Glegg's troop is described as being unregimented.

687 Ibid, SP 28/72, fo. 164; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 170; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 424.

688 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 574. A Captain Southwell was in Ludlow's regiment in 1653.

689 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 64; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 162.

Regiment B[690]		
Colonel	Sir Theophilus Jones	
Major	Thomas Stanley	
Captains	Henry Sankey	
	Adam Molyneux	
	Alexander Elliott	
Major	William Meredith	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Disbanded in 1653

690 These are the officers in 8/53 as named in a list dating from the sixteen-sixties, but they are described as being in Jones's troop, not in his regiment: Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 59, fo. 462. For comments on such lists see above pp. 209-10, 214.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote[691]	
Major	Robert Ormsby	
Captains	John Ormsby	
	Charles Ormsby	In post in 10/50[692]|
	Oliver St. George	
	Lord Caulfield	In post in 10/50[693]|
	Lewis Jones	10/50, 3/55[694]|
Capt. Lt.	Emmanuel Palmer	Formerly a full capt. in the regt. In post as capt. lt. in 10/53[695]|

691 With the possible exception of Captain Lieutenant Palmer these officers were apparently in post from 1650 until the regiment's disbandment in 1655: F. and D. citing Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 59, fo. 461. However, that source lists them as being in Coote's troop rather than in his regiment. The troop commanders in the regiment at its disbandment as described in Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 133 suggest very strongly that the regiment had been extensively remodelled after 1653 with officers from other regiments being brought in to replace Lewis Jones, Lord Caulfield and the two Captains Ormsby who then joined the colonel's troop.

692 For Ormsby and Jones see TNA, SP 28/71, fos 144-8.

693 Ibid, SP 28/70, fo. 754.

694 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 128.

695 TNA, SP 28/97, fo.49.

Regiment A	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Chidley Coote	
Major	William Aston	Troop disbanded c. 10/53[696]|
Captains	**Richard Edmonds**[697]	
	Henry Ponsonby[698]	Capt. John Ponsonby's regt. H. 48. At Carrickfergus in10/50. In post in 3/53[699]|Troop disbanded by 10/53[700]|

	Major John Ponsonby	Col. H. by 48. At Dundalk in 10/50|Troop disbanded in 8/53[701]|
	Arthur Purefoy	In post in 10/50. Lt. to Capt. Thomas Hunt in the regt in 48| Troop disbanded by 10/53[702]|
	Maurice Fenton??[703]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Private troop in Chidley Coote's regiment

Captain	Henry Lestrange	In post in 10/50[704]|

696 Ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 49.
697 A Captain Edmonds was serving in Ireland in 6/51: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 26/6-2/7/51.
698 TNA, SP 28/98, fo. 45. For the officers in the regiment in 1648, see HMC, Appendix to the 8th Report, p. 596.
699 TNA, SP 28/71, fo. 150; ibid, SP 28/91, fo. 11.
700 Ibid, SP 28/ 98, fo. 45.
701 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 15; ibid, SP 28/75, fo. 44; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 450.
702 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 210; ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 57; ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 101.
703 Fenton, captain of a troop of horse being disbanded in 1653, was associated with Captain Purefoy: ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 101. However, according to Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 59, fo. 463 he was still serving in Lord Broghill's regiment when it was disbanded in 8/53.
704 Ibid, SP 28/71, fo. 180.

Regiment B[705]		
Colonel	Sir Chidley Coote	
Major	William Aston	
Captains	Henry Ponsonby	
	John Ponsonby	
	Henry Lestrange	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Disbanded in 1653
705 This is the list that appears in Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 59, fo. 464.

Regiment[706]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Richard Coote	
Major	John King	
Captains	Francis King	Troop disbanded before 10/53[707]|
	Col. John Cole	
	Robert Morgan	Troop disbanded 10/53[708]|
	Arthur Gore	Troop disbanded in 10/53[709]|
	Robert Oliver	
	Phillip Taylor	X a week before the battle of Scariffhollis in 6/50[710]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Disbanded in 1653
706 Major King and Captains King, Cole, Morgan, Gore and Oliver were in post at the disbandment according to ibid, fo. 463.
707 Ibid, SP 28/98, fo. 23.
708 Ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 241.
709 Ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 51.
710 Hogan, *Warr of Ireland,* p. 122.

Cavalry: Regiment Raised in 1651

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edmund Ludlow	Lt. Gen. H. in Ireland.[711] Col. H. in Sir William Waller's army in the First Civil War|
Major	William Warden	In post in 10/51. Formerly major in Broghill's regt. H.| Troop disbanded c. 10/53[712]|
Captains	George Bishop	In post in 7/51 but after 3/51. Formerly capt. in Broghill's regt. H.| Troop disbanded in 7/53[713]|
	Henry Baker[714]	10/51, 8/52[715] Formerly capt. lt. in Ireton's regt. H.|
	Thomas Southwell	In post in 10/51. Formerly capt. in Broghill's regt. H.| Troop disbanded 10/53[716]|
	William Ivory	In post in 8/52[717]|
	Richard Nunn	In post prior to 8/53[718]|
Capt. Lt.	John Eyre	In post in 4/51[719]|
Possibles and Replacements Lt. Col.	Thomas Scott[720]	In post in c. 8/53|Troop possibly disbanded[721]|

711 Ludlow was appointed lieutenant general of horse in Ireland in 7/50, the post which had been held by Michael Jones. He did not take over Jones's regiment. Instead a new regiment was constructed for him using troops that belonged to other regiments in Ireland. However, his own troop was raised in England. He and it arrived in Ireland in 1/51: F. and D.

712 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 185; ibid, SP 28/81, fos. 123, 185.

713 Ibid, SP 28/79, fo. 235; ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 230; ibid, SP 28/93, fo. 76.

714 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 73; Ludlow, *Memoirs* i, p. *328*.

715 TNA, SP 28/81, fo. 210; ibid, SP 28/85, fo. 9; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 300.

716 Ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 144; ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 96.

717 Ivory, a lieutenant in Lord Inchiquin's forces, had gone over to Cromwell by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280. Between 4/51 and 9/51 he commanded a troop raised in England to defend East Anglia: CSPD 1650-51, pp. 429, 453, 514. His was an unattached troop in Ireland in 1/52, but it was in Ludlow's regiment by 8/52:TNA, SP 28/83, fos. 217, 219; ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 168.

718 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 549. Richard Nunn had been captain in Ludlow's regiment in Waller's army and Massey's brigade in the west country in 1644-5: Wiltshire Quarter Sessions Papers, Maimed Soldier Petitions. His troop, like Ivory's, survived the 1653 disbandment: Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 131; TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 8.

719 Ibid, SP 28/76, fo. 180.

720 See above pp. 193, 221 for what may have been his previous posts.

721 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 506. Scott was in trouble in Ireland in 1655 for opposition to the Protectorate: Thurloe, *State Papers* iv, p. 74. The source suggests very strongly that he had been in Ludlow's regiment.

Company and Troop Commanders November 1653 to September 1655

Warrants relating to the army in Ireland in the Commonwealth Exchequer papers come to an end in the late autumn of 1653 with the disbandment of the last regiments, troops and companies singled out in June. Thereafter the principal source is a letter from the Council of War of the Army in Ireland congratulating Oliver Cromwell on becoming Lord Protector with its 110 signatures. Nicholls attributes it to the year 1657, but its true date is early 1654, and it is therefore referred to in footnotes as the 54 letter. The second is a schedule reproduced by Prendergast in *Cromwellian Settlement of Ireland*, which gives details of lands allotted to many of the officers who were discharged from the army in the second disbandment of September 1655. A third source is volume 2 of Dunlop's *Ireland under the Commonwealth,* but officers named in the documents he transcribed and annotated were not necessarily still in the army. Rank continued to be used as a mark of respect long after the regiment in which the individual served had been disbanded. In March 1655, for example, in a commission reproduced by Dunlop on page 490 Solomon Richards, John Foulke and William Leigh are listed amongst the colonels even though their regiments had disappeared from the army list eighteen months earlier.

Infantry: New Model Army Regiments Shipped to Ireland in August 1649

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Hardress Waller	
Lt. Col.	**John Widenham** John Nelson?	 Formerly lt. col. of Reeves's regt,[722]|
Major	Richard Hodden	Signed the 54 letter[723]|
Captains	Ralph Wilson	Signed the 54 letter. Lt. Col. in the regt. 7/59|
	William Wade[724]	
	William Skinner	Signed the 54 letter|
.	Thomas Holmes	Signed the 54 letter| Co. disbanded 55|
	William Candler[725]	Ditto| Ditto|
	Robert Wilkinson	Co. disbanded 55|
	John Gibbons	Possibly X in Kerry in 2/53[726]|
	Vere Hunt	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

722 As Reeves's regiment had been disbanded in 1653, and as Nelson was still in the army five months later, it is a fair presumption that he was already second-in-command of the 3rd regiment of foot.
723 Nickolls, *Original Letters*, pp. 144-5. The fact that the petition was signed by Colonel Venables, who was in England or the Caribbean from the spring of 1654 until his expulsion from the army for misconduct in late 1655, shows that Nickolls's date is incorrect.
724 Captain Wade, in post in the regiment in 1653, was recommissioned in 1659: CSPI, 1647-1660, p. 700. He may not, however, have been in continuous service.
725 For Candler's first name see his signature on the 54 letter.
726 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 7-14/3/53.

4th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Lawrence	Signed the 54 letter|
Lt. Col.	Simon Finch	
Major	Richard Tonson	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	James Hutchinson	Ditto|
	John Bennett	Signed the 54 letter|

	John Ewer sen.	
	John Ewer jun.	Co. disbanded in 55[727]|
	Samuel Wade	
Lt. Col.	Oliver Jones[728]	Signed the 54 letter| Co. disbanded in 55|
	Mark/Michael Mould	Co. disbanded in 55[729]|
	XXX Stratton	
Capt. Lt.	John Taylor	In post in 11/53. Signed the 54 letter[730]|
Possibles and Replacements Captains	XXX Bolton	In post in 12/56|
	XXX Leigh	Ditto|

727 This was Colonel Ewer's nephew and a young man out of military employment in 4/56 as a result of the disbandment: Thurloe, *State Papers* v, p. 49. He is clearly the Captain Eudes named in Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 133.
728 The sole reference to Lieutenant Colonel Jones is in ibid, p. 133. He cannot have been the actual lieutenant colonel of the regiment as Finch held that post from 1653 to 1659. All that I can suggest is that he was the Major Oliver Jones, formerly of John Moore's regiment, promoted to lieutenant colonel when John Blagrave, Moore's lieutenant colonel, became colonel. When the regiment was disbanded in 1651 or thereabouts what was left of it could have been added to the 4th regiment of foot with Jones as its captain. He was certainly in the army in 1654 as he signed the 54 letter, but his rank is not given.
729 For the three companies disbanded in 1655 see Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 133. Before going to Ireland Michael Mould had been captain lieutenant to Colonel Mason in Major General Thomas Mitton's brigade in North Wales. A Mark Mould was lieutenant in the 18th regiment of foot in late 59: TNA, E 121/5/5/41B, entry 1; F. and D.
730 TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 61.

7th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	Succeeded by Henry Cromwell as col. c. 55|
Lt. Col.	Alexander Brayfield??	If lt. col. in post by 12/54[731]|
Major	Samuel Shepherd John Read	In post in 10/53. Gone by 5/54[732]| In post in 5/54. Formerly major in Huncks's regt.[733]|
Captains	Thomas Dancer	Signed the 54 letter|
	Thomas Segrave[734]	Co. disbanded 55|
	XXX Pelham	Ditto. Possibly a transfer from Ireton's regt. F.|
	William Heydon	Signed the 54 letter|
	Thomas Betts	
	XXX Walters	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

731 F. and D.; Larcom, *Cromwellian Survey*, p. 30.
732 There is a very strong suggestion that Shepherd's company was disbanded in 1653 or thereabouts in Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 147.
733 Thurloe, *State Papers* ii, p. 295. For Read's position in Hunck's regiment see above p. 183.
734 For the disbandment of Segrave's and Pelham's companies see: Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 134.

12th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Hewson	
Lt. Col.	William Arnop	Signed the 54 letter|
Major	Henry Jones	Ditto|
Captains	**Samuel Grime**[735]	
	Nicholas Henchman[736]	In post in 10/53| Co. disbanded 55|
	Edward Turner[737]	Ditto| Ditto|

	XXX Cantrell	In post in 10/53|
	Edward Hoare	
	John Jeacock/Jaycock	
	Thomas Shepherd	Signed the 54 letter|
	Edward? Carter	In post in 3/55[738]|
	William? Sandys	Signed the 54 letter|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

735 See above pp. 180, 201.
736 For the companies disbanded in 1655 see Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 134.
737 Turner's company was disbanded in 1655: ibid. He was subsequently commissioned to command Captain Brett's company, which may have been in Sadleir's regiment: Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 51; CSPI 1647-1660, pp. 717-18.
738 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 1-8/3/55. A Captain Carter (foot) appears in a warrant dated 8/52 but his may have been an unregimented company: TNA, SP 28/87, fo. 275. Edward Carter signed the 54 letter.

13th Regiment[739]		

739 The regiment was combined with Sadleir's after Cooke's death in 1652. See above p. 181 for an argument that the formation thus created should be regarded as one of the regiments of the New Model Army brigade which accompanied Cromwell to Ireland in 1649.

Infantry: Regiments Raised for Service in Ireland in 1649 and Shipped to Ireland during that Year

Regiment[740]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Robert Phayre	Co. disbanded 55|
Lt. Col.	Francis Wheeler	
Major	John Denison	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	Alexander Barrington	
	Michael Gale	
	Samuel Jervis	Ditto|
	Thomas Coakley	In post in 4/54. Lt. to Major Nelson in the regt. in 5/49[741]|
	John Wakeham	If John, he was ens. in the col's co. in 49[742]|
	Phillip? Carteret[743]	Signed the 54 letter| Co. disbanded in 1655|
	XXX Radford[744]	
Colonel	Robert Saunders	
Capt. Lt.	**James Knight**	

740 The company commanders in 1654 were Wheeler, Denison, Coakley, Barrington, Jervis, Gale and Wakeham: Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 229.
741 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 16-23/4/54; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, forces for Ireland, unfol.
742 Ibid.
743 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 131.
744 Ibid, p. 229. This is probably a misreading of Ruddock. Colonel Robert Saunders, whose regiment had been disbanded in 1653, also appears to have commanded a company in the regiment: ibid; F. and D.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Peter Stubber[745]	
Lt. Col.	Humphrey Hurd	Signed the 54 letter|
Major	Thomas Davies[7456]	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	Thomas Burrell	Co. disbanded 55|
	XXX Helsham	Ditto|

	XXX Lynocks[747]	Ditto|
	XXX Garrett	Ditto|
	XXX Matthews	Ditto. If John, he signed the 54 letter and was in garr. at Limerick in 2/54[748]|
	XXX Richards	Co disbanded 55|
	John Pennyfather	Signed the 54 letter. Co. disbanded 55[749]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Disbanded in 1655

745 At the time the regiment was disbanded almost all the captains appear to have been newcomers, but this may be an illusion. There are few records of the regiment in pay warrants issued later than the end of 1651.

746 In 10/53 Davies was repairing a castle in County Galway: TNA, SP 28/95, fo. 86. He was mentioned in passing by Ludlow in 12/54: *Memoirs* i, p. 407

747 This was almost certainly the Benjamin Lucas, who was a captain in the regiment in 2/54 and stationed at Limerick: Thurloe, *State Papers* ii, p. 119.

748 Ibid.

749 Pennyfather was commissioned as a captain of foot to serve in Ireland before 3/50, but the first connection I have found with Stubber's regiment is the record of his company's disbandment five years later: CSPD 1650, p. 65; Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 132.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	
Lt. Col.	Henry Flower	
Major	Brian Smith	
Captains	John Barrett	Signed the 54 letter|
	XXX Morris	If William, he signed the 54 letter. In the regt. in 55[750]|
	John Galland	Signed the 54 letter|
	William Shaw	Ditto|
	George? Owen	In post in 9/56[751]|
	Robert Stearne	In post in 59 but possibly not in continuous service[752]|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

750 ibid, p. 135.

751 Thurloe, *State Papers* v, p. 423.

752 Stearne's name occurs post 1653 in BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 13 and in 1659 in CSPI 1647-60, p. 656.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Venables	Signed the 54 letter. Commander of the Caribbean expedition in 54 but retained his regt. until disgraced for leaving Jamaica. Succeeded by Col. Thomas Cooper in 12/55[753]|
Lt. Col.	Phillip Pinchion John Duckenfield	Co. disbanded 55|
Major	John Duckenfield William Lord Caulfield	Lt. Col. in the regt. before 10/56[754]| Apparently major in or before 10/56[755]|
Captains	XXX Done	In post in or before 10/56|
	John Stevens	
	Thomas Gill	
	William Lowe	Signed the 54 letter. Major by 58|
	William Duckenfield	Signed the 54 letter| Transferred to 12th regt. F. in England after 10/56[756]|
	XXX Bromwell	Co. disbanded in 55|

	Samuel Bonnell	In post in 3/55 and in or before 10/56[757]|
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Chetham**	
Possibles and Replacements Captains	John Reading	In post in or before 10/56. Subject to an accusation in late 57[758]|
	William Williams	In post in or before 10/56|
	Solomon Faith	Ditto|

753 Thurloe, *State Papers* iv, p. 343. Cooper commanded the 23rd regiment of foot, which was quartered in Scotland from 1651-1660. He did not give up his Scottish command until 1659. For this see p. 109.
754 BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 50. Seven officers were grouped with him in the document, but they would not necessarily have been in post as the matter in question was one of pay arrears.
755 Ibid. Lord Caulfield's position in the list indicates very strongly that he was or had been major in the regiment. Unlike the lieutenant colonel and the captains his rank was not given.
756 In a document dated 1/54 William Duckenfield was described as major, but it was concerned with the apportionment of land, not matters directly affecting the army: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 398. The rank was the one he had previously held in Colonel Robert Duckenfield's regiment in England. For this see p. 257.
757 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 1-8/3/55.
758 Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, p. 585. The implication is that he had been in command for some time.

Infantry: Regiments already in Ireland in January 1649

13th? Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Thomas Sadleir	
Lt. Colonel	John Puckle	
Major	Samuel? Brereton	Co. disbanded in 55[759]|
Captains	XXX Thomas[760]	Ditto|
	Henry Nicholas	Ditto[761]|
	XXX Combie[762]	If Solomon, signed the 54 letter|
	William Walker	Signed the 54 letter. Major by c. 6/56[763]|
	Alexander Staples	Signed the 54 letter|
	Felix Long	In post from 10/58-61[764]|
	XXX Brett	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

759 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 135.
760 He was possibly Daniel Thomas senior, late of the 3rd regiment of foot in the New Model Army, who was raising a company in 4/50: CSPD 1650, p. 575. Thomas was certainly in Ireland in 1657 supervising the construction of a citadel: Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, pp. 330-1.
761 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 134.
762 Captain Solomon Camby is named in 9/56: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 622.
763 BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 34. I suspect that Walker was already major by 3/54 as his name appears in the 54 letter amongst the field officers.
764 HMC, Marquis of Ormond Manuscripts ns iii, p. 427.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote	Signed the 54 letter|
Lt. Col.	Francis Gore	Signed the 54 letter. Prob. in post in 10/56[765]|
Major	William Moore[766]	Ditto|
Captains	Charles Gore	Ditto|
	Robert Blakeney	Ditto|
	George St. George	Ditto|
	Henry Webb	Ditto|

Regiment	Name	Military career
	William St. George	Ditto|
	Richard St. George	Ditto|
	XXX Collis	Formerly capt. lt.| Co. disbanded in 55[767]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

765 For the field officers and six of the captains recorded in 12/56, see BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 50. As they were required to draw lots, it is likely that they were still in post. For this see below p. 238.
766 Moore, who had served under Sir Charles Coote, was colonel of a regiment sent from the north of Ireland to Jamaica in 10/56: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus 9-16/10/59.
767 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 131.

Infantry: Regiments Raised in England during 1650

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Daniel Axtell	Signed the 54 letter|
Lt. Col.	Alexander Brayfield Richard Stevens	Prob. transferred to the 7th regt. F. before 3/54| Held the rank of major in 10/50. In this regt. after 1/54. Lt. Col. by 3/54 and its disbandment in 55[768]|
Major	Thomas Rawlins[769]	
Captains	Jacob? Cornock	Co. disbanded in 1655[770]|
	XXX Gardiner	Ditto|
	Thomas Cheshire	Signed the 54 letter|
	Martin Jubbs	In the regt. in 55[771]|
	Benjamin Woodward[772]	Signed the 54 letter but possibly in Sadleir's regt. Co. disbanded in 55|
	XXX Speening	Co. disbanded in 55[773]|
	XXX Newman	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captain	XXX Murphy	

Disbanded in 1655
768 CSPD 1650, p. 479; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, pp. 395, 397; Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 137; CSPD 1655, p. 232; Ludlow, *Memoirs* i, p. 407.
769 Rawlins's name and rank are given in a document dating from 12/53 but not his regiment: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 395. However, he was major in Axtell's regiment when it was disbanded in 1655 together with Lieutenant Colonel Stevens and Captains Jubbs, Newman, Speening and Woodward: BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 49. He may have signed the 54 letter, but the initial letter of the officer's first name in the signature was J not T. This could, however, be a printer's error.
770 A Captain Jacob Cornock's name appears in a document dated 12/53 together with those of Lieutenant Colonel Stevens and Major Rawlins: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 395.
771 Jubbs was adjutant general of foot by 1/53: Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 319. He was nevertheless still commanding a company in Axtell's regiment in 3/54: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus, 1-8/3/54.
772 Woodward had been a captain under Inchiquin but had gone over to Cromwell by 8/49: CJ vi, p. 280.
773 BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 49.

Infantry: Unit Transferred to Ireland after June 1650

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel[774]	John Clarke	Regt. disbanded 55. Col. of a new regt. in late 55[775]|
Lt. Colonel	Philip Ebzery	55A|
Major	Richard Aske	55A. Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	Lewis Northcott	55A. Signed the 54 letter| Served in Col. Clarke's new regt.|
	Robert Smith	55A|
	John Filkins	Gone by 12/54[776]|
	Thomas Tandy	55A, 55B|
	Edward Allen	55B|
	John? Hardier	55A, 55B. Ens. in the regt. c. 48|
	Edward Perratt	55B|
	W. Robinson	55B|
	XXX Goodwin	55A|
	XXX Talbot	Co. disbanded 8/55[777]|
	XXX Disney	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Disbanded in 1655

774 Two incomplete lists of this regiment exist for 1655/56. 55B relates to companies that were disbanded in 1655. 55A may relate to the new regiment Clarke acquired after the disbandment. 55A is in BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 49, 55B in Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 226. Because of the uncertainty over the dates, I have included names from both lists in the table.

775 Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 715.

776 See above p. 217.

777 See Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement*, p. 132 for Captains Talbot and Disney.

Dragoons

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Daniel Abbott	Signed the 54 letter|
Major	John Disbrowe	Ditto|
Captains	Henry Crewkerne	Ditto|
	Thomas Barrington	Former capt. lt. 13th regt. F. Apparently in this regt. in 55[778]| Transferred to Fleetwood's regt. F.|
	Harold Scrimgeour	
	Henry Pakenham	Signed the 54 letter. Troop disbanded in 8/55[779]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

778 BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 36.

779 One troop in Abbot's regiment was disbanded in 1655, and it was almost certainly Pakenham's. Prendergast had Pakenham as serving in Ingoldsby's regiment, but this cannot be so as all four of Ingoldsby's captains' names are known: Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 710; Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* pp. 131,132.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Ingoldsby	Signed the 54 letter| Troop disbanded in 1655[780]|
Major	Nicholas Moore	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	James Napper	Signed the 54 letter| Troop disbanded in 1655|
	John Campbell	Troop disbanded 55|
	Thomas Wrenn	Ditto|

	Francis? Gibbons	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Disbanded in 1655

780 Five troops were disbanded in 8/55. Moore's was apparently retained: Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 710; Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 132.

Cavalry: New Model Army Regiments

2nd Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Jerome Zanchy	Signed the 54 letter|
Major	Elias Green	
Captains	John Godfrey	Signed the 54 letter|
	James Whitelock[781]	
	Giles Gregory[782]	Signed the 54 letter|
	George Ingoldsby[783]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possible Captain	Thomas Aske[784]	

781 TNA, S 28/87, fo. 206.
782 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 464.
783 See above p. 220 and below p. 244.
784 Aske was cornet in the regiment in 1648 when Elias Green was a lieutenant: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 139. He was a captain of horse in the brigade sent to England in 1659, but he could well have been in another regiment by that date. For this see Appendix Five.

11th Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	
Major	Anthony Morgan	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	Daniel Lisle	
	Richard Franklin	Signed the 54 letter. Capt. in the regt. 4/56[785]|
	Benjamin Perry	
	Samuel Porter	D. by 9/57. Succeeded by Wingfield Claypole[786]|
	William Shaw	He or the capt. in Fleetwood's regt. F. signed the 54 letter. Prob. succeeded Capt. Thornhill|
Capt. Lt.	William Southwell	Signed the 54 Letter|

785 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth ii,* p. 597.
786 In 9/57 his executors were trying to obtain his pay arrears for which he had failed to apply in the allotted time period: CSPI 1647-60, p. 655. For Claypole see ibid 1660-2, p. 653.

The Lifeguard[787]		
Captain	William Allen[788]	Adjutant General|
Capt. Lt.	John Mansergh	

787 It has been suggested that the Lifeguard was disbanded during 1654: F. and D., p. 52. However, it was still on the army payroll at the end of 1657: TNA, SP 28/115, fos. 55, 236.
788 Allen was hostile to government by one person as represented by the Protectorate and was suspected in 1655 of plotting against Oliver Cromwell, but he was not dismissed from the army: Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 139.

Cavalry: Units Raised for Service in Ireland in 1649

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell	
Major	Daniel Redman	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	Robert Preston	Ditto|
	Edward Warren	Ditto|
	Abel Warren	Ditto|
	John Frank	
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Mosse[789]	Signed the 54 letter|

789 BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Politicus 16-23/4/54.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Pretty	Signed the 54 letter|
Major	Francis Bolton	Ditto|
Captains	Henry Alland	Signed the 54 letter| Troop disbanded in 55|
	William Bolton	Signed the 54 letter| Gone by 10/58[790]|
	Sampson Twogood	Ditto|
	John Salt	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	William Hulet[791]	

790 In 10/58 Bolton was a captain of foot: HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, p. 436.
791 T. Howell ed., *A Complete Collection of State Trials* (34 vols. 1818-28) v, pp. 1188-9.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Cromwell	
Major	Peter Wallis	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	Joseph Deane	Signed the 54 letter. Major 59|
	Francis Barrington	Troop disbanded 55[792]|
	Robert Stannard	Signed the 54 letter|
	John Friend	Stationed at Limerick in 2/54[793]|
Capt. Lt.	Samuel Sheares?	Signed the 54 letter. Capt. in regt. in 59[794]|

792 Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, p. 710.
793 Ibid, ii, p. 118.
794 Sheares was described as belonging to Henry Cromwell's troop in 8/57: BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 73.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Reynolds	
Major	Henry Owen	Signed the 54 letter|
Captains	Theophilus Sandford	Ditto|
	Richard McLaughlin	Ditto|
	James Jennings	
	John Eyres	Prob. in post in 1/54. Major in the regt. in 58[795]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

795 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 395.

Cavalry: Regiments Already in Ireland

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote[796]	
Major	Robert Ormsby[797]	Signed the 54 letter. Troop disbanded 8/55|
Captains	Oliver St. George	Signed the 54 letter. Troop disbanded 8/55|
	Colonel Chidley Coote	
	Colonel Richard Coote	
	Major King	Troop disbanded 55|
Capt. Lt.	**Emmanuel Palmer**	In post in 11/53[798]|

796 Five troops belonging to Coote's regiment were disbanded in 8/55: Thurloe, *State Papers* iii, p. 710. Their commanders are named in Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 133.
797 John and Charles Ormsby, Lord Caulfield and Lewis Jones are identified by F. and D. as being in post at the disbandment in 1655, but as with other regiments with final lists which derive from the Carte Manuscript 59 the date of the list is almost certainly 1653. For this and the officers in place in 1655 see above p. 226. All that is certain is that five troops were ordered to be disbanded and that Sir Charles was still in command of his own troop in 1/57: Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, p. 710; TNA, SP 28/112, fo. 45.
798 TNA, SP 28/97, fo. 49.

Cavalry: Regiment Raised in 1651

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edmund Ludlow	Troop disbanded 8/55[799]|
Major	Sir Theophilus Jones	Signed the 54 letter. Troop not disbanded[800]|
Captains	William Ivory	Signed the 54 letter| Troop disbanded in 8/55|
	Richard Nunn	Ditto| Ditto|
	Wingfield? Claypole	Troop disbanded in 8/55|
	Major William Meredith	Troop not disbanded|
Capt. Lt.	**John Eyre**[801]	
Possible Lt. Col.	Thomas Scott	Troop possibly disbanded in 55[802]|

Disbanded in part in 1655
799 Prendergast, *Cromwellian Settlement,* p. 131; Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, p. 710. The four troops disbanded were the colonel's and those of Captains Ivory, Nunn and Claypole.
800 It was unregimented in 1658: TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 250.
801 Eyre may have been a full captain by 12/54: Ludlow, *Memoirs* i, pp. 407, 416.
802 F. and D.

Company and Troop Commanders October 1655 to June 1659

The number of documents in the National Archives appertaining to the army in Ireland in the first half of the sixteen-fifties falls to almost nothing after 1655. There is a slight improvement after the fall of the Protectorate, but most of the information for 1659 concerns payments to the brigade shipped from Ireland to England the composition of which is discussed in Appendix V. A fortunate survival is the beginnings of an army list to be found in TNA, SP 18/118, fo. 117 compiled in the autumn of 1658 between the deaths of Lord Protector Oliver and Colonel Thomas Pride. The other three principal sources, however, though fuller, are to a greater or lesser extent problematic.

First there is a volume in the British Library covering the period June 1656 to late 1658, which is the minute book of the committee concerned with settling disputes over the allotment of confiscated Irish land in lieu of pay arrears. It includes quite a number of regimental lists, but these are deceptive. What they are clearly not are depictions of the troop and company commanders on the date the entry was made as some of the lists relate to regiments disbanded in 1655. However, when the decision of the committee was to require the officers to draw lots for a piece of land, they must have been in Ireland at the time and probably in the regiment if it still existed.

The second is a large number of entries in the manuscripts of the Marquis of Ormond calendared by the Historical Manuscripts Commission, which most surprisingly record back pay for officers and men for a period covering the last year and a half of the Commonwealth and the first year of so of the restored monarchy. After considerable toing and froing I came to the conclusion that this was a true record of moneys owed for service in the army, not a legal fiction by which loyal supporters of the Stuarts were compensated for their sufferings and losses. The variations in the starting and end date of the periods for which the officers were to be paid, and what is known about those in post in October 1658, brought me in the end to that conclusion. The disappointment is that the warrants rarely give the names of the regiments. However, when officers' regiments are known from other sources, I have assumed that they were in service in October 1658. Such officers are identified in the listing with the symbol *.

The third source is Larcom's *The History of the Cromwellian Survey of Ireland* (1851), which contains numerous officers' signatures appended to petitions concerning the allocation of confiscated land. However, these have has been of little help in filling gaps in the listings for the late sixteen-fifties. Mere names convey no information about rank, regiment or length of army service.

Finally, there is the so-called census of Ireland of 1659. This is a poll tax of landowners and as such includes the names of many officers both in post and retired from the army, but internal evidence shows that the final version dates from May 1660 at the earliest as the names of officers deprived of their lands in that month for signing the late king's death such as Sir Hardress Waller do not appear in the census. Its only value to *Reconstructing the New Model Army* is that it shows which officers were alive in 1660. As a result it only appears once in the footnotes.

Infantry

3rd Regiment 9 companies[803]	Name	Military career
Colonel[804]	Sir Hardress Waller	
Lt. Col.	John Nelson	In post in 10/58.[805] Formerly lt. col. in Col Reeve's regt.|
Major	**Richard Hodden** Ralph Wilson *	Prob. still major in 2/56[806]| Major in 10/58, 6/59[807]|
Captains	Ralph Wilson	
	William Skinner[808]	
	Robert Smith *	In post in 1/59[809]. Originally in the 3rd regt. F. in John Clarke's brigade and then in Clarke's regt.|
	William Wade[810] *	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles and Replacements[811]		
Captains	Arthur Ormsby *	
	XXX Purefoy	
	Thomas Lucas *	
Lt. Col.	Phillip Ebzery	Ex Col. John Clarke's regt. F. 52-5|
Captains	Maurice Fenton *	Ex Broghill's regt. H.|
	Benjamin Lucas *	
	Humphrey Hartwell	Lt. to Major Richard Hodden[812]|

803 The number of companies and troops in most of the regiments in the Irish establishment in 1658 (but not the names of their commanders) are given in TNA, SP 28/115, fos. 30-46; ibid, SP 28/116 fos. 244-296, 484.
804 For the senior officers cashiered or reduced in rank in the remodelling of 8/59 see CSPI 1647-60, p. 692.
805 TNA, SP 18/183, fo. 117. A list of the regiment in CSPI for late 1659 gives Nelson as having replaced Wilson as lieutenant colonel. This can only have been the case if Nelson had been cashiered between 10/58 and 7/59.
806 In 1656 Hodden was governor of Kinsale. He may no longer have been major of Waller's regiment: Thurloe, *State Papers* iv, p. 510; BL, Lansdowne Ms 822, fo. 93.
807 TNA, SP 18/183, fo. 117; CSPD 1659-60, p. 12. Wilson was reduced to captain in August> He was active in securing Cork in 12/59 and was promoted to colonel during 1660: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1013 (16).
808 Skinner was garrison commander at Dungannon in late 1659: Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 189. Like Hodden he may no longer have been a company commander in the regiment.
809 TNA, SP 28/117, fo. 147.
810 Wade or his namesake, Cornet Wade of the 3rd regiment of horse, signed the address from the army to the new Lord Protector Richard Cromwell in 9/58. At least four other officers were signatories as representatives of the army in Ireland: Bodleian Library, Rawlinson Ms A61, piece 187.
811 These seven officers were captains in the remodelled regiment of the autumn of 1659: CSPI 1647-60, p. 700. Arthur Ormsby, William Wade, Benjamin and Thomas Lucas and Maurice Fenton were paid arrears from 9/58 onwards, but they were not necessarily in the 3rd regiment of foot in late 1659: HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, pp. 416, 427-32.
812 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 114.

4th Regiment[813] 11 companies	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Lawrence	
Lt. Col.	Simon Finch *	In post in 12/56 and 10/58[814]|
Major	Richard Tonson	Ditto|
Captains	John Bennett	In post in 12/56| Major 12th regt. F. 7/59|
	James Hutchinson *	In post in 12/56|

	John Ewer sen.[815] *	Ditto|
	Samuel Wade[816] *	Ditto|
	XXX Stratton	Ditto and in 6/59|
	James? Leigh	In post in 12/56[817]|
	William Bolton *	In post in 12/56|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	**John Taylor**	

813 The nine company commanders were listed as such in 12/56: BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 56. Enough is known about the regiment's history for me to be convinced that none were men claiming arrears who had left it before 1656.
814 TNA, SP 18/183, fo. 117.
815 For this officer being John Ewer senior rather than John Ewer junior see p. 229.
816 Wade's late company is mentioned in HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii. This is best read as a company under Wade's command in 1658 which had subsequently been disbanded. Otherwise the new captain's name would have been given.
817 A James Leigh signed a petition of army officers in c. 6/57: Larcom, *Cromwellian Survey,* p. 130.

7th Regiment 10 companies	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Henry Cromwell	Removed from command in 5/59. Succeeded by Edmund Ludlow|
Lt. Col.	Alexander Brayfield?? John Gorges[818]	Cashiered in 10/57[819]| Col. F. 7/59| Replaced by Col. Solomon Richards as lt. col. in 7/59|
Major	John Read	In post in 10/58| Removed from command in 7/59[820]|
Captains	Thomas Dancer *	
	William Heydon	
	James Hand *	In the regt. before 5/59[821]|
	Mark/Michael Mould	Ditto|
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

818 For Gorges and Read, see F. and D.; TNA, SP 18/183, fo. 117; CSPD 1659-60, p. 12. Gorges' name is not given in the 10/58 list. Instead there is a blank. He was almost certainly the Captain John Gorges who had served in the New Model Army in 1645 in the 3rd regiment of foot: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 44. He was a full colonel in early 1660: www. William Petty, *Census of Ireland 1659.*
819 F. and D.
820 TNA, SP 18/183, fo. 117; CSPI 1647-60, p. 692; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 774 (6).
821 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 291. James Hand signed a petition from the army officers in c. 7/57: Larcom, *Cromwellian Survey,* p. 265.

12th Regiment[822]	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Hewson	
Lt. Col.	**William Arnop**	
Major	Henry Jones	Removed in 57| Restored 7/59[823]|
Captains	Edward Hoare	
	John Jeacock *	
	XXX Sanders	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	

Capt. Lt.	XXX	

822 This is one of only two regiments for which the number of companies is not given in the Commonwealth Exchequer Papers. My suspicion is that it remained six companies strong, the other four having been shipped to England where they formed the core of Hewson's new regiment stationed there.
823 Thurloe, *State Papers* vi, p. 152; CSPI 1647-60, p. 692. Jones had not apparently been replaced by 10/58 as there is a gap in list of field officers of that date: TNA, SP28/118, fo. 117.

13th? Regiment 10 companies	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Thomas Sadleir	
Lt. Col.	**John Puckle** John Brett *	In post early 56[824]| In post in 10/58|. Formerly lt. col. of Richards's regt. Removed from command in 7/59[825]|
Major	William Walker *	Major 56. Lt. Col. in this regt.in 10/58, 7/59| Replaced by Lt. Col. Isaac Dobson in 7/59, but then promoted to lt. col.[826]|
Captains	XXX Brett	Prob. promoted to lt. col. to Walker's annoyance. Succeeded by Capt. Edward Turner[827]|
	Solomon Camby *	
	Felix Long *	
	Benjamin Woodward *	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	
Possibles Captains	XXX Dancer[828]	
	XXX Moore	
	XXX Briggs	
	XXX Clarke	

824 BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 34. By late 1659 he was governor of Ross and not in the regiment: BL, Thomason Tracts E 774 (10).
825 TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 40; CSPI 1647-60, p. 692; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1013 (16); ibid, Thomason Tracts, E 774 (6).
826 Ibid. Walker may be the Lieutenant Colonel Walker referred to in Edmund Ludlow's correspondence concerning Ireland in 2/60: BL, Thomason Tracts E 774 (10). Dobson appears to have risen to the rank of lieutenant colonel in the First Civil War, possibly in Cromwell's regiment of foot, but had then fallen foul of his colonel. In 1649 he was lieutenant of a troop of horse operating out of Carlisle. A year later he was in Colonel Moore's regiment in Ireland, and when this was disbanded he commanded an independent company which garrisoned Wicklow. Ludlow raised him from obscurity in 1659 but he failed to rise to the occasion: Spring, *Eastern Association*, p. 27; F.. and D.; TNA, SP 28/69 fo. 38; ibid, SP 28/88, fo. 346; Ludlow. *Memoirs ii*, p. 151; HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, p. 426.
827 Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 344. See above p. 230 for Edward Turner.
828 These four captains' names appear in a list of the regiment dated 9/56: BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 34. However, some may have left the regiment before that date as Lieutenant Colonel Overstreet's name also appears in the list.

Regiment 10 companies	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Robert Phayre	Co. disbanded 55|
Lt. Col.	Francis Wheeler	In post in 10/58 and 10/59|
Major	John Denison	
Captains	Alexander Barrington *	
	Michael Gale	
	Samuel Jervis	Possibly still in the regt. in 3/56[829]|
	Thomas Coakley	

	John Wakeham *	
	XXX Radford *?	If Ruddock, in post in 10/58|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

829 CSPI 1647-60, p. 692.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	Succeeded by Col. Daniel Axtell 7/59|
Lt. Col.	Henry Flower	In post in 10/58| Removed from command in 7/59. Full col. by 2/60[830]|
Major	Brian Smith	In post in 10/58. Lt. Col. in the regt. 7/59|
Captains	John Barrett	Major in Axtell's regt. F. 7/59|
	John Galland	
	William Shaw	
	Robert Stearne *	
	George Owen	In post in 9/56| Gone by 10/59. Prob. promoted. Succeeded as capt. by Thomas Wright[831]|
	Thomas Barrington? *	In post in 59.[832] Ex Capt. in Col. Abbott's regt. Drs.|
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

830 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1013 (16). Presumably reinstated in 12/50. Removed from the army in 2/60 for supporting Sir Hardress Waller's attempted coup in defence of the Commonwealth: HMC, Leybourne-Popham Mss, p. 153.
831 Thurloe, *State Papers* v, p. 423; TNA, SP 28/119*, fo. 147*.
832 CSPI 1647-60, p. 650.

Regiment **9 companies**	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	Thomas Cooper	Left. regt. in 7/59. Commissioned as col. of the 11th regt. H. in the army in Ireland| Succeeded by Alexander Brayfield, former lt. col. in Axtell's and possibly the 7th regt. F.[833]|
Lt. Col.	John Duckenfield	Gov. of Carrickfergus 6/57[834]|
Major	Lord Caulfield??	
	William Lowe John? Staples Thomas Rawlins?? [835]|	Cashiered as major in 5/58| Commissioned in 5/58. Ex capt. H.[836]|
Captains	Samuel Bonnell	Major in Col. Barrow's regt. 7/59[837]|
	John Reading[838] *	
	William Sanders	
	William Williams	In post at Carrickfergus in 6/57[839]|
	Solomon Faith	
	Thomas Gill[840]	
	Richard Downes	In post in early 57[841]|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

833 F. and D.
834 Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 290.
835 Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, pp. 109, 113 have Rawlins in this regiment, but it is almost certainly a mistake. The list of field officers compiled in 10/58 places him in Clarke's regiment.
836 Thurloe, *State Papers* vii, pp. 142-3.
837 CSPI 1647-60, p. 692.
838 See p. 232 below.

839 Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 290.
840 Gill was mentioned together with Captain William Lowe in a document dated early 1659, but he may no longer have been in the regiment: CSPI 1643-60 Adventurers, p. 398.
841 Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 234. I have placed Downes tentatively in Cooper's regiment as it formed the garrison of Carrickfergus and he was deputy governor: ibid, p. 290.

Regiment 9 Companies	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote[842]	
Lt. Col.	Francis Gore *	In post in 10/58|
Major	William Moore *	Col. of a new regt. destined for Jamaica 56. Returned to the regt. in 58[843]|
Captains	Charles Gore *	
	George St. George *	
	Robert Blakeney *	
	Henry Webb *	
	William St. George *	
	Richard St. George *	
Lt. Col.	John Honor	In post in 7/57[844]|
Capt. Lt.	Thomas Newborough[845] *	

842 The fact that all the company commanders apart from Lieutenant Colonel Honor are named in BL, Additional Ms 35102, fo. 51 under the date of 11/56 suggests very strongly that on this occasion the list is contemporary and does not contain names of officers who had left before that date.
843 Moore quarrelled with his superior officer in Jamaica but was allowed to return to England in 6/58 without being court-martialled. He left Jamaica in August and arrived in November. There was a gap at the rank of major in Coote's regiment in 10/58, and Moore appears to have filled it soon after his return. Sometime afterwards he replaced Francis Gore as lieutenant colonel: F. and D.; TNA, SP 18/183, fo. 117; HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, pp. 413, 433.
844 TNA, SP 28/114, fo. 352.
845 HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, p. 435.

Regiment	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Henry Ingoldsby	Removed from command 7/59. Succeeded by Col. Robert Barrow|
Lt. Col.	William Purefoy	In post in 10/58. Confirmed in post in 10/59|
Major	Humphrey Hurd *	In post in 10/58. There is a blank in the 7/59 list|
Captains	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
	XXX	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

Regiment[846] 6 companies	**Name**	**Military career**
Colonel	John Clarke	
Lt. Col.	John Cole	In post in 7/59. Presumably the former col.[847]|

Major	XXX Allen Thomas Rawlins	In post in 8/57[848]| In post in 10/58| Transferred to General Ludlow's regt. F. 7/59. Drowned in 8/59[849]|
Captains	Lewis Northcott	D. late 57[850]|
	Lt. Col. John Brett	Formerly lt. col. Richards's regt. F. In post in 3/57[851]| Lt. Col. in Sadlier's regt. by 10/58[852]|
	Thomas Tandy *	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

846 Very little is known about this regiment, but it did exist. In 7/59, William Arnop or Solomon Richards was suggested as lieutenant colonel to replace John Cole. George Owen or Thomas Rawlins was to be major: CSPD 1659-60, p. 13.
847 Clarke implies that he was in post throughout the regiment's existence: A. Clarke, *Prelude to Restoration in Ireland* (Cambridge 2006), p. 182. This may have been the case, but there is a blank in the list of field officers compiled in 10/58.
848 TNA, SP 28/114, fo. 344.
849 Ibid, SP 18/113, fo. 117; .CSPD 1659-60, p. 13; HMC, Portland Mss i, p. 685.
850 Northcott's will was proved in early 58 as captain in Clarke's regiment: PCC Wills Index 1657-60, p. 439.
851 TNA, SP 28/112, fo. 195.
852 Ibid, SP 18/183, fo. 117.

Dragoons

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Daniel Abbott	
Major	John Disbrowe	Confirmed as major in 7/59|
Captains[853]	Henry Pakenham	Former capt. in the regt.[854]|
	John Rose	Lt. in Okey's regt. Dr. NMA late 40s|
	John Coglin	
	John Powell	
Capt. Lt.	John Parker?	QM in the col's troop in Okey's regt. Dr. c. 48|

853 The four captains and the captain lieutenant were in the regiment under Abbott's successor Sir Oliver St. George. All five were paid arrears from 8/58 onwards: HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, p. 420.
854 Pakenham's troop had been disbanded in 1655. Presumably he took over the troop of one of the other captains when they left the regiment.

Cavalry

2nd Regiment 6 troops	Name	Military career
Colonel	Jerome Zanchy	
Major	Elias Green	Confirmed as major in 7/59|
Captains	John Godfrey	Transferred to what had been Reynolds's regt. H. in 7/59 as major[855]|
	Thomas Aske *	
	Giles Gregory	
	George Ingoldsby[856] *	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

855 CSPD 1659-60, p. 13.
856 Ingoldsby was granted arrears from 10/58. Evidence that he was in this regiment rather than any other can be found in TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 40.

11th Regiment 6 troops	Name	Military career
Colonel	Charles Fleetwood	Resigned from regt. in 7/59. Succeeded by Col. Cooper|
Major	Anthony Morgan	In post in 1/57[857]| Removed 7/59. Succeeded by Edward Warren, capt. in Richard Cromwell's regt. H. in Ireland|
Captains	Richard Franklin	Capt. H. going to Ireland 49. Capt. in the regt. 56. Prob. discharged 7/59| Given Capt. McLaughlin's troop in Reynolds's former regt. H. in 1/60[858]|
	Benjamin Perry *	
	Henry Whalley *	In post in 1/57[859]|
	Wingfield Claypole	In post in 6/58. Prob. formerly capt. in Ludlow's regt. H.|
Capt. Lt.	**William Southwell**	

857 Ibid, SP 28/112, fo. 341.
858 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 58.
859 TNA, SP 28/112, fo. 341. The captain's first name is supplied by HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, p. 416. For Whalley and Claypole in 6/58 see TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 272.

Regiment 6 troops	Name	Military career
Colonel	Oliver Cromwell Richard Cromwell	 Succeeded by General Ludlow 7/59|
Major	Daniel Redman Henry Owen	In post 6/58[860]| Col. Reynolds' regt. 58| In post in 10/58. Ex Reynolds's regt.|Removed in 7/59. Succeeded by Nicholas Kempson[861]|
Captains	**Robert Preston**	
	Edward Warren	In post in 10/57| Major of the 11th regt. H. in 59[862]|
	Abel Warren	In post in 1/57[863]|
	John Frank[863]	
Capt. Lt.	**Thomas Mosse**	

860 Ibid, SP 28/116, fo. 51.
861 For Kempson's earlier career in the New Model Army see Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 79.
862 TNA, SP 28/115, fo. 48.
863 Ibid, SP 28/112, fo. 57.
864 His troop was mentioned as being in England in in 5/56: Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 133. Presumably it came over with the 1654 expedition.

Regiment 6 troops	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Pretty	Confirmed in post in 7/59|
Major	Francis Bolton	Ditto| Drowned in 8/59[865]|
Captains	John Salt *	Removed in 7/59. Succeeded by Col. Disbrowe's son. Reinstated by General Monck in 1/60[866]|
	Sampson Twogood *	
	James Stopford	Capt. F. in Ireland in the early 1650s|
	XXX King	
	XXX Coote	
Capt. Lt.		

865 HMC, Portland Mss i, p. 685.
866 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 58.

Regiment 6 troops	Name	Military career
Colonel[867]	Henry Cromwell	Resigned 5/59. Succeeded by Major Wallis|
Major	Peter Wallis	In post in 10/58. Col. of the regt. 7/59|
Captains	Joseph Deane	Major of the regt. in 7/59|
	John Friend[868]	In post in 7/59|
	Major William Meredith *	Ditto|
	Richard? Whalley[869]	
	Edmund Temple	Commissioned in 1/58 or 1/59[870]. Presumably he succeeded Capt. Whalley|
Capt. Lt.	Samuel Sheares	Full capt. in 7/59|

867 The captains in post in 7/59 see CSPI 1647-60, p. 700.
868 Friend was in the army in 7/59, but may have been removed and then restored: ibid.
869 There is no doubt that a Captain Whalley was serving in Henry Cromwell's regiment in Ireland in 1658, and that he cannot have been Henry Whalley. It has been suggested that his first name was Richard, and that he was the son of Colonel Edmund Whalley of the 9th regiment of horse in the army in England: Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 200.
870 Ibid, p. 254.

Regiment 6 troops	Name	Military career
Colonel	John Reynolds Daniel Redman	Drowned at sea 12/57| Major Oliver Cromwell's regt. H. Col. of this regt. after 4/58[871]| Removed from command in 7/59|
Major	Henry Owen John Eyres	In post in 2/58| Transferred to Oliver Cromwell's regt. in 58[872]| Major of the regt.in 10/58. Removed in 7/59[873]|
Captains	Theophilus Sandford *	In post in 6/59[874]|
	Richard McLaughlin	In post in the Irish brigade in England 59| Cashiered by General Monck 1/60[875]|
	John Eyres	Promoted to major in the regt. Seemingly demoted to capt. in 7/59[876]|
Col.	XXX Jephson[877]	
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

871 TNA, SP 28/105, fos. 51, 53.
872 Ibid, SP 28/113, fo. 117:
873 Ibid, SP 18/183, fo. 117; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1013 (6).
874 TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 38.
875 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 58.
876 Three troops of what had been Reynolds's regiment, Major Owen's, Captain Hyes's (Eyres') and Colonel Jephson's, formed part of the brigade sent from Ireland to England in 1659: TNA, SP 28/118, fo. 297.
877 The identity of this officer is uncertain. Major General Jephson was dead by 2/59. Richard Norton asked Henry Cromwell to nominate Jephson's uncle John as captain of his company of foot, but there was no mention of his troop of horse: Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 445.

The Lifeguard	Name	Military Career
Captain	William Allen	Resigned in 11/56. Replaced by Sir Theophilus Jones[878]|
Capt. Lt.	John Mansergh	Ditto[879]|

878 F. and D. See below p. 237 for Jones's previous post.
879 TNA, SP 28/112, fo. 332.

Company and Troop Commanders July to December 1659

The army in Ireland was remodelled on three occasions between June 1659 and April 1660. First, the leading supporters of the Protectorate were cashiered and replaced it seems by men who had earlier been removed by Henry Cromwell. Some prominent officers and administrators declared their support for the Fourth Army Coup in October, but they were discharged two months later by a hastily put together coalition of Rump supporters headed by Sir Hardress Waller and moderates organised by Sir Charles Coote and Lord Broghill. Waller and his associates were removed in their turn when they protested against Coote's petition to Parliament in February 1660 asking it to admit MPs ejected by the army in 1648, which to them looked like the first step towards the restoration of the monarchy. Thus the changes in the army in Ireland ran roughly in parallel with those taking place in the army elsewhere, but what is lacking is the massive quantity of evidence to be found in the House of Commons Journals and the Clarke Manuscripts on the remodelling process in the army in England and Scotland. Admittedly changes to the colonels and the field officers made by Parliament after the fall of the Protectorate are recorded, but only in the case of two regiments does evidence survive of the new company and troop commanders. I have therefore decided in this listing to provide only the names of the colonels, lieutenant colonels and majors. Any information that survives concerning captains and captain lieutenants is included in the footnotes.

I decided not to extend the listing into the year 1660 because of the high level of uncertainty as to what was happening in the army in Ireland during the first nine months or so of the year. It is only during the winter of 1660/61 that the Carte Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library, Oxford and the calendars of the Marquis of Ormond's archives published by the Historical Manuscripts Commissions begin to provide the level of detail necessary for the regimental survey of the army in Ireland to recommence. For this see Appendix VI.

Infantry

3rd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Sir Hardress Waller[880]	Commission lapsed 5/59. Not re-issued before 10/59[881]
Lt. Col.	John Nelson[882]	
Major	Richard Aske	Major in late 59[883]

880 The names of the captains in c. 10/59 were Ormsby, Wade, Purefoy, Lucas, Lieutenant Colonel Ebzery and Maurice Fenton: CSPI 1647-1660, p. 700. Waller continued to serve as colonel of the regiment, but Parliament had yet to renew his commission and those of his field officers: Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 122; BL, Thomason Tracts E 774 (6), *p. 7*.

881 Waller was arrested in 2/60 for trying to oppose by force a petition for Parliament to readmit MPs expelled by the army in 12/48. He was later deprived of his lands and imprisoned for life for regicide: Clarke, *Prelude to Restoration*, pp. 155-63, 302n. This book is invaluable for information about the network of marriages binding together the more senior officers in the army in Ireland.

882 CSPD 1659-60, p. 12.

883 TNA, SP 28/119, fo. 133. The first suggestion had been Thomas Davies: CSPD 1659-60, p. 12.

4th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Richard Lawrence[884]	
Lt. Col.	Simon Finch	
Major	Richard Tonson	

884 The colonels and field officers whose commissions were issued by Parliament by 10/59 are named in Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, pp. 714-15.

7th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edmund Ludlow	Commander-in-Chief in Ireland 8/59|
Lt. Col.	Solomon Richards	Formerly col. F. regt. disbanded 53|
Major	Thomas Rawlins William Rawlins	Major Axtell's regt. F. disbanded 55| Drowned 8/59[885]| XXX Commissioned by 10/59[886]|

885 Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 113.
886 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 715.

12th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Markham	Former capt. H. NMA. and civil servant in Ireland[887]|
Lt. Col.	Henry Jones	Ex major in the regt. Displaced 57 but possibly not replaced[888]|
Major	John Bennett	Capt. 4th regt. F. in the army in Ireland[889]|

887 F. and D.
888 The list of field officers in 6/59 gives Bennett as succeeding Jones as major: ibid 1659-60, p. 12.
889 He was not formerly of Pretty's regiment as claimed by Clarke in *Prelude to Restoration,* p. 62.

13th? Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Thomas Sadleir William Walker[890]	Formerly col. F. in Ireland and Scotland. Col. H. 59|
Lt. Colonel	William Walker[891]	Capt. F. before 2/51.Major 56. Lt. Col. F. in this regt. in Ireland 10/59|
Major	Isaac Dobson	In post in 10/59|

890 He was a full colonel by 2/60: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1016 (7).
891 Walker apparently reverted to major with Brett coming in as lieutenant colonel: CSPD 1659-60, p. 13.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Robert Phayre	
Lt. Col.	Francis Wheeler	
Major	John Denison	

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Daniel Axtell	Formerly col. F. Ireland. Regt. disbanded 55|
Lt. Col.	Brian Smith	Formerly major in the 7th regt. F.|
Major	John Barrett	Ex capt. Fleetwood's regt. F.|

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Cooper Alexander Brayfield	Col. H. 10/59| Col. by 10/59|
Lt. Col.	William Keane	XXX Replaced John Duckenfield who became lt. col. of Hewson's regt. in England after 6/59[892]|
Major	William Lowe	Cashiered as major in the regt. 58. Reappointment recommended 6/59|

892 He was commissioned in 7/59: CJ vii, p. 716.

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Robert Barrow	Formerly col. F. Regt. disbanded 53|
Lt. Colonel	William Purefoy	
Major	Samuel Bonnell[893]	Capt. 12th regt. F. England 58|

893 He was recommended for the post in 7/59, but his commission had not been issued by 10/59: CSPD 1659-60, p. 13; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 715.

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Sir Charles Coote[894]	
Lt. Colonel	**Francis Gore**	
Major	**William Moore**	

894 Coote retained his command by default. His commission had yet to be approved by Parliament: Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 123. This explains why the list of colonels and field officers in 6/59 did not contain the names of his major and lieutenant colonel.

Regiment	Name	Military Career
Colonel	John Clarke?	See above p. 244.

Dragoons

1st Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Daniel Abbott	
Major	John Disbrowe	

Cavalry

2nd Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Jerome Zanchy	
Major	Elias Green	

11th Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Thomas Cooper	D. 12/59 in Ireland[895]|
Major	Edward Warren	Capt. Richard Cromwell's regt. H.|

895 Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 188.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Edmund Ludlow	
Major	Nicholas Kempson[896]	Ludlow's brother-in-law. Lt. Col. NMA 45. Col. F. for service in Ireland 47|

896 Kempson's name was suggested in 7/59. He was Ludlow's brother-in-law: F. and D.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	Henry Pretty	
Major	Francis Bolton	Drowned in 8/59|

Regiment[897]	Name	Military career
Colonel	Peter Wallis	Major Henry Cromwell's regt. H.|
Major	Joseph Deane	Capt. in ditto. Major 6/59, 10/59|

897 The captains commissioned in 7/59 were John Friend, William Meredith, Samuel Sheeres and Edmund Temple. Sheares had been captain lieutenant whereas Temple was brought over from England in 1658 by Henry Cromwell. The new captain lieutenant was William Rowles: CSPI 1647-1660, p. 700; Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 254.

Regiment	Name	Military career
Colonel	William Allen	Former Capt. Lifeguard resigned 56. Succeeded Col. Daniel Redman| Replaced by Redman 1/60[898]|
Major	John Godfrey	Capt. Redman's regt. H|

898 F. and D.

The Lifeguard		
Captain	Sir Theophilus Jones	In post in 7/59. Lifeguard disbanded 8/59[899]|

899 Clarke, *Prelude to Restoration,* pp. 67, 69.

Part V

Appendices

Appendix I
Colonel Robert Overton's Regiments

Overton first commanded a regiment of horse in the Northern Army. Some of its officers' names appear in the claims for arrears presented from 1650 onwards in connection with the sales of Crown lands (TNA, E 121). He then served as colonel of the 11th regiment of foot in the New Model Army from June 1647, and when appointed deputy governor of Hull in March 1648 he gained a second regiment which took part in the siege of Pontefract 1648-9. In May 1649 his New Model Army regiment was transferred to George Fenwick, the governor of Berwick.

In the Scottish campaign Overton first acted as an independent military adviser to Oliver Cromwell, and then as the commander of operations of major importance. However, he did not have a field army regiment and never seems to have been in direct command of any more than four companies. However, he received a commission as colonel of a regiment of ten companies of foot in the new peacetime army establishment passed by Parliament in early October 1651 created, it seems, out of companies stationed in Hull and possibly in other northern garrisons.

Officers in Overton's first New Model Army regiment are listed in Volume 1 of *Reconstructing the New Model Army* and those in his second in this volume under the 25th regiment of foot. Those serving in the Hull regiment in 1648/9 were as follows:

Colonel	Robert Overton	
Lt. Colonel	Timothy? Gale/Gate? XXX Thornton Robert Oram Edward Salmon[1]	
Major	John Cotterell[2] Timothy Scarth	
Captains	Timothy Scarth[3]	
	XXX Goffe[4]	
	XXX Gayte[5]	
	XXX Andrews[6]	
	William Fuggill[7]	
	Michael Richardson[8]	
	Jeremiah Smith[9]	
	XXX Northend[10]	
	Thomas Southern[11]	
	XXX Sotherton[12]	

1 Ibid, E 121/5/5/37, entry 3.
2 Cotterell commanded the garrison in Pontefract Castle when the royalists surprised it by a trick in 6/48: ibid, E 121/4/1/30, entries 455, 475.
3 Ibid, E 121/4/1/64, entry 4.
4 Ibid, E121/1/4/41, unnumbered.
5 Ibid, E121/4/1/35, entry 10, 14.
6 Ibid, E 121/4/1/34, entry 2.
7 He served in the regiment but not necessarily as captain: ibid, E 121/4/1/30, entry 523.
8 Ibid, E 121/4/1/30, entry 126.
9 Ibid, E 121/4/1/37, entry 17.
10 Ibid, E 121/4/1/37, entry 18.

11 Ibid, E 121/2/7/113A, entry 9. By 1650 he had been lieutenant to Major William Goodrich (foot) and captain in the regiments of Sir William Fairfax and Colonels Maleverer and Overton: ibid; E 121/5/5/37, entry 2.
12 Ibid, E 121/5/5/16, entry 21.

Appendix II
Colonel John Okey's Regiment

The history of the ten troops in Okey's regiment between the summer of 1649 and the summer of 1650 is a complex one, but it can be uncovered using the Commonwealth Exchequer Papers.

Five were required for service in Ireland, but it appears that only three went. Daniel Abbott took his own to form the nucleus of a regiment of dragoons, but Francis Bolton, who became his major, did not. The other two troops known to have gone there were commanded by Francis Barrington and Richard Nicholetts. They joined Henry Cromwell's new regiment, but as cavalry not dragoons.[1] Nicholetts had been captain lieutenant to Okey, but he almost certainly took over somebody else's troop, probably Henry Fulcher's which had been one of the five originally named.[2]

Seven troops therefore remained in England from the autumn of 1649 until early June 1650[3] at which time several new troops of dragoons were being raised. The army regarded these as additions to Okey's regiment, Parliament as independent troops.[4] Thus in the record of commissions kept by Fairfax's military secretary William Clarke their officers are described as being in Okey's regiment whilst their pay warrants make no mention of their being thus regimented. In the event Parliament won after Fairfax had resigned as army commander in late June as the pay warrants continue to describe them as discrete units. Most were demobilised in the autumn of 1651 including Mercer's, but a few like that commanded by Colonel John Humphreys were joined together to form a new regiment of dragoons under Colonel Thomas Morgan, military governor of Gloucester from 1645 to early 1648 and a future major general.

At about the same time a new independent troop was created by removing Captain Mercer's troop from Okey's regiment, thus reducing the number from seven to six.[5] To complicate matters still further the troops commanded by the colonel and the major were re-armed as cavalry.[6] All of this is made clear by a pay warrant issued in early 6/50.[7]

The final stage in the transformation of Okey's regiment came in 10/50 when the remaining four troops of dragoons were converted into cavalry.[8] In later listings it will be described as the 17th regiment of horse.

1 CSPD 1649-50, pp. 406-7.
2 In 8/49 Fulcher took responsibility for funds to pay Abbott's regiment in 8/49, but his name does not occur amongst the captains of the regiment named in subsequent pay warrants: TNA, SP 28/62, fos. 115, 421, 432, 737; ibid, SP 28/63, fo. 506.
3 The number is confirmed by a document dated early June: ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 216.
4 See, for example, ibid, SP 28/66, fo. 15 for their pay warrants, and Worc. College, Clarke Ms 67, fos. 26-7 for their commissions.
5 The number of troops in the army on 25/6/50, only just over a fortnight later, was six: TNA, SP 28/67, fo. 629. Mercer's troops' role in the campaign that ended with the battle of Worcester in 9/51 is well documented. See, for example, CSPD 1650-1, pp. 75-6, 120, 193, 236; Cary, *Memorials* ii, p. 354.
6 TNA, SP 28/64, fo. 493; ibid, SP 28/67, fo. 30, 629; Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 20-23/5/50; BL, Thomason Tracts, E 615 (7).
7 This described Okey's regiment as consisting of Okey and Bridges' troops of horse and Neale's, Freeman's, Castle's and Daberon's troops of dragoons: TNA, SP 28/69, fo. 7.
8 In 12/50 a pay warrant for Neale's troop describes it as belonging to Okey's regiment of horse 'newly established': ibid, SP 28/73, fo. 38,

Appendix III
Regiments raised for the Scottish Campaign disbanded in 1651-2

This section does not include regiments like those commanded by Colonels James Heane, Robert Bennett, Robert Gibbon, and Valentine Wharton based in south central England, the far south west, Kent and Sussex, and East Anglia respectively, or Colonel John Jones's based in South Wales. Some provided soldiers for the Scottish campaign but they were local defence forces first and foremost. I have included Robert Duckenfield's regiment based in Cheshire and Shropshire because five of its companies were seconded to Ireland in late 1651.

Infantry

Rank	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Edmund Syler[13]	
Lt. Col.	XXX Rugeley[14] Henry Lillingston	 Col. in Flanders 57-61|
Major	XXX Lillingston[15]	
Captains	XXX Cresset[16]	
	Edward Horne[17]	
	XXX Moore[18]	
	XXX Fulthrop[19]	
	XXX Horsington[20]	
	XXX Bramston/Balston[21]	
	XXX Cordwainer[22]	
Capt. Lt.	Richard Thompson[23]	
Additions Captain	 Guy Disney[24]	

13 For Syler's extensive military service in Lincolnshire from 1643 onwards, see TNA, E 121/1/2/40B, entry 1.
14 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 178; ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 421.
15 Chequers Ms 782, fos. 16, 27.
16 TNA, SP 28/94, fo. 154.
17 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 626; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 16.
18 TNA, SP 28/82, fo. 175.
19 Ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 274.
20 Ibid, SP 28/59, fo. 529.
21 Ibid, SP 28/86, fo. 75.
22 Ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 159; ibid, SP 28/99, fo. 503.
23 Ibid, SP 28/97, fo. 421.
24 Disney was killed in Scotland during the 1650-51 campaign: CJ vii, p. 38.

Rank	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Roger West	
Lt. Col.	Roger Sawrey[25]	
Major	XXX Crimes/Cruett[26]	
Captains	XXX White[27]	
	XXX Marsden[28]	

	XXX Hesketh[29]	
	XXX Douglas[30]	
	XXX Freckleton[321]	
Capt. Lt.		

25 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 19.
26 Ibid, fos. 15, 17
27 Ibid, SP 28/90, fo 125.
28 Ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 56.
29 Ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 581.
30 Ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 333. Douglas served on courts martial at Dundee on 9/12/51 and 20/12/51: Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol.
31 TNA, SP 28/86, fo. 66.

Rank	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Robert Duckenfield[32]	
Lt. Col.	Simon Finch	
Major	William Duckenfield	
Captains	XXX Gimbell	
	XXX Watson[33]	
	James Stopford	
	Edward? Birtle	
	Lt. Co. Gilbert Gerard[34]	
	Phillip Eyton??[35]	
Capt. Lt.	Francis Duckenfield??[36]	
Replacement Captain	XXX Smith[37]	

32 Seven companies were to be disbanded in late 1651: CJ vii, p. 31. These were first used to reconquer the Isle of Man with the intention that they should then go on to Ireland. In the end five went there ostensibly to complete Sir Hardress Waller's regiment. See above p. 199.
33 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 7/5/50.
34 Lieutenant Colonel by virtue of his rank in Sir William Brereton's brigade in the First Civil War, Gerard was merely captain of a company in Duckenfield's regiment in 1651: Dore, Brereton's Letter Books i, pp. 326, 331; TNA, SP 28/85, fo. 650.
35 The close association between Eyton and Duckenfield's regiment is apparent from CSPD 1651-2, pp. 39, 70, 185, 320, 330.
36 Francis Duckenfield was commissioned on 4/6/50 but not necessarily in this regiment: ibid, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. Possibly he was Colonel Daniel's missing captain lieutenant in the 18th regiment of foot which was being raised at the time. He had previously served as lieutenant commanding Colonel Duckenfield's troop in Cheshire: TNA, E 121/5/6/49D, entry 3; ibid, SP 28/46, fo. 334; BL, Thomason Tracts, Perfect Passages, 7-14/11/51.
37 He served under Duckenfield in the Isle of Man: CRO, Quarter Sessions Files, Epiphany 1658, fo. 125.

Cavalry and Dragoons

Rank	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Lionel Lytcott[38]	
Major	Thomas Scott[39]	
Captains (H)	John Bernard[40]	
	Robert Wakefield[41]	Prob. succeeded by Capt. John Hawkridge[42]|
	Edward Finnis	At first in 20th regiment of foot, he transferred to Lytcott's regiment. D in Scotland before 11/51[43]|
	William Rhodes	In post in 5/51[44]. Later capt. in Gravenor's regt.[45]|
	XXX Crackenthorpe[46]	
Captain (Dr)	Major Thomas Rippon[47]	
Capt. Lt.	Richard Marsh John Rugeley	In post in 7/50[48]| Ditto in 10/51[49]|
Additional Captains	 XXX Starkey[50] Lawrence Hyde[51]	

38 Lytcott's regiment was described as horse and dragoons in TNA, SP 28/103, fo. 403.
39 Ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 71; Chequers Ms 782, fo, 16.
40 TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 12; ibid, SP 28/81, fo. 236; ibid, SP 28/83, fos. 51-4; ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 826. A Captain Bernard (horse) also appears in 6/7/51 in Chequers Ms 782, fos. 15-16. Bernard was in post when the regiment was disbanded in 12/51: TNA, SP 28/82, fos. 489-92.
41 For Wakefield's first name, see ibid, SP 28/102, fo. 328.
42 Hawkridge was a troop commander when the regiment was disbanded in 11/51: ibid, SP 28/84, fo. 278.
43 Ibid, SP 28/98, fos 69-70. Finnis was possibly succeeded by a Captain Starkey who commanded a troop in the regiment in Scotland: ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 529.
44 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 11. Rhodes was in post when the regiment was disbanded: TNA, SP 28/82, fo. 493.
45 See below on this page.
46 Ibid, SP 28/94, fo. 168; ibid, SP 28/96, fo. 576.
47 His troop served in the regiment in the Scottish campaign: ibid, SP 28/103, fo. 369.
48 Ibid, SP 28/69, fo. 21.
49 Ibid, SP 28/83, fo. 54; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 27.
50 TNA, SP 28/101, fo. 28.
51 He was probably in post when the regiment was first raised. For this, see above p. 207.

Rank	Name	Military Career
Colonel	Edward Gravenor[52]	Quartermaster General of the Army[53]|
Major	Edward Robinson	In post in 1/51 and 9/52[54]|
Captains	Robert Kirkby	Capt. 11th regt. H. 47-9. In post in 6/52 and 9/52[55]|
	Henry Champion	In post in 6/52 and 9/52[56]|
	Phillip Morris William Rhodes	In post in 9/51|Gone by 1/52[57]| In post in 6/52 and 9/52[58]|
	Henry Ogle Elias Whalley	Succeeded by Capt. Elias Whalley[59]| Cor. to Capt. Covell in 1st regt. H. In post in 9/51, 6/52 and 9/52. Succeeded Capt. Ogle[60]|
Capt. Lt.	Maurice Kingswell	In post in 12/51[61], 6/52 and 9/52|
Additional[62] Captains	 XXX Billett	
	XXX Ashenhurst	

52 For the troop commanders in post when the regiment was disbanded in 9/52, see ibid, SP 28/87, fos. 353-6.
53 CSPD 1650, p. 203.
54 Chequers Ms 782, fos. 14, 18; TNA, SP 28/87, fos 355. Robinson's first name is given in ibid, SP 28/78, fo. 62.
55 Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, p. 109. See TNA, SP 28/86, fo. 257 for the troop commanders in post in 6/52.
56 Ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 50.
57 Chequers Ms 782, fo. 26; TNA, SP 28/83, fo. 57.

58 Ibid, SP 28/87, fo. 353.
59 Ibid, SP 28/103, fo. 322; ibid, SP 28/105, fo. 422.
60 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 69, unfol. 25/4/50; Chequers Ms 782, fo. 26; TNA, SP 28/80, fo. 587; ibid, SP 28/108, fo. 707. For Whalley's later career in the army see above pp. 114, 131.
61 Worc. College, Clarke Ms 21, unfol. 19/12/51.
62 Soldiers claimed to have fought under Billett and Ashenhurst in Gravenor's regiment in Scotland: TNA, SP 28/108, fo. 115; ibid, SP 28/101, fo. 160.

Rank	**Name**	**Military Career**
Colonel	Matthew Alured[63]	In post in 12/51|
Major	Matthew Beckwith	Ditto|
Captains	John Bethell	10/51[64], 12/51|
	Hugh Saville	1/51,[65] 12/51|
	William? Carter	In post in 12/51|
	James Thompson[66]	Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	Edward Howard	Ditto|
Capt. Dr.	XXX Wright	Gone by 10/51[67]|
Additional Captains	Leonard Smelt	In post before 10/51[68]|
	Peregrine Lascells[69]	

63 For all the officers in post at the regiment's disbandment in 12/51, see ibid, SP 28/82, fos. 485-7.
64 Ibid, SP 28/98, fo. 73.
65 Ibid, SP 28/74, fo. 44.
66 Ibid, SP 28/82, fo. 170.
67 Ibid, SP 28/95, fo. 252.
68 Ibid, SP 28/100, fo. 587; ibid, SP 96, fo. 344.
69 Ibid, SP 28/98, fo. 65.

Appendix IV
The Irish brigade in England and Scotland in 1654-5

The brigade comprised 25 companies of foot and four or so troops of horse. They were drawn from at least nine regiments as follows and were under the overall command of Colonel Sadleir.

England

7th regiment	3 companies	XXX, XXX, XXX
12th regiment	4 companies	Hewson, Arnop, Carter (later Horsington?), Turner
General Fleetwood's	2 companies	Flower, Owen
General Venables	4 companies	William Duckenfield, Bonnell, XXX, XXX
Col. Sadleir	4 companies	Sadleir, XXX, XXX, XXX
Col. Axtell	4 companies	Jubbs, Gardiner, XXX, XXX
Col. Clarke	4 companies	Hardier, Smith, XXX, XXX

Scotland

Lieutenant Colonel	Simon Finch	F. Lawrence's regt.
Major	Daniel Redman[70]	H. Oliver Cromwell's regt.
Captains	Daniel Lisle	H. Fleetwood's regt.
	John Frank[71]	H. Oliver Cromwell's regt,

70 For Redman and Lisle, see CSPD 1653-4, pp. 166, 355, 440.
71 Four troops were sent: CSPI 1647-1660, p. 517. Frank's troop was in England by 5/56: Gaunt, Henry Cromwell's Correspondence, p. 133.

Appendix V
The Irish Brigade in England 1659-60

The bolded names are those which do not appear in the list in the Calendar of State Papers Ireland dating from August 1659. Most were commissioned by General Monck in early 1660 to replace officers who had expressed support for the Fourth Army Coup.

Rank	Name	Regiment
Colonel	Jerome Zanchy **Daniel Redman**	H. Commander of the brigade[72]| H. Reinstated c. 1/60[73]|
Lt. Col.	**William Walker**[74]	F. Sadleir's regt.|
	John Brett	F. 3/60. Prob. joined late 59|
Majors	Francis Bolton[75]	H. Pretty's regt.|
	John Godfrey	H. Allen's regt.|
	Thomas Rawlins	F. Ludlow's regt.|
	Samuel Bonnell	F. Barrow's regt.|
Captains of Horse	John Stroud	
	Richard (Mc)Laughlin	Redman's regt.| Replaced by Capt. Richard Franklin 1/60|
	Thomas Aske[76]	Zanchy's regt.|
	Valentine Disbrowe	? Pretty's regt. Removed 1/60|
	Thomas Walcot	Removed 1/60|
	William Meredith (major)	Wallis's regiment|
	William Bolton	3/60
	George Twogood[77]	3/60
	John Salt	Reinstated in 1/60|
	Richard Franklin	In post in 1/60|
Captains of Foot	John Jeacock[78]	Hewson?
	Col. John Clarke	His own regt.|
	Benjamin Woodward[79]	Sadleir's regt.|
	Alexander Barrington	Phayre's regt.|
	Thomas Shepherd	Hewson's regt.?|
	Mark/Michael Mould	Edmund Ludlow's regt.|
	Richard Hannay	
	John Bridges	Independent company|
	XXX Radford	Phayre's regt.|
	XXX Quelch	Hewson's regt.|
	Thomas Bentley??[80]	
	Edward Hoyle[81]	**In post in 12/59**
	Thomas Tomlins	**Ditto**
	Samuel Wise[82]	
	XXX Jacomb[83]	

72 The brigade consisted of eight troops of horse and eleven companies of foot: CSPI 1647-60, p. 686. They were described somewhat inaccurately as Colonel Axtell and Colonel Zanchy's regiments: Baker, Chronicle, p. 674.

73 BL, Thomason Tracts, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 27/2-5/3/60. See Worc. College, Clarke Ms 52, fo. 58 for the changes in the officers made by Monck in 1/60.
74 For Walker and the first three majors see Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 109.
75 Both Bolton and Rawlins were lost at sea travelling from Ireland to England with the brigade: HMC, Portland Mss i, p. 685.
76 There was a Cornet Thomas Aske in Captain Elias Green's troop in the 2nd regiment of horse in the late 1640s: Wanklyn, *Reconstructing the New Model Army* i, pp. 105, 139.
77 Twogood was cornet to Colonel Pretty's troop in 6/51: TNA, SP 28/78, fo. 162.
78 CSPD 1659-60, p. 590.
79 Woodward was seemingly major by 3/60 when he prevented Captain Walters from persuading the Irish brigade to oppose elections for a new Parliament: BL, Parliamentary Intelligencer, 5-12/3/60.
80 Bentley appears on a list of nine officers dating from 2/60, the remaining eight being captains or above: BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus, 27/2-5/3/60.
81 Hoyle and Tomlins were officers in the Irish brigade in 12/59: ibid, 29/12/59- 6/1/60. They, like Richard Hannay and John Bridges, were paid as captains from 8/58 onwards: HMC, Ormond Mss ns iii, pp. 422, 424, 427-8.
82 Ibid, Portland Mss i, p. 692.
83 Ludlow, *Memoirs* ii, p. 111.

Appendix VI
The Army in Ireland in 1660-63

Although it is impossible to construct a listing of the troop and company commanders in the army in Ireland before the summer of 1661, quite a lot of information survives concerning the changes that had occurred in the eighteen months since the overthrow of the government in Dublin Castle in December 1659. There was, of course, a major change in senior personnel. Many of the colonels and field officers put in place by General Ludlow were displaced immediately afterwards. A second coup in February 1660 removed Sir Hardress Waller and probably Major Elias Green, whilst keen republicans in the Irish brigade in England would have lost their positions in General Monck's remodellings of January to March 1660. That left one colonel, three lieutenant colonels and two majors who had been in post in the autumn of 1659. As in England and Scotland the new field officers came from captains in the regiment or from officers removed in the purge following the resignation of Henry Cromwell, but in the case of the colonels Sir Charles Coote took the opportunity to put his sons and brothers back into regimental commands which they had lost when their previous units were disbanded in 1653. Other former colonels and field officers reappeared like Henry Slade and Henry Smithwick, but they had to be content with more lowly positions as company commanders. As for the captains quite a number of names are familiar from the days of Henry Cromwell, but it cannot yet be ascertained whether they had remained in post throughout 1659, or been removed and then restored.

By December 1660 the army had been reduced from ten to six regiments of foot and from six to five regiments of horse, at which point the king issued commissions to almost all the troop and company commanders who were thought worthy of holding such positions in the reformed army. Of the colonels only three had impeccable Royalist credentials, the Marquis of Ormond, his son Lord Ossory, and Sir Robert Byron, five had seen service during the republic, whilst one, Viscount Massereene, was in arms in the sixteen-forties but had refused to serve the Commonwealth. Barrymore could be counted as a Royalist, but he had spent the sixteen-fifties quietly in England whilst apparently ingratiating himself with the leadership of the Protectorate through his uncle Lord Broghill.

Of the captains of foot in service in 1661 at least half had held commissions in the army of the Commonwealth. Of the captains of horse a smaller number were ex-Commonwealth men, but in both horse and foot at least thirty junior officers fell into that category. As in the army in England a few of these were former captains superseded as a result of commissions issued by the Crown who were happy to accept a drop in rank, and at least five were to all intents and purposes troop and company commanders as their captains were non-residents or high-ranking members of the Irish aristocracy. More ex-Commonwealth men, however, served as lieutenants, ensigns and cornets in units commanded by officers who had been in the army in Ireland in the sixteen-fifties.

Entries in the minute book kept on behalf of the Duke of Ormond as commander-in-chief create a picture of uncertainty with units frequently being described in early 1661 as being either under the command of their former officer or of an unnamed new officer, but things had settled down by the summer. From then onwards there are numerous lists in the Carte Manuscripts of company and troop commanders serving in the army in Ireland during the sixteen-sixties and seventies, most particularly in volume 54. However, they bear a striking similarity to one another. Admittedly Ormond carried out a mild purge in 1662 and again after an attempted coup by former commonwealth officers in the following year, but after that it was a matter of waiting for dead men's shoes. The prospect of promotion was therefore low, even lower than in the New Model Army in the sixteen-fifties. However, at least two officers, Robert Fitzgerald and Carey Dillon, who had been cashiered in early 1661, were commanding troops of horse by 1670.

A. Officers serving in the army in Ireland May 1660 to early 1661

Cavalry Officers

Rank in 1660-1	Name	Military career
Cols.	Lord Broghill	Col. H. army in Ireland to 1653| col. H. army in Ireland 1661|
	Sir Charles Coote	Col. F. ditto 1650-60| Ditto|
	Sir Theophilus Jones	Col. H. ditto to 1653. Major to 55. Capt. of the Lifeguard to 1659| Major H. ditto|
	Edward Warren	Capt. and major H. in the army in Ireland 50-61| Gone by 2/61|
	Henry Owen?	Major Reynold's regt, H. 58. Col. in Petty census early 1660| Not paid arrears from 10/58. Not recommissioned in 2/60. Prob. removed 6/60|
	Richard Coote	Col. F. ditto to1653| Major H. army in Ireland 1661|
Majors	Abel Warren	Capt. H. ditto 50-61. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Gone by 2/61|
	Nicholas Purden	Major H. ditto to 53| Capt. F. army in Ireland 1661|
	George Rawdon	Cavalry commander in Ulster to 51[1]| Capt. H. ditto|
	John Eyres	Major H. in the army in Ireland 1658. Removed 169. Restored 1660| Gone by 1/61.Succeeded by the marquis of Ormond|
	George Ingoldsby	Capt. H. ditto late 50s. Gone by 2/61| Capt. F. army in Ireland 1661|
	John/Joseph Stroud	Capt. H. Irish brigade 1659| Gone by 2/61.Succeeded by Lt. Col. Moses Hill, capt. lt. of the duke of Albemarle's troop|
	Daniel Redman	Col. H. army in Ireland 58. Removed 6/59. Restored 1660| Capt. H. army in Ireland, 1661
Capts.	Sampson Twogood	Capt. H. ditto from 50| Gone by 2/61. Succeeded by Lord Mount Alexander|
	George Twogood	Lt. to Capt. McLaughlin, Reynolds' regt. H. 1/52[2]. Possibly not capt. till 1/60| Gone by 2/61. Succeeded by the earl of Mountrath|
	Richard Kyrle	Capt. H. army in Ireland to 1653. Troop reduced into Orrery's regt.| Gone by 2/61. Capt. F. army on Ireland 1661|
	Maurice Fenton	Ditto to 1653, reappointed in late 59| Gone by 2/61.Troop reduced into Mountrath's regt. in 1661|
	Sir William Meredith	Ditto throughout the 50s| Capt. H. army in Ireland 1661|
	John Frank	Ditto from 1656 at the latest| Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Benjamin Perry	Ditto throughout the 1650s| Not recommissioned in 12/60. Gone by 2/61|
	Lord Caulfield	Ditto| Capt. H. army in Ireland 1661|
	John Salt	Ditto 1652-9. Removed 8/59 but reinstated by Monck 1/60| Gone by 2/61. Succeeded by Lord Drogheda|
	Adam Molyneux	Ditto to1653. Reappointed 1660| Lt. to Capt. Sir William Neave in the army in Ireland in 1663 and Provost Marshall in Leinster[3]|
	Thomas Hopkins	Capt. H. 12/59.[4] Not recommissioned in 12/60| Gone by 2/61. Succeeded by Major Rawdon|
	Henry Marten	Cor. Henry Ireton's troop 1651. Capt. in 1660| Troop reduced 61 into Sir Henry Tichbourne's troop. Lt. to Sir Theophilus Jones in the army in Ireland in 1663|

	Robert Fitzgerald	In command of a troop of H. at Dublin in 12/59. In post in 4/60[5]. Not re-commissioned in 12/60. Presumably his brother the earl of Kildare succeeded him|Restored as captain in the army by 1670[6]|
	Richard Franklin	In post in 56. Possibly removed in 8/59 but restored by Monck| Troop reduced into earl of Anglesey's troop in 1661|
	Francis Hamilton	XXX| Capt. H. in the army in Ireland 1661|
	Charles Wenham	XXX. Not recommissioned as capt. in 12/60| Lt. to Lord Mount Alexander in 1663|
	John Ponsonby	Col. H. in Ireland to 8/49. Capt. H. in that army to 55. Reappointed 1660. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Edmund Temple	Paid capt. H. 10/58-2/61 as Edmund Taylor. Not recommissioned 12/60[7]|
	William Warden	Major H. in the army in Ireland to 55. Succeeded by Major Redman| Capt. F. army in Ireland 1661|
	Thomas Harrison	XXX Not recommissioned in 12/60. In post to 1/61[8]|
	Thomas Aske	Capt. H.in the army in Ireland 55-60. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Gone by 2/61. Succeeded by the earl of Donegal|
	Carey Dillon	XXX In post in 1660. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Succeeded by the earl of Meath. Lt. to the earl of Orrery in 63. Capt. H. in 1670|
	John Thompson	Lt. 12/59.[9] Capt. H. early 60|[10] X in a duel in Dublin in 11/60|[11]

1 Clarke describes him as a prudent collaborator with the Protectorate regime thereafter: Prelude to Res*toration,* pp. 170-1.
2 TNA, SP 28/83, fo. 79.
3 HMC, Ormond Ms ns. iii, p. 406.
4 BL, Thomason Tracts, 669f22 (40).
5 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1016 (7); A Census of Ireland circa 1659, ed. S. Pender, Historical Manuscripts Commission of Ireland, entry for Drogheda garrison.
6 Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 589.
7 HMC, Ormond Ms ns iii, p. 418.
8 Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 158, fo. 9.
9 Clarke, *Prelude to the Restoration*, p. 109.
10 HMC, Ormond Ms ns iii, p. 419.
11 CSPI 1660-2, p. 358.

Dragoon Officers

Colonel	Sir Oliver St. George	Succeeded Daniel Abbott. Regt. disbanded in 1/61[12]| Major H. in the army in Ireland 1661|
Major	Nicholas Moore	Major Ingoldsby's regt. Dr. army in Ireland disbanded in 55[13]| Not in the army in 1661|
Capts.	Henry Pakenham	Capt. in the regt. in 8/58| Ditto|
	John Rose	Ditto| Ditto|
	John Coglin	Ditto|Ditto|
	John Powell	Ditto| Ditto|
Capt. Lt.	XXX	

12 HMC, Ormond Ms ns iii, p. 420.
13 He was allegedly in post from 1/58 to 1/61, but this can only have been so if he had been recommissioned after 1655 as a junior officer or as a company or troop commander in one of the other regiments in the Protectorate army.

Infantry Officers

Cols.	Henry Ingoldsby	Col. F. in the army in Ireland. Cashiered in 7/59. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Ralph Wilson	Capt. F. ditto| Capt. F. army in Ireland 1661|
	John Gorges	Lt. Col. F. ditto| Ditto|
	Thomas Scott	Officer in Ireland in the late 1650s. Col. 1660.[14] Not recommissioned in 12/60| Gone by 2/61. Succeeded by Sir Robert Byron|
	Humphrey Hurd	Lt. Col. F. in the army in Ireland to 55. Major F. to 7/59. Col. 1660| Gone by 2/61. Succeeded by William Warden|
	John Cole	Lt. Col. F. in the army in Ireland 8/59. Col. 1660| Capt. F. army in Ireland 1661|
	John Bridges	Military career in England to 56[15]. In post 5/60. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded as capt. F. by Randolph Clayton|
	Earl of Mountrath	Col. in the army in Ireland throughout the 50s| Capt. F. army in Ireland 1661|
	Chidley Coote	Col. H. ditto to 53. Capt. H. to 55. Reappointed 1660| Ditto|
Lt. Cols.	Benjamin Lucas	Capt. in the army in Ireland in the 50s. Promoted 1660. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	John Jeanor	Ditto| Succeeded by Sir Patrick Wemyss|
	Edward Allen	Ditto|
	Simon Finch	Lt. Col. in the army in Ireland 52-60. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Succeeded by the earl of Orrery|
	William Moore	Major F. in the army in Ireland in the 1650s. Possibly lt. col. 59| Capt. F. ditto 1661|
	Alexander Staples	Field officer army in Ireland late 50s. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by Sir Rober Stewart|
	Alexander Barrington	Capt. army in Ireland throughout the 1650s. Promoted 1660. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	William Candler	Capt. F. in the army in Ireland. Co disbanded 1655. Promoted 1660. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by Charles Wheeler|
Majors	Thomas Dancer	Field officer late 50s. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Succeeded by Richard Power|
	Thomas Coote	Col. F. to 1653. Recommissioned 1660| Capt. F. in the army in Ireland in 1661|
	Benjamin Woodward	Capt. F. army in Ireland late 1650s. Promoted 1660. Not recommissioned 12/60|Succeeded by Sir Robert Sterling|
	George Pepper	Ditto| Succeeded by Sir John Stevens|
	Solomon Camby	Ditto|
	William Bond[16]	Ditto|
	William Wade	Ditto| Succeeded by Richard Kyrle|
	John Folliott	Major army in Ireland. Co. Disbanded 53. Recommissioned 1660. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by Lord Folliott. Lt. to Capt. Peter Courthorpe in 1663|
Capts.	John Reading	Paid as capt. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60|

	Robert Cooke	Lt. to Capt Steane 1650. Council of War at Dublin 12/59[17]. In post 4/60| Not recommissioned in 12/60| Succeeded by Sir Thomas Wharton. Cooke was lt. to Wharton in 1663|
	Robert Meredith	XXX. In post in 1660| Succeeded by Sir Francis Butler|
	William Flower	Col. F. in Ireland. In 48 dismissed for supposed disloyalty to Parliament. In post 1660|Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	John Jordan	Officer in 54 and prob. capt. in Coote's command in 1/60[18]| Ditto|
	James Hand	Ditto| Ditto|
	William Jackson	Ditto| Ditto|
	George St. George	Capt. F. in the arny in Ireland in the 1650s.Not recommissioned as capt. F. in 12/60| James Cuffe, former capt. F. succeeded him. Capt. lt. H. in the army in 1661|
	Charles Gore	Capt. in the army in the 1650s to 2/61.Not recommissioned 12/60|
	Thomas Tomlins	Paid as capt. 8/58-2/61. Ditto|
	Charles Ellis	XXX Capt. 1660. Not recommissioned 12/60|
	John Jones	Ditto|
	Andrew Ruddock	Capt. F. in Ireland in the 50s. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by Sir William Penn|
	Thomas Tandy	Capt. in the army in Ireland from the early 1650s. Not recommissioned 12/60|
	Humphrey Hartwell	Capt. in the army from the mid 1650s. Ditto|
	Joseph Fox	Major F. in the army in Ireland. Disbanded 53. Reappointed 1650. Not recommissioned|
	William St. George	Capt. F. in the army in Ireland in the 1650s| Lt. F. in army in Ireland in 1662|
	Richard Hannay	Paid as capt. 8/58- 2/61|Capt. F. in the army in Ireland in 1661|
	Ralph Fenwick	Capt. in Ireland in 1/54[19]|.ot recommissioned in 12/60|
	Richard St. George	Capt. in the army in Ireland in the 1650s| Capt. F. ditto 1661|
	Felix Long	Ditto| Ditto|
	William King	Capt. at Cork in 1/60.[20] Succeeded by Seafowl Gibson by 3/61| Capt. F. in the army in Ireland 1661|
	Edward Knight	XXX. Paid as capt. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Thomas Cullen	Lt. to Major Nicholas Moore in Ingoldsby's Dr. 52. Regt. disbanded 55. Capt. in Munster in 1/60[21]| Succeeded by Robert Manley. Lt. F. in the army in Ireland 1661|
	Henry Gilbert	XXX Paid as capt. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by Thomas Pigott|
	John Webster	Paid as capt. 8/58-2/61. Officer and prob. capt. in Coote's command 1/60[22]. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Henry Smithwick	Paid as capt. 10/58-2/61. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by William Ross|
	Thomas Lucas	Ditto| Succeeded by Nicholas Purden|
	Humphrey Barrow	Major F. disbanded in 53. Capt. at Dublin in 2/60[23]. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Lt. to Sir Arthur Denny in the army in 1663|
	Edmund Hoyle	Paid as capt. 8/58-2/61| Not recommissioned in 12/60|

	William Hartwell	Ditto| Succeeded by Robert Deey|
	John Harrison	Ditto|
	Henry Slade	Ditto| Succeeded by John Hubblethorne|
	John Wakeham	Ditto| Succeeded by the Earl of Barrymore|
	John Tench	Ditto| Succeeded by St. John Broderick|
	Arthur Ormsby	Ditto| Gone by 2/61|
	Robert Oliver	Capt. H. disbanded 53. Reappointed 1660. Not recommissioned 12/60|Succeeded by John St. Leger. Oliver was lt. in army in 1663|
	John Jephson	Capt. army in Ireland c. 58| Capt. F. army in Ireland 1661|
	John Ewer	Paid as capt. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned 12/60|
	Henry Shrimpton	XXX Paid as capt. 10/58-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	John Bury	XXX[24]. In post in 1660| Succeeded by Sir John Ogle|
	Francis Gore	Capt. in the army in Ireland in the 1650s| Capt. F. ditto 1661|
	Henry Webb	Capt. mid 50s and paid as capt. F. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	James Synnott	Ditto|
	John Peacock[25]	Ditto|
	William Bolton	Capt. F. in the army in Ireland in the late 1650s. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Samuel Wade	Ditto|
	Charles Twigg	XXX. Paid as capt. F. 9/60-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Succeeded by Thomas Fortescue|
	Nicholas Barrington	XXX Paid as capt. F. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Tristram Beresford	Officer in the army in Ireland in early 50s. Paid as capt. 10/58-2/61. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by Thomas Stewart|
	James Cuffe	Capt. H. in the army in Ireland to 53| Capt. F. ditto 1661|
	William Hepburn	XXX[26]. Not recommissioned in 12/60|
	Francis King	Paid as capt. F. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60| Succeeded by Lord Robartes|
	Henry Baker	Ditto|Succeeded by Sir Edward Massey|
	Simon Rugeley	Ditto|
	Thomas Brereton	Ditto|
	James Mansergh	Ditto| Succeeded by James Mutlow|
	John Honor	Ditto| Succeeded by Robert Sandys|
	John Jeacock	Capt. F. in the army in Ireland by 1652. Not recommissioned 12/60| Succeeded by James Dennis|
	John Sandys[27]	In post in 1660| Succeeded by Daniel Treswell|
	Henry Legge	Paid as capt. F. 8/58-2/61. Not recommissioned in 12/60|

14 There were two Thomas Scott in the New Model Army. The former seems to have been a rabid republican whose commands were primarily if not exclusively in England. The other had begun to temporise by 12/59 according to Ludlow. Scott had served as a lieutenant colonel at some stage in the sixteen-fifties and as a troop commander in Ludlow's regiment: *Memoirs* ii, p. 200; Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, p. 398.

15 Bridges had been colonel of a regiment of foot in Warwickshire disbanded in 1646. He had not held a command in the New Model Army and may not have served in Ireland: Spring, *Waller's Army*, p. *32; Dunlop, Ireland under the Commonwealth,* p. 527n.

16 Bond as captain of one of the four companies garrisoning Dublin Castle in 12/59 was instrumental in allowing Sir Hardress Waller and his allies to carry out the first coup: XXX

17 BL, Thomason Tracts, 669f22 (40); Nickolls, *Original Letters*, p. 153.

18 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1013 (14).
19 Dunlop, *Ireland under the Commonwealth* ii, pp. 398-9.
20 BL, Thomason Tracts, 669f24 (26).
21 Ibid.
22 BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1013 (14).
23 Ibid, Thomason Tracts, E 1016 (7).
24 Nothing is known about this officer apart from a single claim for arrears.
25 Possibly a misreading of Jeacock.
26 Nothing is known of this officer apart from a single claim for arrears by one of his soldiers.
27 Nothing further is known of this officer.

B. Colonel and Field Officers Commissioned in December 1660

Rank	Name	Previous command
Colonels of Foot	Sir Robert Byron	Royalist Officer 1642-6|
	Earl of Ossory	Duke of Ormond's eldest son|
	Viscount Massereene	Formerly Sir John Clotworthy|
	Sir Chidley Coote	Col. H. army in Ireland to 53, Col. F. 60|
	Sir John Cole	Formerly Col. F. army in Ireland to 53, 60|
	Earl of Barrymore	Nephew and close associate of Lord Broghill[28]|
Lt. Cols.	Sir John Stevens	Byron's regt.|
	Thomas Coote	Ossory's regt. Col. H. 53. Major F. 60|
	John Gorges	Massereene's regt. Lt. Col. F. army in Ireland 58, Col. F. 60|
	Major Thomas Fortescue	Cole's regt. Royalist officer|
	Francis Gore	Lt, Col. Charles Coote's regt. F. army in Ireland 1650s|
	Nicholas Purden	Barrymore's regt. Major H. Broghill's regt. to 53|
Majors	Robert Jones	Ossory's regt. XXX|
Colonels of Horse	Duke of Albemarle	Formerly General Monck|
	Earl of Orrery	Former Lord Broghill|
	Duke of Ormond	Formerly the Marquis of Ormond|
	Earl of Mountrath	Former Sir Charles Coote, Col. F. 59, 60|
Majors of Horse	Richard Coote	Col. H. army in Ireland 60|
	Sir Theophilus Jones	Col. H. army in Ireland 60|
	Sir Oliver St. George	Mountrath's regt.|

28 Clarke, *Prelude to Restoration,* p. 212.

C. The Army in Ireland 1661 to 1663

Company Commander[29]	Previous post in the army	Succeeded	In post 8/61[30]	In post in 1663[31]
Earl of Orrery	Col. NMA Ireland|	Simon Finch	*	*
Earl of Mountrath	Ditto|	George Twogood	*	*
Chidley Coote	Ditto|		*	
Thomas Coote	Ditto|		*	*
Ralph Wilson	Col. NMA Ireland 60|		*	*
John Hubblethorne	Col. NMA in England|	Henry Slade	*	*
John Gorges	Col. NMA Ireland 60|		*	*
John Jephson	Officer NMA Ireland		*	*

Francis Gore	Ditto|		*	*
Lt. Col. John Read	Ditto|		*	Henry Howard
James Mutlow	Officer NMA England|	James Mansergh	*	*
Sir John Cole	Col. NMA Ireland|		*	*
John Brett	Officer NMA Ireland|		*	*
Francis Foulke	Ditto|		*	*
Lord Colooney (Richard Coote)	Col. NMA Ireland|		*	
James Dennis	Officer NMA England|	John Jeacock	*	*
Nicholas Purden[32]	Officer NMA Ireland|	Thomas Lucas	*	Jerome Manwood
George Ingoldsby	Ditto|		*	*
William King	Ditto|		*	*
Richard Goodwin	Ditto|		*	
William Moore	Ditto|		*	
Peter Courthorpe	Ditto|		*	*
Richard Kyrle	Ditto|	William Wade	*	*
Arthur Gore	Ditto|		*	*
Richard St. George	Ditto|		*	John Brompton
James Cuffe	Ditto|		*	*
Robert Hannay	Ditto|		*	
Charles Wheeler	Ditto|	William Candler	*	*
Sir John Ogle	Officer NMA England	John Bury	*	
William Warden	Officer NMA Ireland	Humphrey Hurd	*	William Cecil
St. John Broderick	Capt. H. NMA Ireland[33]	John Tench	*	*
Duke of Albemarle	Lord General NMA		*	*
Felix Long	Officer NMA Ireland	Ralph Fenwick	*	*
William Ross[34]		Henry Smithwick	*	*
Hans Hamilton	Capt. H. Ireland 1650		*	*
Lord Folliott		John Folliott	*	*
Charles Blount[35]	Officer Ireland late 40s		*	John Buller
Randolph Clayton		John Bridges	*	*
Duke of Ormond	Royalist C-in-C Ireland		*	*
Earl of Ossory			*	
Earl of Barrymore		John Wakeham	*	*
Lord Robartes	Col. F. England to 45	Francis King	*	
Lord Massereene	Col. F. Ireland to 48		*	*
John Mayart		Arthur Hill	*	*
Thomas Pigott		Henry Gilbert	*	*
Daniel Treswell		John Sandys	*	*
Richard Manley		Thomas Cullen	*	*
Thomas Stewart		Tristram Beresford	*	*
Thomas Fortescue	Officer Ireland late 40s	Charles Twigg	*	*

Sir John Stevens		George Pepper	*	
Nicholas Bayly			*	*
Richard Power		Thomas Dancer	*	*
Robert Sandys		John Honor	*	*
Sir William Penn	Commonwealth Admiral	Andrew Ruddock	*	*
Sir Edward Massey	Roy. by 1648	Henry Baker	*	*
Sir Robert Sterling	Officer Ireland late 40s	Benjamin Woodward	*	
Sir Patrick Wemyss	Officer Ireland 47	John Jeanor	*	
Sir Robert Byron	Roy. Col. England 40s	Col. Thomas Scott	*	*
Sir Robert Stewart		Alexander Staples	*	*
Sir Thomas Gifford[36]			*	
Sir Francis Butler	Roy. Major F. England	Robert Meredith	*	Sir John Butler
Charles Hamilton			*	*
Robert Deey	Mayor of Dublin	William Hartwell	*	*
Garett Moore			*	*
Seafowle Gibson		William King	*	*
Sir Thomas Wharton		Robert Cooke	*	*
John St. Leger		Robert Oliver	*	*
Sir Matthew Appleyard	Roy. Col. in England			*
Mainwaring Hamon				*
Sir Arthur Denny	Roy. Officer			*
Col. John Spencer				*
Edward Brabazon	Son of the earl of Meath			*

29 The first block of officers had served the republican governments between 1649 and 1660. The third block had not. The five officers in the second block were either accused of being opposed to the restoration of the monarchy or granted a royal pardon prior to taking up their commands: ibid, Carte Ms fo 54, fo. 454; CSPI 1660-5, April 1661.
30 HMC, Ormond Ms ns iii, p. 413; BL, Thomason Tracts, Mercurius Publicus,18-25/7/61; Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 59, fos.152-3.
31 Ibid, Carte Ms 59, fos. 161-3. The number of companies had been reduced from 66 to 60 between 1661 and 1663. In 4/62 there were 8,384 private soldiers in the army in Ireland which implies a total army strength of some 9000 men when the commissioned and non-commissioned officers are added: HMC, Ormond Ms ns iii, p. 16
32 Provost Marshall in Munster in 5/63: ibid, p. 406.
33 TNA, SP 28/83, fo. 239.
34 This company had been intended for Ethelbert Morgan, lieutenant colonel of Albemarle's regiment in England, which was due to be disbanded. When it was kept on the army establishment after its involvement in the suppression of Venner's uprising in London in early 1/61, Ross replaced Morgan: Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 147, fo. 7.
35 Blount was an officer in the army by mid-February 1660: BL, Thomason Tracts, E 1016 (7). He was commissioned as captain in 12/60, but was sacked by Ormond in 1662: Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 512.
36 Gifford was dead by 5/62: HMC, Ormond Ms ns iii, p. 19.

Troop commander	Previous Post	Succeeded	In post 1661[37]	In post in 1663
Duke of Albemarle		Joseph Stroud	*	* *
Lord Colooney	Major H. 1660 army		*	* *
Earl of Donegal		Thomas Aske	*	* *
Viscount Conway			*	* *
Marcus Trevor, Viscount Dungannon			*	* *
Vere Cromwell			*	* *
George Rawdon	Capt. H. 1660 army	Thomas Hopkins	*	* *

Earl of Mountrath[38]	Col. H. 1660 army	George Twogood	*	
Oliver St. George	Major H. Ditto		*	* *
John King, Lord Kingston	Major H. to 1653		*	* *
Sir Francis Hamilton	Capt. H. 1660 army		*	* *
Sir Arthur Forbes			*	* *
Lord Caulfield	Capt. H. 1660 army		*	* *
Lord Falkland[39]			*	
Earl of Orrery	Col. H. 1660 army		*	* *
Earl of Kildare			*	* *
Viscount Shannon			*	* *
Viscount Grandison			*	* *
Lord Aungier			*	* *
Sir Thomas Armstrong			*	* *
Daniel Redman	Capt. H, 1660 army	William Warden	*	* *
Duke of Ormond		John Eyres	*	* *
Sir Theophilus Jones	Major H. 1660 army		*	* *
Earl of Meath			*	* *
Earl of Drogheda		John Salt	*	* *
Earl of Anglesey			*	* *
Earl of Ossory			*	* *
Sir Henry Tichbourne			*	* *
Sir William Meredith	Major H. 1660 army		*	Lord Berkeley

37 Bodleian Library, Carte Ms 54, fo. 453. Only 29 of the 30 troop commanders were named. The earl of Mount Alexander was the missing officer. As Viscount Montgomery he had been commissioned by the king as captain of horse on 13/12/60. The commissions issued on that date are to be found in ibid, Carte Ms 41, fos. 236-92.

38 Mountrath died in late 1661 and was succeeded as colonel by the earl of Ossory.

39 Falkland died early in 1663.

Sir William Neave[40]				* *
Lord Mount Alexander		Sampson Twogood		* *
Lord Cullen				* *

40 Commissioned as a captain of foot on 13/12/60, Neave appears to have quickly transferred to the first captaincy of horse to become available.

Appendix VII

Company and Troop Commanders in Post Late October 1659 to Mid-February 1660

Foot

Regiment	Company Comms.[1]	Still in Post	Promoted	Restored	From a NMA regt.	Outside NMA	Insufficient Data/ Vacancy
1	10	3	6	0	1	0	0
5	10	4	3	0	2	0	1
6	10	2	2	1	1	0	4
8	10	5	2	0	0	1	2
9	10	6	3	0	1	0	0
10	10	5	1	0	1	0	3
11	10	5	3	0	0	0	2
12	10	4	3	0	0	1	2
14	10	6	2	0	1	0	1
15	10	5	3	0	0	1	1
16	10	3	4	0	1	0	2
17	10	5	2	0	2	0	1
18	10	3	5		1		1
19	10	6	3	0	0	0	1
20	10	4	2	0	4	0	0
21	10	1	4	2	1	0	1
22	10	4	0	0	3	2	1
23	10	1	3	0	0	0	6
24	10	3	3	1	2	0	1
25	10	5	1	1	0	1	5
26	10	6	0	0	1	0	3
Totals							
21	210	86	55	5	22	6	38

1 The figure includes the captain lieutenant of the colonel's company but not the colonel.

Horse

Regiment	Troop Comms.	In Post	Promoted	Restored	NMA regt.	Outside NMA	Insufficient Data
1	6	2	0	0	0	2 M[2]	2
3	6	2	1	1	2	0	1
4	6	2	1	1	1	0	1
5	6	2	2	0	1	0	1

6	6	2	2	0	0	2 M	0
7	6	3	3	0	0	0	0
8	6	2	3	0	1	0	0
9	6	1	1	0	2	1 M	1
12	6	2	0	1	1	1	1
13	6	3	1	1	0	0	1
14	6	2	0	1	1	1	1
15	6	4	1	0	0	0	1
16	6	2	1	0	1	0	2
17	6	5	0	0	0	0	1
Dragoons	4	3	0	0	0	0	1
Totals							
17	88	36	15	5	10	7 (M 5)	14

2 The letter M indicates that the officer or officers held a commission in a county militia regiment.

Grand Total	298	121	70	10	32[3]	13	52
	298	201			45		52

3 This figure includes quite a number of officers who received a promotion when they moved regiment.

Select Bibliography

The principal manuscript sources that have been used in compiling the listings are:

The National Archives E 121, SP 18, SP 28.
British Library, Additional Mss 21417, 35102.
Bodleian Library, Oxford, Rawlinson Mss A 27, A 61; Carte Mss 54, 59, 158.
Worcester College Library, Oxford, Clarke Mss 21, 52, 53, 55-58, 67, 69.
York Minster Library, Hailstone Ms BB 53.
William Clarke's notebook 1647-60, Chequers Court, Buckinghamshire, Ms. 782. I have not consulted the original, but there is an excellent facsimile in reel 17 of the Clarke's manuscripts, produced by Harvester Microfilms, which I consulted at Worcester College, Oxford.

The printed primary and secondary sources that have been used are clearly indicated in the footnotes with a full reference on the first occasion and an abbreviated form thereafter. See also the bibliography printed on pages 170-171 of Volume 1.

Index of Army Officers' Names

This index contains the names of the colonels and lesser officers who were troop and company commanders in New Model Army regiments the only exceptions being those whose regiments were stationed in Flanders or in Jamaica from the mid-sixteen fifties onwards. It does not include officers holding such positions in unregimented units, or who were first commissioned in the army in Ireland from December 1660 onwards. As in Volume 1, I have not indexed the names of officers who only served in the armies that preceded the New Model.

Abbott, Daniel 15,21, 189, 190, 202, 218, 221, 234, 242, 244, 249, 255, 265,
Acklam, XXX 15, 69
Aizey, Leonard, 164
Aldersey, Francis 58, 74, 90, 107, 122, 139
Alland/Owland?, Henry 192-3, 221, 236
Alland, XXX 76-7
Allen, Edward I (3 F., Clarke F.) 62, 217, 234, 266
Allen, Edward II (Russell F.) 185, 207
Allen, Francis 46, 63, 85, 102, 117-18, 122
Allen, William 194, 223, 235, 246, 250
Allen, XXX 213, 243
Alson, XXX 78, 92, 108
Alsop, Roger 47, 90
Alured, Christopher 145, 169
Alured, Matthew 23, 31, 76-7, 79, 83, 86, 91, 128, 132, 145, 151, 168, 259
Ambler, Thomas 121, 138, 158
Anderson, Robert 48, 66, 134, 153
Andrews, Nicholas 47, 49, 64, 86, 103, 118, 135
Andrews, Thomas 119, 136, 155
Andrews, XXX 49
Andrews, XXX 253
Anktill, Oliver? 209-10
Annersley, George 127, 143, 164
Annersley, John 195, 224
Anstle, XXX 211
Appleyard, Sir Matthew 154-5
Apsley, Alan 169
Arles, Edward 188, 211
Armorer, Nicholas 174
Armstrong, Sir Thomas 173
Arnop, William 88, 180, 201, 229, 240, 260
Arnold, William 189-90, 212
Arnott, Hercules 215
Arscott, Arthur 143, 164-5
Arundell, Francis 145, 166
Ashby, Richard 51, 67, 95, 112, 124, 129, 146
Ashenhurst, XXX 258
Ashfield, Richard 44, 60-1, 84, 101, 116
Ashurst, John 152
Ashton/Aston, Miles 190, 219
Aske, Richard 45, 61-2, 126-7, 217, 234
Aske, Thomas 235, 244, 247, 261-2, 265
Aston/Ashton, Miles 190
Aston, William 196, 226
Atherton, John 73
Atkins, Charles 154
Atkins, Jonathan 153-4
Atkinson, Thomas 180-1, 201
Atkinson, William 139, 160
Audley, Lewis 69, 180
Awder, XXX 57-8
Axtell, Daniel 22, 53, 180, 200, 201, 210, 212, 233, 242, 248, 262
Axtell, Samuel 181, 212
Axtell, Thomas 88-9, 105, 120, 137, 157
Aylett, Richard 183, 204
Aymes, John 195, 223
Ayres/Eyres, John 223

Babbington, Arthur 152-3
Babbington, Thomas 52, 68, 95, 112, 125, 147, 170
Backhouse, Peter 145, 168
Bacon, Christopher 148, 172
Bacon, Michael 120-1, 142
Badger, Nathaniel 73-4
Bailly, Rene 55, 71, 89, 106, 121, 138, 158
Baker, Henry 220, 227, 268
Baker, John 127, 143-4, 165
Baker/Barker, Richard 102-3, 117, 134, 152-3
Baldwin, George 101
Ball/Bull, Thomas 191, 220
Balston, David 166
Balston/Bramston 256
Bamford, Richard 48
Bannister, Peter 86, 103, 118, 134, 153-4
Barber, John 44
Bardesley, John 139, 160
Barham, Edward 164
Barker, Edward 58, 74
Barker, John I (7 H.) 32, 50, 67, 94, 128, 129, 147, 170
Barker, John II (17 H.) 175
Barker, John? 111
Barker/Baker, Richard 102-3, 117, 134, 152-3
Barkstead, John 45, 62, 85, 102, 107, 117
Barnard, Theophilus 146-7, 170
Barnardiston, Giles 146, 170
Barnell/Burnell, Richard 210
Baron, Hartgill 167
Barrett, John 184, 205, 231, 242, 248
Barrington, Alexander 182, 203, 230, 241, 261, 266
Barrington, Francis 193, 214, 222, 236, 255
Barrington, John 129
Barrington, Nicholas 268
Barrington, Thomas 181, 202, 234, 242
Barrington, William 50, 66, 94, 128
Barrow, Humphrey 185, 207, 267
Barrow, Robert 120, 184-5, 205-6, 211, 242, 243, 249
Barry, Samuel 133, 152
Barry, Stephen 133, 152
Barry, XXX 193
Barton, Henry 52, 56, 125
Barton, Nathaniel 56, 131, 147, 171
Baskett, Anthony 223
Bassett, Richard 168
Bassett, William 127, 164, 175
Bateman, George 75, 91, 107, 122, 139, 160
Bathoe, Edward 122, 139
Batterley, Samuel 127, 143, 165
Baxter, Thomas 135, 154-5
Baynes, Adam 55, 71, 96, 113, 130
Baynes, Robert 44, 54, 60-1, 84, 101, 116-17
Beale, Henry 51, 67-8, 95, 112, 129, 146, 148
Beamont, Richard 43, 53, 69
Beamont, XXX 52-3, 69, 96
Beckwith, Matthew 259
Bee, Anthony 107, 117, 122, 139, 141, 162
Beke, Henry 91,
Beke, Richard 68-9, 95, 98, 112, 115, 129, 175
Belcham, Anthony 104, 119, 138, 159
Bellasis, John Lord 156
Bellasis, Henry 156
Bennett, John 199, 229, 239, 248
Benson, XXX 81-2
Bentley, Thomas 261-2

Beresford, Tristram 209, 268
Beridge, George 167
Berkeley, Maurice 146, 169
Bernard, Alexander 126, 167
Bernard, John 257-8
Bernard, Ralph 110, 125-6, 138, 142-3, 159
Bernard, XXX 206
Berry, James 51, 68, 80, 97, 114, 132, 149
Bertie, XXX 174
Best, XXX 82
Bethell, Hugh 148, 172
Bethell, John 259
Bethell, Walter 148, 172, 191
Betsworth, Peter 146, 169
Betts, Thomas 180, 200, 229
Biggs, Samuel 144, 165
Billars, William 63, 85
Billett, XXX 258
Birch, Thomas 137, 157
Bird, Anthony?? 59, 75
Bird, William 58-9, 74-5
Bird, XXX 206
Birtill, Edward 211, 257
Birtles, Edward 156, 199
Birtles, Hugh 58, 74, 90, 107
Biscoe, John 45-6, 62, 65, 86-7, 104, 118, 135
Bishop, George 195, 223, 227
Bishop, XXX 207
Blackburn, John 214-15
Blackins, XXX 209
Blackmore, John 52, 68, 95, 112, 129
Blackway, XXX 220
Blackwell, John 52
Blackwell, Joshua 79, 93, 109
Blagrave, John 189-90, 212, 229
Blakeney/Blakeway, Robert 187, 209, 233, 243
Blakiston, Sir William 173
Bland, Michael 137, 156, 182, 203
Blennerhassett, John 219
Blennerhassett, XXX 210
Blewett, XXX 209
Blissett, Joseph 51, 67, 95, 112
Blount, Robert 58-9, 74-5, 90
Blumfield, Richard 213
Blythe, Stephen 109, 142-3, 163
Bolton, Charles 43, 184, 205
Bolton, Daniel 166
Bolton, Francis 49, 190, 218, 221, 236, 245, 249, 255, 261
Bolton, Israel 119, 137
Bolton, William 222, 236, 239, 261-2, 268
Bolton, XXX 229
Bond, William 266
Bonnell, Samuel 88, 104, 119-20, 232, 242, 249, 260, 261
Boone, Edward 76
Boone, Richard 135
Boteler, Noel 114, 132, 149, 174
Boteler, William 50, 80, 94, 97, 111, 114
Bouchier, Thomas 120-1
Bouchier, Vesey 175
Boule, XXX 187
Boult, Richard 136, 154-5
Bourne, Thomas 149, 173
Bowen, Henry 180, 200
Bowen, Maurice 44-5, 61
Bowler, John 152
Boyce, XXX 110
Bradford, William 56, 72, 97, 114
Bradshaw, Edward 70, 88, 105, 120, 137, 157
Bramston, John 82, 94
Bramston/Balston, XXX 256
Brayfield, Alexander 180-1, 200, 201, 212-13, 229, 233, 240, 242, 248
Brayne, William 22, 58, 74, 90, 94
Breman, John 129, 147, 170
Brereton, Samuel 188, 208
Brereton, Thomas 268
Brett, John 216-17, 241, 244, 248, 261, 269
Brett, XXX 208, 230, 232
Brewster, Humphrey 126-7
Bridge, Tobias 49, 81, 98, 114, 132, 255
Bridges, John 16, 261-2, 266
Briggs, XXX 58-9, 74
Briggs, XXX 241
Bright, John 53-4, 69-71, 78
Broadbent, William 186, 208
Broadhurst, William 79-80, 93, 109, 125, 142,
Brockett, Walter 85, 88-9, 105, 120, 125
Brockhurst, Francis 127
Brockhurst, John 102, 117-18
Broderick, St. John 270
Broghill, Lord, later Orrery 15, 16, 21, 194, 223-4, 226, 227, 239, 260, 263, 264, 265
Bromwell, XXX 184, 206, 232
Brooke, Henry 213-14
Browne, Adam 170
Browne, Edward 185, 206-7
Browne, John I (1 H.) 50, 66, 145, 168-9
Browne, John II (7 F.) 193
Browne, Robert 105, 119
Browne, William 91, 107, 122, 139, 160
Broxholme, William 156
Broxton, Thomas 144, 166
Buck, John 134, 152-3
Buck, William 51, 67-8
Buckham, William 184
Buckingham, Duke of 164
Buckner, Thomas 46, 62
Buckridge, XXX 161
Bull/Ball, Thomas I 191
Bull, Thomas II 214
Buller, Anthony 168, 169
Burden, William 221
Burgess, Benjamin 181
Burgess, Richard 158
Burnell/Barnell, Richard 187, 210, 215
Burrell, Thomas 183, 203-4, 218, 231
Burrell/Burnell, William 101, 108, 124, 141, 162
Bury, John 267
Butler, John 146-7, 170
Butler, Thomas 44
Butts, Henry 186, 208
Butts, XXX 167
Byfield, John 67-8, 95
Cadogan, William 195, 224-5
Cadwell, Matthew 48, 62, 65, 86-7, 101, 104, 118
Caine, Stephen 183, 204
Callant, Sylam 73, 90, 106, 121, 138, 159
Cambridge, Owen 51, 67-8, 95, 112, 129, 146
Camby/Combie, Solomon 232, 241, 266
Campbell, John 196, 219, 235
Campfield, Jeremy 46, 79, 93, 109, 120, 137, 157
Campion, Thomas 215
Candler, William 182, 203, 228, 266
Candler, XXX 216
Cannon, Henry 53, 193
Cantrell, XXX 201, 224, 230
Carey, Peter 187, 210, 215
Carness/Cathness, John 132, 150, 176
Carpenter, William 157
Carr, Cuthbert 133, 137, 151, 157
Carter, Andrew 53-4, 69-70
Carter, Edward 230, 260
Carter, John 180-1, 201
Carter, Robert 123, 140
Carter, William? 259
Carter, XXX 78, 201
Carteret, Francis 203
Carteret, Phillip? 182, 203, 230
Cary, Edward? 209-10
Cary, XXX 116-17
Cash/Cosh, William 137, 157
Castle, Alexander 188, 211
Castle, James 188, 210
Castle, Richard 49-50, 81, 98, 115, 126, 175, 255
Catchett, Robert 72, 97
Catchett/Catcott, XXX 73
Cathness/Carness, John 132, 150, 176
Caulfield, Lord 196, 225-6, 231-2, 242, 264, 272
Cecil, William 174-5
Challinor, Arthur 136, 154-5
Chamberlain, John 78, 92, 110, 126, 143, 164
Chamberlain, Thomas 69, 96, 113, 130, 147
Champion, Henry 258
Champion, Thomas 82
Chandler, Thomas 182, 203
Channing, Richard 57-8
Chapman, John 135
Chapman/Chaplain, XXX 193
Charlton, William 127
Chase, Nathaniel 45, 61-2, 217
Cheshire, Thomas 213, 233
Chester, XXX 231
Chetham, Thomas 184, 206, 232
Chetnell, Thomas 57-8
Chillenden, Edmund 53, 69, 96
Cholmley, Sir Henry 154-5
Churchman, Thomas 76-7
Clare/Cleare, Timothy 147, 171
Clarke, James 218
Clarke, John I (3 F.) 15, 45, 61-2, 217, 218
Clarke, John II (2 F.) 44, 61, 218, 234, 239, 243, 249, 261

Clarke, John III (21 F.) 91, 108, 123, 140, 161
Clarke, John IV (28 F.) 127, 143
Clarke, John V (30 F.) 144, 165, 166
Clarke, John VI (20 F.) 161
Clarke, Samuel I (2 F.) 44, 61, 218
Clarke, Samuel II (28 F.) 127, 143, 165
Clarke, Thomas 116
Clarke, XXX 241
Claypole, Edward 127, 143, 165
Claypole, Wingfield 235, 237, 245
Clayton, John 145, 169
Clayton, Thomas 206-7
Cleare, Henry jun. 55, 81, 98, 115, 132, 150, 175
Cleare, Henry sen. 54-5, 59, 75, 90, 107, 117, 122, 133, 151, 162
Cleare/Clare, Timothy 147, 168
Cleaver, Joseph 137
Clements, Henry 185, 207
Cleveland, Earl of 157
Clifford, Martin 162
Clifford, Walter 183
Clifton, Richard 66, 87, 104, 119, 136, 155
Clitheroe, William 145, 169
Clobury, John 73, 90, 106, 121, 138, 146, 170
Clough, Robert 212
Clowdisley, Timothy 145, 168
Coakley, Thomas 230, 241
Coates, Roger 157
Coates, William 127, 167, 168
Coates/Coaches, XXX 209
Cobbe, Sir Francis 156, 157
Cobbett, John 44, 53, 61, 69-70, 88
Cobbett, Ralph 45-6, 62, 79-80, 93, 109, 120, 125, 139
Cobbett, Robert 46, 125, 142
Coglin, John 244, 265
Cochrane, Sir Brice 91, 127
Cole, John 196, 210, 213-14, 224, 227, 243, 266, 268, 269
Cole, S. 213
Cole, Sir William 213-14
Coleman, William 51, 67
Coles, Abraham 188
Coles, Francis, 213
Collingwood, James 101
Collins, John 119, 123, 140, 161
Collinson, Richard 133, 151
Collinson, William 49, 66, 87, 104, 119, 136, 155
Collis/Collins, XXX 209, 233
Colooney, Lord (see Richard Coote) 269, 271
Combes, Richard 43, 49, 81, 98, 115, 130, 132, 175
Combie, Camby? XXX 181, 202, 208, 232, 241
Compton, Francis 153
Comyn, Francis 155
Congreave, John 187, 210
Connock, George 154
Constable, Gregory 138, 158
Constable, Phillip 217
Constable, Sir William 32, 48, 62, 64-5, 86, 260
Conway, Francis 216-17
Conyers, Nicholas 148
Conyers, XXX 215
Cooke, George 32, 181, 202
Cooke, John 76-7
Cooke, Joseph 116, 133, 152
Cooke, Robert, 266
Cooke, Thomas 70, 89, 105, 120, 137, 157
Coomby, William 112-13
Cooper, Sir Anthony Ashley 146, 169
Cooper, Elias 123, 139, 140, 160, 163
Cooper/Cope, Henry 181, 202, 208
Cooper/Cope, John 215
Cooper, Thomas 78-9, 92, 109, 231-2, 242, 244, 248, 249
Coote, Sir Charles, later Lord Mountrath 21, 27, 186, 196, 209, 224, 225-6, 233, 237, 243, 249, 263, 264
Coote, Chidley 20, 196, 224, 226, 237, 266, 268, 269
Coote, Richard 196, 224, 226, 237, 264, 269
Coote, Thomas 187, 209, 214, 224, 266, 268, 269
Coote, XXX 245
Cope/Cooper, Henry 181
Cope/ Cooper, John 215
Cope, XXX 201
Coppage/Cuppage, Robert 214
Copperthwaite, Christopher 55, 71, 141, 162
Coppleston, John 111, 128, 145, 169
Corbett/Corlett, George 189, 211, 212
Cordwainer, XXX 256
Cordy, Nicholas 62-3, 85, 102, 107, 117, 133, 152
Corker, John 110, 126, 143, 144
Corlett/Corbett, George 189, 211, 212
Cornelius, David 166
Corney, XXX 144-5
Cornock, Jacob? 233
Cornock, XXX 213
Cosby, William 213
Cosen, XXX 213
Cosh/Cash, William 137, 157
Cotterell, John 55, 71, 81-2, 93, 109, 253
Cotton, Lawrence 94, 111
Coulson, Thomas 56, 72, 97, 114, 131, 149, 173
Courthorpe, Peter 195, 223-4, 266, 270
Covell, William 50, 66, 69, 258
Coventry, John 69, 96, 113, 130, 147
Cox, Alban 44, 60
Cox, Robert 172
Crackenthorpe, XXX 80,
Crackenthorpe, XXX 258
Craddock, Thomas 149, 174
Creamer, Thomas 180
Crease/Crase, Henry 81, 98
Creed, Richard 56, 72, 97, 112, 114, 130, 131
Cresset, John 78-9
Cresset, XXX 256
Crewe, Francis 175,
Crewkerne, Henry 190, 218, 234
Crimes, XXX 213
Crimes/Cruett, XXX 256
Crispe, Henry 103-4, 118, 135, 162
Crispe, Nicholas 86
Crispe, Peter 76-9, 92, 109, 124, 141
Crofts, Thomas 189
Croke, Charles 149, 174
Croke, Unton 80, 97, 114, 132, 149, 174
Cromwell, Henry 22, 29-30, 50-1, 193, 214, 221, 222, 229, 236, 240, 245, 246, 250, 260
Cromwell, Oliver 11, 15, 20-40, 53, 60, 66, 77-8, 84, 92, 94, 95, 132, 137, 180, 190-4, 200, 221, 229, 236, 245, 246, 255
Cromwell, Richard 31, 35, 37-9, 55, 97, 108, 111, 114, 244, 245, 249
Crook, William 55, 71
Crosland, Sir Jordan 155
Crowther, Thomas 98, 115, 132, 150, 175
Croxton, Thomas 126
Cruett/Crimes, XXX 256
Cuffe, James 194, 223, 268, 270
Cullen, Thomas 267
Culme, Adoneus 186, 208
Culme, Arthur 186, 202
Cuppage/Coppage, Robert 214
Curtis, John 159
Cusack, Michael 195, 224

Daborne/Daberon, John 49, 81, 98, 115, 132, 150, 255
Dale, Daniel 53, 69, 96, 113, 130, 147, 171-2
Dancer, Thomas 180, 200, 229, 240, 266
Daniel, William 21, 58, 74, 90, 106, 122, 142, 163
Davenport, XXX 90
Davies, Abraham 46, 63, 85-6, 102
Davies, Henry 45, 61
Davies, John I (6 F.) 46-7, 63, 85, 102, 117-18, 134
Davies, John II (12 F.) 181, 201
Davies, Thomas 182, 203-4, 231, 247
Davies, William I (2 F.) 61, 84, 102, 116
Davies, William II (23 F.) 141, 163,
Davies, William III (30 F.) 144
Davies, XXX 46, 163
Davison, Daniel 71, 89, 106, 121, 138
Davison, XXX 45, 61
Dawkins, Roland 48, 62, 64-5
Day, Richard 77
Deane, Joseph 222, 236, 246, 250
Deane, Richard I (15 F.) 54, 70,
Deane, Richard II 47, 190
Deane, Thomas 51, 67-8, 95, 112, 129, 146, 150, 170
Degennis, John 220-1
Delves, Roger 139, 160
Dendy, XXX 114
Denison, John 182, 183, 202, 230, 241, 248
Dennis, James 93-4, 109, 125, 142, 150, 163, 175, 268, 269
Dethick, XXX 195, 223
Dickenson, John 218
Digby, John 201

Dillon, Carey 263, 265
Dineley, Robert 138, 158
Dirdo, John 90, 106, 121, 138, 159, 163
Disbrowe, John I (6 H.) 25, 52, 68, 95, 112, 129, 146
Disbrowe, John II (Abbott's Dr.) 190, 218, 234, 244, 249
Disbrowe, Valentine 245, 261
Disher, William 50, 66, 94, 111
Disney, Guy 256
Disney, Thomas 48, 141
Disney, William 179-80, 216
Disney, XXX 234
Dixon, Richard 211
Dober, John 135, 144, 165
Dobson, Isaac 212, 241, 248
Dodgin, Hugh 79-80, 93, 109, 135, 164
Dolphin, Richard 56, 72
Done, John 50
Done, XXX 184, 205, 231
Dormer, XXX 195, 223
Dorney, Henry 46, 60-1, 84, 101, 116-17, 142
Doughty, Samuel 148, 171-2
Douglas, XXX 257
Downes, Richard 242
Downes, William 91, 108, 123, 140, 160
Downing, XXX 162
Dowson, Man 80
Dowson, William 110, 125
Drake, John 43, 54, 60, 84, 101, 123, 137, 157
Draper, William I 48, 64, 141
Draper, William II 186, 208
Drury, George 180, 198, 210
Duckenfield, Francis 257
Duckenfield, John 88, 104, 119, 184, 205, 231, 242, 248
Duckenfield, Robert 65, 87, 199, 232, 242, 257
Duckenfield, William 88, 104, 119, 199, 206, 232, 257, 260
Duckenfield, XXX 185
Duckett, Charles 68, 95, 112-13, 129, 147
Duckett, William 46, 63
Dun, XXX 187
Dunbar, XXX 195, 225
Dyke, William 134, 153-4
Dyos, George 203

Earley/Yardley, XXX 73
Earwood, Gabriel 47, 63
Eaton, Simon 214-15, 218
Ebzery, Phillip 45, 61-2, 217, 234, 239, 247
Edge, Oliver 78, 92, 108, 124
Edmonds, Richard 196, 226
Edwards, Richard 225
Elie/Eley, Brett 120, 137, 157
Ellatson, Jeffrey 78, 92, 108, 124
Ellicott, XXX 78
Elliott, Alexander 194, 195-6, 225
Elliott, Richard 183, 204
Ellis, Charles 267
Ellis, Edmund 124, 141
Ellis, Godfrey 167, 168
Ellis, Henry 185, 207
Ellis, Thomas 136
Elmes, William 103, 118, 134, 153-4
Else, Thomas 51, 67, 95, 112, 129
Elsmore, George 52, 68, 95, 112, 147, 171
Elsyng, Christopher 182, 202-3
Elton, Richard I (14 F.) 54, 69-70, 88, 105, 120, 126, 137
Elton, Richard II (5 F.) 152
Elward, William 105, 120, 137, 157
Emerson, James 77, 81-2, 91-2, 108, 123-4, 140, 161
Empson, Thomas 57, 73, 97, 114, 131
Ensor, George 52
Errington, John 153
Ersbury, Edward 75, 90, 107, 122, 139, 160
Essex, Richard 191, 220
Evans, Thomas 193, 222
Evanson, William 53, 69, 96, 130
Evelyn, Arthur 67, 132, 137, 150, 157, 176
Evelyn, John 169
Everard, George 73, 90, 106, 121, 138, 159
Everard, Robert 71
Ewer, Isaac 45, 179, 199, 228
Ewer, John senior 179, 199, 229, 239-40, 267
Ewer, John junior 179, 199, 229, 240
Ewer, William 179-805
Ewers, William 137
Eyre, John 227, 237
Eyres/Ayres, John 223
Eyres, John 236, 246, 264
Eyres, William 137, 150, 157
Eyton, Phillip 65, 87, 104, 136, 154-5, 257

Fagg, John 144, 166
Fairfax, Charles 24, 55, 71, 89, 106, 121, 138, 158
Fairfax, John 138, 158
Fairfax, Thomas 148, 172
Fairfax, Sir Thomas 11, 23, 37, 43, 50, 52-3, 66, 193, 255
Faith, Solomon 232, 242
Falkland, Lord 171, 172
Fann, Matthew 49, 81, 98
Farley, William 43, 60, 84, 101, 116, 133, 144-5, 151
Farmer, John 82, 94, 110-11, 128, 150, 175
Farmer, Theophilus 150, 175
Fauconberg, Lord 113, 168, 169
Faulthrop, Wiliam 121
Faultleroy, Moore 144
Fellows, Joseph 140, 161
Fenning, John 141, 163
Fenton, Maurice 194, 223-4, 226, 239, 247, 264
Fenwick, Edward 80
Fenwick, George 48, 54, 65, 87
Fenwick, John 57, 73, 98
Fenwick, Ralph 267
Fenwick, Robert 189, 211
Fenwick, Roger 20, 189, 205, 211
Fenwick, William 170
Ferguson, John 51
Fernisley, XXX 208
Figes, William 125, 139
Filkins, John 217, 234
Finch, Simon 198-9, 228, 239, 247, 257, 260, 266
Fincher, Richard 166
Finnis, Edward 257-8
Finnis, John 149, 174
Fisher, Edward 186, 208
Fisher, Gideon 117, 142, 185, 207
Fisher, Henry 195, 224
Fitch, Thomas 23, 58-9, 74, 90, 107, 117, 141, 162
Fitch, William 61, 84, 101, 116
Fitzgerald, Robert 263, 264
Fitzjames, Henry 171
Fitzwilliam, XXX 54, 70-1
Fleetwood, Charles 28, 30, 51, 67, 94, 105, 111, 124, 129, 141, 200, 204, 208, 220, 231, 234, 235, 242, 244, 248
Fleetwood, George 104, 135, 154
Flower, Henry 180, 200, 204, 231, 242, 260
Flower, James 183, 204
Flower, William 266
Folliott, John 213, 214, 266
Forster, Robert 136, 155
Forster, XXX 196
Foster, William 62-3, 85, 102, 107, 117
Forth, XXX 122
Fotherby, Henry 76-9
Foulke, Francis 207-8, 269
Foulke, John 179-80, 216, 224, 228
Fowlis, XXX 44, 61
Fox, Consolation 46, 63, 85, 102, 117
Fox, John 68, 95, 112, 129, 146
Fox, Joseph 216, 267
Fox, Robert 128,
Francis, David/Daniel 140, 161
Frank, John 193, 221, 222, 236, 245, 260, 264
Franklin, Richard 51, 191, 220, 235, 245, 261, 265
Franklyn, Robert 183
Freckleton, XXX 257
Freeman, Francis 49, 255
Freeman, John 71, 89, 106
Freer, Edward 93, 110, 122, 125-6, 139, 160
Freming, XXX 209
French, Thomas 52, 68, 167, 168
Friend, John 222, 236, 246, 250
Fry, Alexander 137, 156
Fryer, Thomas 70, 88-9, 105, 120, 137, 157
Fuggill, William 70, 253
Fulcher, Henry 190, 219, 255
Fulthrop, XXX 256

Gainsford, John 152
Gale, Michael 182, 203, 230, 241
Gale/Gate, Timothy? 253
Galhampton, William 47, 64, 86, 103, 118, 135
Galland, John 184, 205, 231, 242
Gardiner, John 76, 91

Gardiner, Samuel 191, 220
Gardiner, XXX 213, 233, 260
Garland, John 49
Garrett, John 211
Garrett, XXX 206-7, 231
Garston, James 207
Gascoyne, David 149, 174
Gascoyne, Roland 74, 90, 107
Gate/Gayle, Timothy 253
Gayle, Ralph 181
Gayte, XXX 253
Geare, XXX 209
Geares, Edward 216
Geary, Edmund 127, 143, 165
Gerrard, Gilbert 257
Gibbon, John 102, 110, 126, 143, 164
Gibbon, Robert 69, 88, 98, 110, 126, 143, 164, 191
Gibbons, Francis? 219, 235
Gibbons, Henry 185, 206
Gibbons, John 188, 198, 210, 228
Gibson, Thomas 220
Gifford, Benjamin 87, 119, 135-6, 154-5
Gifford, John 180, 187-8, 198, 210, 215
Gifford/Jefford, XXX 185, 206
Gilbert, Henry 267
Gilbert, XXX 216
Gilby, Anthony 156
Giles, Henry 103-4, 118
Gill, George 23, 76, 79
Gill, Thomas 206, 231, 242
Gillott, John 78, 92, 109
Gimbell, XXX 257
Gladman, John 50, 66, 94, 128
Gladstone, Thomas 152
Glegg, Robert 195, 224-5
Gloucester, Duke of 173
Glyn, Robert 52, 69, 96, 130
Glyn, XXX 83
Goddard, Thomas 145, 168
Godfrey, John 191, 220, 235, 244, 250, 261,
Godney, Edward 183, 204
Goffe, Robert 133, 151
Goffe, William I 43, 60, 72, 84, 97, 101
Goffe, XXX 253
Gold, Henry 135
Goldsmith, Daniel 77
Gooday, Samuel 141, 162
Goodgroom, XXX 125
Goodrick/Goodrich, William I (14 F.) 53-4, 254
Goodrick/Goodrich, William II (12 H.) 54-5, 71, 96, 113, 130, 148, 172
Goodwin, John 185, 207
Goodwin, John/ Richard 165
Goodwin, Richard I (12 F.) 88, 105, 119-20, 126, 270
Goodwin, Richard/John II (30 F.) 144, 165
Goodwin, Robert 163
Goodwin, William 131, 149, 173
Goodwin, XXX 110
Goodwin, XXX 234
Goodyear, Henry 47
Gore, Arthur 196, 227, 270
Gore, Charles 186, 209, 233, 266
Gore, Francis 186, 209, 233, 243, 249, 267, 269
Gore, Henry 186, 209, 243
Gorges, John 30, 240, 265, 269
Gosling, John 124
Gosnell, Hugh 73, 90, 106, 121, 139
Gough, Nathaniel 213
Gough, William I (11, 20 F.) 49, 75, 87, 91, 107, 123, 140
Gough, William II (3 H.) 50, 67, 94, 111, 128
Gower, William 156
Grace, Andrew 183, 203
Graeme/ Grime, Samuel 180-1, 201
Graham, Thomas 203-4
Gravenor/Grosvenor, Edward 132, 258
Gray, Andrew? 203
Gray, John 182, 203
Green, Elias 191, 220, 235, 244, 249, 262, 263
Green, John I (various) 77, 83, 121, 138, 158
Green, John II (3 H.) 145, 169
Green, John III (32 F.) 167, 168
Greenaway, William 133, 151
Greenleaf, John 53-4, 70, 88, 105, 157
Greenwood, Robert 57, 73, 97, 147-8, 171
Gregory, Giles 179, 199-200, 220, 235, 244
Gregory, John 147
Grice, John 199-200
Grime, John 46, 63, 85, 102, 117, 134
Grime, Mark I (10 F.) 48, 88
Grime, Mark II (26 F.) 110, 126, 143, 164
Grime/Graeme, Samuel 180-1, 201, 229
Grimsditch, John? 70, 89
Groome, Benjamin 49, 76, 91, 107, 123, 140
Groome, John 46, 65, 79, 86-7, 104, 107, 119, 135
Grosvenor/Gravenor, Edward 132, 258
Grove, Francis 154
Grove, John 53, 69, 72, 96, 97, 114, 131, 148, 168
Gudding, William 140, 161
Gullock, Thomas 140, 161
Gwillym, Thomas 108, 140, 161
Gwyn, Richard 144, 166, 167

Hacker, Francis 35, 57, 72, 97, 114, 131, 149, 174, 193
Hacker, Francis jun. 131, 149, 173
Hadfield, George 43, 101
Hague, Isaac 120, 137, 157
Hales, Joseph 74, 107, 122, 139
Hall, Stephen 215
Halsey, William 216
Haman, XXX 165
Hamilton, Francis 265
Hamilton, XXX 187
Hammond, Robert? 43, 60
Hampden, XXX 162, 164
Hanbury/Henbury, Stephen 146, 170
Hand, James 240, 266
Hand/Hands, Jeremiah 141
Hanley, Christopher 125
Hannay, Richard 261-2, 267, 270
Harbottle, Henry 181, 202
Hardier, John 88, 105, 119, 136, 156
Hardier, John? 234, 260
Hardier/Hardware, XXX 217
Harding, William 57-8
Hardman/Hurdman, John 192, 221
Hardware/Hardier, XXX 217
Harestaffe, Gervase 105-6, 137, 157
Hargreave, John 77, 91, 108, 123, 140
Harley, Robert 150, 169-70, 176
Harman, Edward 78, 92, 109, 124
Harmer, William 214-15
Harris, Evan 127, 143-4, 165
Harrison, James 44, 61, 218
Harrison, Jeremiah 166, 167
Harrison, John I 165
Harrison, John II 267
Harrison, Nathaniel 110, 126, 144, 166, 167
Harrison, Thomas I (3 H.) 31, 50-1, 66-7, 95
Harrison, Thomas II 265
Hart, James 47
Hart, Samuel 222
Hart, Theophilus 51, 67, 94, 111, 128, 145, 168-9, 169, 175
Hartley, Francis 89, 106, 121, 138, 158-9
Hartley, Jeremy 189, 211
Hartwell, Humphrey 239, 267
Hartwell, William 267
Haselrig, Sir Arthur 31, 47, 63, 66, 80, 85-6, 103, 118, 134, 145, 149, 153, 168
Haselrig, Robert 145, 168
Hassett, XXX 219
Hatchman, Roger 76, 91, 108, 123, 140
Hatfield, John 55, 72, 96, 113, 130, 148, 172
Hatt, Richard 46, 79-80, 93, 109, 125, 142, 163
Hawes, Francis 52
Hawes, John 47, 64, 86
Hawkridge, John 81, 98, 114, 132, 257-8
Hawley, Lord 174
Hay, Thomas 136, 154-5
Hayles, William 200
Haynes, Hezekiah 51, 67, 95, 112, 129
Heane, James 57
Hearon, George 161
Heath, Richard 58, 74, 90, 106-7, 122
Heath, Robert I (18 F.) 107, 122, 165
Heath, Robert II (26 F.) 126, 143
Heath, XXX 57-8
Hedworth, Henry 48, 64, 116, 133
Hedworth, John 48,
Height, John 133, 151
Hellin, Willliam 83, 94, 111, 128, 150, 175
Helsham, Arthur 44, 61, 218
Helsham, XXX 231
Henbury/Hanbury, Stephen 146
Henchman, Nicholas 202, 230
Henderson, XXX 187
Hepburn, William 267
Herbert, Lord 167, 168
Herbert, William 162

Hersington/Horsington, Giles 73-4
Hesketh, XXX 257
Hewlett, XXX 201
Hewley, John 120
Hewson, John 22, 88, 98, 104, 119, 180, 201, 216, 229, 240, 260
Hext, William 214
Heydon, William 200, 229, 240
Heygate/Hyegate, Edmund 216
Heylin, Henry 171-2
Heyrick, Thomas 44, 60-1, 84, 101, 116-17
Hickman, Roger 111, 128
Hickson, John 141, 163
Higbed/Higby, George 188
Higginbotham, Phillip 189-90
Higgins, Thomas 166, 167
Higgs, Thomas 64, 86, 103, 118, 135
Hill, John 146, 170
Hill, Robert 167
Hilliard, Kympton 57-8, 67, 83, 94
Hills, John 75, 90, 107, 122, 139, 146, 160
Hinksman, XXX 201-2
Hoare, Abraham 156
Hoare, Edward 88, 104, 119, 136, 156, 181, 201-2, 230, 240
Hobson, Paul 47, 57, 72-3, 131
Hodden, Richard 179, 198, 228, 239
Hodgson, John 32, 78
Hodgson, Robert 158
Holbrook, John 142, 163
Holdsworth, John 76-9
Holewell, Richard 95, 112, 129
Holford, Richard 74, 90, 107
Holland, William 209
Holmes, Abraham 47, 75, 91, 107, 123, 124, 140
Holmes, Thomas 198, 228
Holmes, XXX 199
Holt, Nathaniel 96, 113, 130
Holt, Richard 92, 108, 124, 141, 162
Homan/Honor, John 189, 211, 243, 268
Honeyford, XXX 184-5, 206,
Honor/Homan, John 189, 211, 243, 268
Hooper, Jonathan 141, 162
Hooper, Thomas 120, 157
Hooper, William 84, 101, 116,
Hooper, XXX 45, 61-2
Hooper, XXX 184, 206, 217
Hoore, XXX 187
Hope, Robert 56, 72, 97, 114, 128, 131
Hopkins, Gabriel 147, 171
Hopkins, Thomas 264
Horne, Edward 256
Horsington/Hersington, Giles 73-4
Horsington, XXX 88, 105
Horsington, XXX 256, 260
Horsley, Joseph 164
Horsley, XXX 144
Horton, Thomas 191, 192
Howard, Charles 31, 68-9, 85, 103, 129, 146, 170
Howard, Edward 151, 259
Howard, Phillip 173, 176
Howard, Thomas 145, 168, 169,
Hoyle, Edward/Edmund 261-2, 267
Hoyle, XXX 204
Hubbard, William 57, 73, 97, 114, 131, 149, 174
Hubblethorne, John 54, 70, 91, 108, 123, 140, 161, 267, 269
Huetson, John 189
Hughes, Richard 76, 91, 108
Hughes, Thomas 49, 66, 87, 104, 119, 136, 155
Hughes, Thomas (Blagrave F.) 212
Huitson, John 91, 108, 123-4, 140, 161
Humphreys, Edward 179, 199
Humphreys, John 16, 82-3, 255
Humphreys, XXX 213
Huncks, Hercules 183, 204, 229
Hunt, John 46, 63, 85, 102, 117
Hunt, Thomas I (17 F.) 73, 90, 106, 121, 139, 159
Hunt, Thomas II (11 F.) 87, 104, 119, 136, 155
Hunt, Thomas III (7 H.) 112-13
Hunt, Thomas IV (Coote H.) 196, 226
Hunt, Vere 188, 198, 210, 228
Hunter, John 66, 94, 128, 145, 168
Huntington, Robert 146-7, 170
Hurd, Henry 243
Hurd, Humphrey 182-3, 203, 230, 243, 266
Hurdman/Hardman, John 192
Hurst, Thomas 144, 165
Husbands, Azariah 31, 52, 68
Hutchinson, George 191, 194
Hutchinson, James 179, 199, 228, 239
Hutton, John 81-2, 93-4, 110,
Hutton, Robert 47, 80, 97, 103, 114, 132
Hyde, Lawrence 185, 207, 258
Hyegate/Heygate, Edmund 216
Hyldyard, Robert 156

Ingoldsby, George 220, 235, 244, 264, 269
Ingoldsby, Henry 15, 190, 219, 220, 234, 243, 265
Ingoldsby, Richard 46, 63, 68, 85, 95, 112, 147, 170, 220
Ingoldsby, Thomas 46-7, 85, 111, 128, 145, 169
Ingoldsby, XXX 220
Ireton, Henry 21, 50, 52, 183, 191, 198, 200, 204, 210, 220-1, 227, 229, 264
Ireton, Thomas 52, 68, 87
Itchingham, John 186
Ivory, William 227, 237
Izod, Francis 165-6
Izod, Thomas 67, 94, 95, 111, 114, 131, 146, 149, 156, 165-6, 169-70

Jackson, Benjamin 136, 155
Jackson, Edward 213-14
Jackson, Isaac 203, 205
Jackson, Thomas 126
Jackson, William 71, 266
Jackson, XXX 186-7
Jacombe/Jacobs, Robert 214
Jacombe, XXX 261
James, XXX 172
Jeacock/Jaycock, John 201, 230, 240, 261, 268
Jeanor, John 266
Jefford/Gifford, XXX 185
Jeffries, Jervis 102, 143, 164
Jenkins, George 181
Jenkins, John 52, 68, 95, 112, 129, 146, 192
Jennings, James 194, 223, 236
Jennings, John 62-3, 85, 102, 107, 117, 133
Jephson, John 246, 267, 269
Jephson, XXX 246
Jervis, Samuel 182, 203, 230, 241
Jewell, John 180, 200
Johnson, Richard 134, 153
Johnson, Thomas I (8 H.) 52, 68, 96, 113, 130, 147, 171
Johnson, Thomas II 59
Jolly, John 58, 74
Jones, Henry I (12 F.) 181, 201, 229, 240, 248
Jones, Henry II 201
Jones, Sir Henry 146-7, 170,
Jones, John I (3 H.) 50-1, 67
Jones, John II 267
Jones, Lewis 196, 226
Jones, Michael 20-1, 195, 224-5, 227
Jones, Oliver 189-90, 212, 229
Jones, Rice 125
Jones, Roger 46, 79, 93, 109, 125, 142
Jones, Samuel 159
Jones, Sir Theophilus 194, 195, 224, 237, 246, 250, 264, 269, 272
Jones, William I (5 F.) 46, 79-80
Jones, William II (Foulke F.) 216
Jones, XXX 61, 84, 101, 116-17
Jordan, John 266
Jubbs, Martin 213, 233, 260

Keane, William 248,
Keene/Keane, Clement 43, 60, 84, 101, 122, 248
Kelke, Nicholas 74, 90, 107, 122
Kelly, Francis 82, 94, 150, 175
Kelsey, Thomas 46, 63, 85
Kemp, Richard 47, 64, 86, 103, 118, 135
Kempson, Nicholas 245, 249
Kennard, Peter 189, 212
Kennington, John? 216
Kent, Christopher 166
Kent, William 125, 142
King, Francis 196, 227, 268
King, John 196-7, 227, 237
King, Robert 60, 84, 101, 116
King, William 267, 269
King, XXX 245
Kingdom, Richard 217
Kingston, Lord (John King) 271
Kingswell, Maurice 258
Kirkby, Robert 258
Kitterminster, XXX 167
Knight, Edward 267
Knight, James 182, 203, 230
Knight, Ralph 52-3, 68, 96, 113, 130, 147, 149, 173
Knight, XXX 203
Knowles, William 49, 66, 87, 104, 119, 136

Kyrle, Richard 223-4, 264, 266, 270

Lagoe, Walter 47, 64, 78, 86, 92, 106, 108, 121, 124, 138
Lakin, John 125, 137, 157
Lambert, John I 24-5, 29, 31, 33-4, 37, 39, 53, 55, 60, 64, 69, 71, 88, 96, 113, 117-33, 136, 145, 148-50, 157
Lambert, John II (14 F.) 54, 60, 70, 88-9, 105, 120, 137, 157
Lamport, Robert 183, 204
Lane, William 184-5, 206
Langley, Timothy 66, 87, 104, 119, 136, 141, 162
Langrish, Anthony 75, 90, 107, 122, 139
Lascells, Peregrine 259
Laverock, Robert 139, 143
Lawrence, Richard 199, 228, 239, 247
Lawson, John 44, 54
Ledger, Richard 155
Lee, Richard 214
Legard, William 127, 143, 165
Legge, Henry 268
Legge, Robert 166
Legge, Roger 96, 113, 130
Le Hunt, Richard 194, 213, 215, 218
Leicester, Henry 168
Leigh, George 49-50
Leigh, James? 239-40
Leigh, Thomas 200-1
Leigh, William 16, 43, 183, 188, 199, 204, 210-11, 228
Leigh/Lee, XXX 80-1, 98
Leigh, XXX 229
Lenthall, John 134, 152
Lestrange, Henry 226
Levens, John 71-2, 96
Levin, Timothy 103, 118, 134
Levins, Henry 208
Levitt, XXX 214
Lewis/Lewens, Henry 186, 208
Lewis, Roger 48, 64
Lewis, William 184
Lilburne, Robert 56, 72, 96, 113, 131, 149, 172
Lilburne, Thomas 56, 72, 97, 113, 148, 172-3
Lilburne, XXX 158
Lillingston, Henry 48, 256
Lingwood, Lionel 44, 60, 84, 110, 126, 143
Linley, William 132, 150, 175
Lisle, Daniel 220, 235, 260
Lisle, Edmund 52, 68
Lissom, George 158
Lister, Christopher 56, 72
Lister, Edmund 77, 91, 108, 123, 140
Lloyd, Griffith 51, 67, 95, 112, 129, 193, 222
Lloyd, Thomas 124, 141, 162
Lockley, William 135
Lockyer, Nicholas 131-2
Loftus, Adam 187, 210
Long, Felix 208, 232, 241, 267, 270
Long, Thomas 200-1
Love, Thomas 153-4
Lowe, William 206, 232, 242, 248
Lowry/Lowers, Richard 75, 90, 107, 117, 122, 139, 160
Lowther/Lowry, William 110,
Loyzhier, Nicholas 86, 103, 118, 134, 153-4
Lucas, Benjamin 182, 203, 231, 239, 247, 266m
Lucas, Henry 208
Lucas, Thomas 239, 267
Ludlow, Edmund 33, 40, 101, 223-4, 227, 231, 237, 240, 245, 248, 249, 263
Luke, John 158
Lunn, Edward 78-9, 92, 109, 124, 141, 162
Luson, Robert 43, 60, 84, 101, 116, 133, 134
Lynocks, XXX 231
Lytcott, Leonard 21, 50, 80, 92, 98, 109, 117, 124, 125, 141, 142, 163, 185-6, 192, 207, 257
Lytcott, Robert 124, 141, 142, 163,

Maine, John 117
Mainwaring, Andrew 211-12
Mainwaring, Robert 127
Maleverer, John 54, 70
Malin, William 50, 66, 94, 111
Mandeville, Lord 174
Mann, Edward 122, 139, 160,
Mann, John 139, 141, 160, 162
Mann, Miles 59, 74-5, 90, 107, 122, 139, 141, 155, 160
Mann, XXX 155
Manning, John 127, 143, 165
Mansergh, James 211, 268
Mansergh, John 215, 235, 246
Mansergh, Robert 162
Mansfield, Thomas 140, 161
Margery, Ralph 52, 68-9, 96
Markasset, John 183
Markham, Anthony 68
Markham, Henry 248
Marsden, XXX 257
Marsh, Richard 258
Marsh, Thomas 155
Marten, Henry 264
Marvell/Martell, Matthew 79-80, 93, 109, 142, 163
Mason, Henry 47, 75
Mason, Humphrey 79-80, 93, 109, 125, 142
Mason, John I (9, 16 F.) 47, 55, 71, 89, 106
Mason, John II (8 F.) 47, 63, 86, 103, 118, 134
Mason, John III (Dr.) 83
Mason, XXX 164
Massey, Sir Edward 152
Massey, Thomas 199
Masterson, Jeremiah 110, 126, 143, 164
Matson, XXX 92
Matthews, John 167
Matthews, Richard 57-8
Matthews, Thomas 54, 70, 89
Matthews, XXX 71
Matthews, XXX 231
Maunsell, John 194, 223, 234
May, Richard 186, 208
Mayer, James 44, 60
Mayer, John 47, 57, 63, 85, 103, 118, 134, 153-4
Mayer, Thomas 134, 153-4
Mayer, William 153
McLaughlin, Richard 223, 236, 245, 246, 261, 264
Meade, Oliver 164
Mencour, Francis 75
Mercer, Christopher 94, 255
Mercer, Francis 78, 118
Meredith, Miles 73-4, 90, 106, 121, 138, 159
Meredith, Robert 266
Meredith, William 195, 224-5, 237, 246, 250, 261, 264, 272
Merest, Richard 50, 66, 94, 111, 128
Merriman, John 52, 68, 95, 98, 112-13, 129, 147
Messervy, Francis 46, 103
Metcalfe, John 76-9
Meyney, XXX 66
Michael/Myhill, Robert 187,
Mill, John 46, 63, 85, 102, 134, 152
Miller, John I (1st F.) 43, 60, 84
Miller, John II (5th F.) 45, 62, 85, 87, 102, 117, 133
Miller, John III (11th F.) 66, 87, 104, 119
Miller, John IV (20 F.) 123, 140, 161
Miller, Richard 140, 161
Miller, William 190, 219
Millward, Thomas 167, 168
Mitchell, William 54, 70, 93, 109, 125, 127
Molesworth, Edward 155
Molyneux, Adam 225, 264
Monck, George 23-6, 29-31, 34-40, 47, 49, 54, 66, 75, 91, 96, 107, 108, 113, 119-31, 135-7, 140-3, 147-76, 187, 210, 245, 246, 263, 265
Monck, Henry 176
Monckton, John 204
Monckton, Sir Phillip 156
Montagu, Edward 111, 145, 169
Moody, Samuel 191
Moore, Edward 189, 212
Moore, Faunteleroy 166
Moore, John 20, 189-90, 212, 229, 241
Moore, Nicholas 206-7, 234-5, 265, 267
Moore, Nicholas/William 190, 219
Moore, William I (28 F.) 127, 143-4, 165
Moore, William (23 F.) 141, 163
Moore, William (C. Coote, F.) 186, 209, 233, 243, 249, 266, 270
Moore, XXX 241
Moore, XXX 256
Mordaunt, Viscount 167
Mordaunt, XXX 151
Morgan, Anthony 191, 220, 235, 244
Morgan, Bledered 172
Morgan, Ethelbert 47, 75, 91, 103, 107, 123, 140, 161
Morgan, Robert 196, 227
Morgan, Thomas 15, 16, 25, 30, 57, 67, 81-3, 87, 93-4, 110-11, 127, 128, 139, 150, 160, 175, 255

Morley, Herbert 116, 133, 151
Morley, Thomas 171-2
Morris, Phillip 258
Morris, William? 184, 205
Morris, XXX 231
Moseley, John 60
Mosse, Richard 47, 64, 86-7, 103, 118, 135
Mosse, Thomas 192, 220, 236, 245
Mould, Mark/Michael 199, 200, 229, 240, 261
Mountrath (see Sir Charles Coote) 264, 266, 269, 271
Mowbray, XXX 218
Muddiford, James 174
Mullineux, Thomas 189-90, 212
Mullins, XXX 66,
Munn/Mynn, Thomas 146
Murford, Peter 165, 166
Murphy/Murfee, Maurice 187, 213
Murphy, XXX 233
Mutlow, James 73, 90, 106, 121, 138, 159, 268, 269
Mutlow, John 123, 140, 161
Myhill/Michael, Robert 187, 215
Mynn/Munn, Thomas 146, 170

Nanfan, Thomas 168
Napper, James 190, 219, 234
Nary, John 110, 125, 142
Neale, William 49, 81, 255
Neast, William 167, 168
Needham, Clement 73, 97, 114, 131, 149, 174
Needler, Henry 110, 126, 143, 144, 166, 167
Nelson, John 182, 202, 215, 228, 230, 238-9, 247
Nelthorpe, John 51, 67, 128, 145, 169
Newberry, Thomas 144, 165-6
Newborough, Thomas 243
Newborough, XXX 186-7
Newhouse/Newman, XXX 44, 61
Newman, Peter 134
Newman, William 66, 87, 104, 119, 136, 139, 155
Newman, XXX 212-13, 233
Newton, John 119-20, 136, 156
Nicholas/Nicholls, Henry 202, 208, 232
Nicholas, John 48, 62, 65,
Nicholetts, Richard 49, 193, 222, 255
Nicholls, Daniel 119, 135
Nicholls/Nicholas, Henry 202, 208
Nicholls, Francis 75-6, 91, 107, 123, 140, 161
Norris, John 62, 65, 87, 104
Northampton, Earl of 152-3
Northcott, John 162
Northcott, Lewis 45, 61-2, 179, 217, 234, 243
Northend, John 126, 135, 142, 154-5, 162
Northend, XXX 253
Norton, Richard 166
Norwood, Henry 164
Norwood, Samuel 194, 195-6, 225
Nowens, Anthony 147, 171
Nunn, Richard 227, 237
Nunney, Lawrence 48, 64

Oakley, Roland 185, 206
Oakshott, Benjamin 94, 111, 128, 145
O'Connolly, Owen 185
Ogle, Henry 57, 73, 149, 173, 258
Ogle, John 80, 150, 175
Ogle, Sir John 151, 267, 270
O'Hara, Charles 185
Okey, John 15, 24, 31, 49, 81, 98, 115, 132, 50, 150, 175, 190, 193, 214, 244, 255
Oliver, Richard 205
Oliver, Robert 196, 227, 267
O'Neale, Daniel 174
Oram, Robert 253
Orde, Christopher 134, 153-4
Ormsby, Arthur 239, 247, 267
Ormsby, Charles 196, 225-6
Ormsby, John 196, 225-6
Ormsby, Robert 187, 196, 225, 237
Orpin, Edward 48-9,
Orrery, Earl of (see Lord Broghill) 269, 272
Osbourne, John 174
Ossory, Earl of 27, 162
Otway/Ottoway, Anthony 195, 224
Overstreet, John 181, 202, 207, 241
Overton, John 142
Overton, Robert 24, 31, 44, 49, 69, 71, 77, 81-2, 89, 93, 125, 142, 170, 253
Owen, George 110, 126, 205, 231, 242, 260
Owen, Henry 193, 222-3, 236, 245, 246, 264
Owen, Philemon 194, 223
Oxford, Earl of 173

Packe/Parke, George 148, 149, 172
Packer, William 50, 66, 94, 128, 145
Paddon, John 131, 147, 149, 171
Page, John 139
Pakenham, Henry 189, 219, 234, 244, 265
Palmer, Emmanuel 196, 226, 237
Palmer, George 56, 72, 97
Palmer, Samuel 128, 145
Palmer, Thomas 116
Pares, John 218
Parke/Packe, George 148, 149
Parker, George 76, 91, 107, 123, 140
Parker, John I 74, 78-9, 92, 109, 124, 141
Parker, John II (Abbott Dr.) 244
Parker, William 102, 117, 133, 135, 152
Parker/Parkes, Robert 186, 209
Parker, William 85
Parry, Edward 95, 112-13, 147, 171
Parry, Hugh 146, 169
Parsons, Edmund 136, 155, 217
Parsons, Thomas 47, 64, 86
Parsons, William 195, 224
Patten, Edward 118, 135
Paulden, Thomas 164
Payne, Thomas 189, 211
Payne, XXX 215,
Paynter, John 123, 140, 161
Peacock, John 268
Peacock, Robert 126
Peake, John 208
Pearson, Henry 25, 160
Pearson, John I (18 F.) 47, 58, 64, 74, 90, 106, 122, 139
Pearson, John II (14 H.) 56,
Peart, Original 51
Peasley, James 196
Peck, John 50, 67
Pelham, William 205
Pelham, XXX 229
Pember, Michael 217
Pemberton, Lewis 192, 221-2
Pendock, Phillip 56
Penner, Richard 125
Pennyfather, John 231
Pennyfather, Thomas 191, 220
Pepper, Devis (John) 54, 70, 89, 105, 120, 137, 157
Pepper, George 184, 205, 266
Perratt, Edward 234
Perry, Benjamin 191, 220, 235, 245, 264
Perry, XXX 50
Peterborough, Earl of 151
Peters, Abraham 144, 165
Peters, John 140, 161
Petite/Petis, Peter 144
Peverell, William 97, 131, 148-9
Phayre, Robert 182, 202, 215, 230, 241, 248
Phelps, John 146, 170
Phillips, Griffanus 167, 168
Phillips, Matthew 76-7
Phillips, Nathaniel 112, 129, 146
Phipps, John 106
Pierce, XXX 195, 223
Piers/Pierce, Henry 188, 211
Pigott, XXX 189-90, 212
Pike, Peter I (17 F.) 57, 73, 90
Pike, Peter II (17 F.) 159
Pinchion, Phillip 184, 205, 231
Pinnock, Thomas 139, 160
Pitman, John 105, 120-1
Pitson, James 43, 60
Place, Edward 82
Pledger, Augustin 108, 123-4, 140
Pockley, John 55, 72, 96, 113, 130, 148, 172, 209
Polden, Hugh 112, 129, 146, 170
Ponsonby, Henry 226
Ponsonby, John 226, 265
Poole, Joseph 77, 91, 108, 123, 140
Poole, Samuel 55, 71, 89, 106, 121, 138
Pooley, Richard 45-6, 62
Poore/Purden, Nicholas 194
Porter, Samuel 220-1, 235,
Potter, John 199-200
Potter, Matthew 189, 212
Potts, Charles 166
Potts, Samuel 213
Powell, John 244, 265
Powell, Morgan 136, 156
Powell, William 32, 76
Pownall, Henry 53-4, 70, 77, 91-2, 108, 123
Pratt, Samuel 166

Prentice, Ralph 64, 86, 103, 118
Prescott, Daniel 216-17
Preston, Robert 192, 220, 236, 245
Pretty, Henry 146, 191, 192-3, 221, 236, 245, 249, 262
Pretty, Oliver 72, 97, 114, 131
Price, Samuel 137-8, 157
Price, XXX 195, 225
Pride, Thomas I 32, 47, 64, 86, 103, 118
Pride, Thomas II 64, 86, 103, 144-5, 166, 167
Pride, William 64, 103-4, 118, 135, 152-3
Priest, James 43, 60, 84, 101, 116, 133, 151
Prime, Phillip 56, 72, 97, 114, 131, 149, 173
Pritchard, Roger 73
Prive, Thomas 203,
Proctor, Thomas 196
Puckle, Edward 180, 216
Puckle, John 179-80, 199, 207-8, 222, 232, 241
Pugesley,Thomas 128
Purden/Poore, Nicholas 194, 223-4, 264, 267, 269
Purefoy, Arthur 226
Purefoy, William 188, 210-11, 243
Purefoy, XXX 239, 247
Pury, Thomas 48, 167, 168
Pye, John 58-9, 75
Pym, John 71, 89, 106, 121, 138

Quelch, XXX 88, 105, 261
Quick, Thomas 81-2, 93, 109, 142-3

Radford, William 241
Radford, XXX 230, 241, 261
Ramsey, John 110, 125, 142, 163-4
Ramsey, XXX 181
Randall, Thomas 149, 174
Raunce, William 52
Rawdon, George 264, 271
Rawlins, Thomas 52-3, 212-13, 233, 242, 243, 248, 261-2
Rawlins, William 248
Rawson, Francis 125, 142-3, 163
Raymond, James 134
Raymond, Thomas 183, 204
Read, John 183, 204, 229, 240, 269
Read, Robert 48-9, 66, 87, 104, 119, 136
Read, Thomas 48-9, 57, 65, 73, 90, 106, 121, 138, 159
Read, William 46, 62, 79
Reading, John 232, 242, 266
Redman, Daniel 192, 221, 236, 245, 246, 250, 260, 261, 264, 265, 272
Reeves/Ryves, William 182, 210, 215, 228
Rennalds, Thomas 139, 160
Reynolds, John 193, 195, 222, 236, 244, 245, 246, 264
Reynolds/ Rennards, XXX 90, 107
Rhodes/Roades, William 132, 148, 172-3, 258
Rhodes, XXX 158
Rich, Nathaniel 31, 52, 68, 129, 147
Richards, Sir Edward 151
Richards, Solomon 216, 228, 241, 248
Richards, XXX 216-17, 231
Richardson, Edward 188, 211
Richardson, Michael 81-2, 93, 109, 123-4, 142, 147, 163, 171, 253
Richardson, William 127, 143, 164, 165
Rideout, William 199
Rider, Skinner 70
Rigby, XXX 78
Riley, William 138, 158
Rippon, Thomas 57-8, 258
Roades/Rhodes, William 132, 148, 258
Robbins, John 49, 75
Robinson, Edward 258
Robinson, George 82, 94, 111, 128, 150, 175
Robinson, John 80, 97, 114, 132
Robinson, W. 234
Robotham, John 184
Robson, Yaxley 78-9, 92, 109, 124, 141, 162
Rochford, Pyne 204
Rogers, Henry 194, 223-4
Rogers, John I (2 F.) 44,
Rogers, John II (16 F.) 55, 64, 71, 89, 106, 121, 138, 158
Rogers, Wroth 48, 64-5, 108, 123, 205
Rokeby/Rookesby, Richard 44, 54
Rokeby, W. 96, 113
Rolt, Edward 170-1
Rooksby/Rokeby, William 44, 55
Rose/Ross, James 47, 76, 85
Rose, John 244, 265
Rose, Robert 150, 175
Ross/Rose, James 47, 76, 85
Ross, Samuel 48, 64-5, 86, 104
Ross, XXX 82
Rossiter, Edward 175
Rothwell, Henry 139, 160
Round, XXX 210
Rowles, William 250
Ruddock, Andrew 182, 203, 230, 241, 267
Rudlee, John 61, 84, 102, 116
Rudyard, Benjamin 144, 151, 166
Rugeley, John 258
Rugeley, Simon 268
Rugeley, XXX 256
Rumbelow, Thomas 135
Rush, XXX 184
Russell, Robert 185-6, 207
Rutter, Timothy 223
Ryves/Reeves, William 182, 210, 215, 228

Sabberton, Joseph 53, 69, 96, 113, 130
Sadleir, Thomas 21, 181, 186, 202, 205, 207-8, 230, 233, 241, 248, 260
Sadlington, William 137, 157
St. George, George 187, 209, 233, 243, 266
St. George, Oliver 196, 225, 237, 265, 269, 271
St. George, Richard 186, 209, 233, 243, 267, 270
St. George, William 209, 233, 243, 267
Salisbury, Thomas 127
Salkeld, Joseph 47
Salkeld, William 146-7, 170
Salkeld, XXX 172
Salmon, Edward 36, 45, 70, 89, 105, 120, 137, 253
Salmon, Robert 130,
Salt, John 146, 222, 236, 245, 261, 264
Sampson, Richard 209-10
Sanders, William 242,
Sanders, XXX 240
Sanders, William? 119
Sanderson, Henry 80
Sanderson, John 56, 72
Sanderson, XXX 187
Sandford, Theophilus 193, 222-3, 236, 246
Sandys, William 201, 230
Sandys, Sir Thomas 152-3
Sankey, Henry 225
Sandys, John 268
Sankey, Richard 51, 67, 79-80
Saunders, Giles 48
Saunders, Robert I (16 F.) 55, 71
Saunders, Robert II (6 F.) 134
Saunders, Robert III (25 F.) 142
Saunders, Robert IV (4 F.) 179-80, 214, 230
Saunders, Thomas 31, 56, 72, 97, 131, 147, 149, 171
Savage, John 53, 69, 96, 113
Saville, Henry 77
Saville, Hugh 259
Sawrey, Roger 78-9, 92-3, 109, 124, 141, 256
Scarfe, Robert 57, 73, 97
Scarth, Timothy 253
Scott, John 148, 171
Scott, Matthew 137, 156
Scott, Richard 144, 166
Scott, Thomas 80, 92, 108-9, 124, 192-3, 220, 222, 227, 237, 257, 265
Scotten, Edward 52, 68, 95, 112, 129, 146-7, 170
Scrimgeour, Harold 219, 234
Scrope/Scrape, Robert 81-2, 93-4, 109, 125, 143
Scuttle, Thomas 163
Seabrook, Robert 192, 222
Sedacue, George 149, 174
Segrave, Thomas 180, 200, 229
Sergeant, Francis 138, 158
Sexby, Edward 57, 73-4
Seymer, Joseph 123, 140, 161
Seymour, William 133, 152
Shaftoe, Dalston 133, 152
Sharpe, Edward 76-7
Sharpe, Henry 62-3, 85, 102, 107, 117, 132
Sharpe, William 124, 141
Sharpe, XXX 78-9
Shaw, William I (Ireton F.) 205, 231, 235, 242
Shaw, William II (Le Hunt F.) 218
Shaw, William III (11 H.) 235
Shaw, XXX 206-7, 220-1
Sheares, Samuel 236, 246, 250
Sheares/Shoare, XXX 206-7
Sheffield, Edmund 162
Sheffield, Robert 162

Sheffield, Thomas 141, 162
Shelburne, Thomas 15, 191, 192, 221
Shepherd, Edward 203
Shepherd, Nicholas 133, 151
Shepherd, Samuel 200-1, 202, 229
Shepherd, Thomas 201, 230, 261
Shepherdson, Edward 149, 174
Sherlock, Sir John 189-90, 212
Sherman, John 148, 171-2
Sherrard, Phillip 174
Shipden, XXX 77
Shoare/Sheares, XXX 206
Shockley, Abraham 92-3, 109
Shrimpton, Henry 267
Shrimpton, John 46, 63, 102, 117
Sicklemore, James 214
Siddall, William 54, 70
Simpson, John 63, 86
Simpson, Joseph 86, 103, 118
Skelton, XXX 158
Skinner, William 198, 228, 238
Skipper, Christopher 54, 70, 88-9, 105, 120, 137
Skippon, Phillip 54
Slade, Henry 188, 204, 210-11, 260, 263, 267
Sloper, XXX 184-5, 205
Smelt, Leonard 259
Smith, Brian 179, 198, 205, 231, 242, 248
Smith, George 181
Smith, Henry 107, 122, 139
Smith, Isaac 179
Smith, Sir James 161, 162,
Smith, James 167
Smith, Jeremiah 96, 113, 130, 146, 147, 170, 253
Smith, Richard 58, 127
Smith, Robert I (3 F., 12 F.) 45, 61-2, 88, 104, 119, 136-7, 156, 217, 234, 239, 260
Smith, Thomas 179
Smith, William 194, 218
Smith, XXX 211
Smith, XXX 257
Smithson, George 56, 72, 97, 113, 131, 148, 172-3
Smithson, Thomas 148
Smithwick, Henry 187, 210, 260, 263, 267
Smyth, XXX 113, 130
Sontley/Soutley, Roger 67
Sorrell, Thomas 124
Sotherton, XXX 253
Soulton, Thomas 133, 152
Southern, Thomas 93-4, 109, 125, 139, 142-3, 163-4, 253
Southwell, Thomas 223, 227
Southwell, William 220, 235, 245
Southwell, XXX 225
Southwood, Benjamin 118, 134
Southwood, Richard 112, 129, 146
Soutley/Sontley, Roger 67
Sparrow, Robert 193-4
Speening, XXX 233
Spencer, John I (3 H.) 50, 67, 94
Spencer, John II (14 F.) 53-4, 78,
Spencer, John III (1 H.) 128, 145
Spencer, Nicholas 182
Spencer, Peter 216-17
Spencer, Thomas 79, 92, 109, 124, 141, 168
Spencer, XXX 185, 207
Spilman, Thomas 72, 96, 113, 130, 148
Spinage, Anthony 66, 94
Spooner, Abraham 75, 91, 107, 117, 122, 141
Spragg, XXX 166
Squibb, Stephen 213-14
Staffe, William 219
Stamper, Richard 216-17
Stanles, Charles 154
Stanley, Thomas 189, 211, 225
Stannard, Robert 193, 222, 236
Staples, Alexander 181, 202, 208, 232, 266
Staples, John? 242
Stapleton, Arthur 206
Starkey, XXX 258
Stearne, Robert 205, 208, 231, 242
Stevens, John 184, 205, 231
Stevens, Richard 233
Stevens, Sir John 174, 268
Stirling, Francis 172
Stoddard, Amor 32, 55, 71, 96, 113
Stoodley/Woodley, Anthony 190, 218
Stone, William 108, 123, 140
Stone, XXX 59
Stopford, James 199, 245, 257
Straghan, XXX 43, 60, 84, 101
Strange, Joseph 50, 67, 94, 111
Strangeways, James 128, 145, 162, 169
Strangeways, Joseph 73
Strangeways, Thomas 56, 72, 97, 114, 131, 148, 172
Stratton, William 179-80, 199-200
Stratton, XXX 199-200, 229, 239
Street, John 90, 106, 121, 138-9, 159
Streeter, John 136, 156
Strelley, John 193
Stroud, John/Joseph 261, 264
Stubber, Peter 182, 201, 202, 203, 230
Studholme, Cuthbert 59, 75, 134, 153
Stukeley, Sir Thomas 174
Style, John 119, 135, 154
Style, William 48, 64-5, 86-7, 104, 118, 135, 138, 154
Suckett, Robert 135
Sumner, William 73
Sutton, Thomas 55, 71, 89, 106, 121, 138, 158
Swallow, Robert 53, 69, 96, 113, 130, 147
Swanwick, Arthur 189-90, 213-14
Sydenham, John I 80
Sydenham, John II 169
Sydenham, William 44, 117, 134
Sydenham, XXX 183
Sykes, John 76-7, 91
Syler, Edmund 54, 256
Symcock, James 44, 61, 218
Symnell, Thomas 52-3, 69, 96, 113, 130, 147, 171
Symonds, William 44, 60-1, 84
Synott, Jasper/John 221, 268

Talbot, Sir John 169
Talbot, Thomas 17, 76-7, 91, 108, 123, 140, 161
Talbot, XXX 234
Tandy, Thomas 217, 234, 244, 267
Tapp, Edmund 67, 94
Taylor, Anthony 142, 163
Taylor, Dennis 133, 134, 152
Taylor, Gilman 51, 67-8
Taylor, John I (4 F.) 199, 229, 239
Taylor, John II (Saunders' F.) 214
Taylor, Phillip 196, 227
Taylor, Silas 169
Temple, Edmund 30, 246, 250, 265
Tench, John 268
Thelwall, Edward 193-4, 223
Thelwall, Lumley 193
Thickpenny, Leonard 189, 211
Thimbleton, William 124
Thomas, Daniel sen. 232
Thomas, Rice 218
Thomas, XXX 208, 232
Thompson, George 133, 152
Thompson, James 122, 139, 160, 259
Thompson, John 77
Thompson, John 265
Thompson, Richard 256
Thompson, Thomas 109, 125, 142, 163
Thompson, William? 113
Thompson, XXX 130
Thorne/Thorney, XXX 216
Thornhill, Robert 191, 220, 235
Thornhill, William I (Ingoldsby Dr.) 190, 219, 221
Thornhill, William II (Cromwell H.) 221
Thornton/Thorneycroft, Robert 144, 165, 166
Thornton, XXX 253
Thorold, Edward 154
Throckmorton, William 181, 202, 207
Thurston, Thomas 70-1
Tighe, XXX 186
Todd, XXX 181
Tolhurst, Jeremiah 47, 63, 85, 103, 118, 134, 153-4
Toll, Edward 103, 118, 134
Tom, Gregory 134, 152-3
Tomkins, Edward 181
Tomkins, Richard 81-2
Tomlins/Tomkins, Thomas 216, 261-2, 267
Tomlinson, Matthew 52, 68, 96
Tongue, John 127, 134, 153
Tonson, Richard 179, 199-200, 228, 239, 247
Toomes, John 129, 147, 171
Toppendene, John 181
Topping, John 47, 63, 85, 103, 118, 134
Tothill, Robert 185, 206, 215, 218
Townshend, George 180
Townshend, John 81-2, 93
Townshend, XXX 79
Tracey, George 191, 220
Traherne, George 139, 142, 163
Trevers/Travers, Joseph 133-4, 152
Troughton, Isaac 157
Turner, Edward 88, 104, 119, 137, 156, 201-2, 230, 241, 260

Turner, John 131
Turner, William 134, 136, 152
Twigg, Charles 268
Twistleton, George 117, 133, 152-3
Twistleton, Phillip 51, 67, 95, 112, 124, 129, 146
Twogood, George 261-2, 264
Twogood, Sampson 221, 236, 245, 264

Underhill, Samuel 153
Upcott, William 174
Usher, John 186

Venables, Robert 184, 205, 211, 228, 231
Villiers, Edward 153-4
Villiers, John 195, 224
Vincent, Sir Francis 174
Vivian, Hannibal 119, 144, 151, 166, 167

Wade, John 48, 64-6, 87, 104, 127
Wade, Samuel 198, 199-200, 229, 239, 238
Wade, William 179, 198, 228, 239, 247, 266
Wagstaffe, Richard 46, 63, 117, 132, 150, 175
Wakefield, Robert 257-8
Wakeham, John 230, 241, 267
Walcot, Thomas 190, 219, 261
Walker, Thomas 180, 200, 205
Walker, William 181, 202, 208, 232, 241, 248, 261-2,
Waller, Sir Hardress 179, 198, 210, 228, 238, 242, 247, 263
Waller, John 93, 110, 116, 125, 164
Waller/Walters, XXX 200, 228, 261
Wallington, Joseph 52, 68, 95, 112, 129, 146-7
Wallis, Peter 192, 193, 222, 236, 245, 250
Wallis, XXX 192
Walters/Waters, George 206
Walters, William 54, 70, 89, 105, 120-1, 137, 157
Walters, XXX I 54
Walters, XXX II 93
Walters/Waller, XXX 200, 229, 261
Waltham, Thomas 205
Walton, George 76, 91, 108, 123, 140
Walton, Richard 112, 129, 146, 169, 206
Walton, Robert 54, 70
Walton, Valentine 146, 170
Warcup, Edmund 146, 169
Warcup, Robert 152
Ward, Henry 222
Ward, John I (9 F.) 47, 64, 86
Ward, John II (Huncks F.) 183, 204
Ward, Richard 115, 132, 150, 175
Ward, Thomas 70-1, 89, 105, 120, 137, 157
Warden, William 194, 223, 227, 265, 266, 270
Warren, Abel 192, 221, 236, 245, 264
Warren, Edward 192, 221, 236, 244, 245, 249, 264
Warren, John 185, 206
Warren, XXX 218
Washington, Henry 164
Waterhouse, Ralph 148, 163-4
Waters/Walters, George 206
Watkinson, George 56, 72, 97, 114
Watson, Henry 70, 89, 105, 120, 160
Watson, Jeffrey 92, 108-9
Watson, Richard 150
Watson, XXX 257
Watts, William 131, 149, 174
Wayne, Gabriel 97, 114, 131
Weare, Jasper 142, 163
Weare, XXX 102, 116
Webb, Henry 233, 243, 267
Webb, John 182, 203, 216-17
Webb, XXX 209
Webbe, Richard 54, 70, 89, 105
Webster, John 267
Weir, XXX 187
Weldon, Anthony 133, 152
Weldon, George 136, 156
Wells, Thomas 114, 132
Wenham, Charles 265
Wenlock, William 58, 74
Werring, XXX 61
West, Roger I (6 H.) 52, 68
West, Roger II 78, 256
West, Stephen 85, 102, 117, 134, 152-3
Westby, George 105, 120-1, 137, 157
Westby, Henry 55
Westmoreland, Matthias 189, 211
Weston, Richard 215
Weston, XXX 165
Wetmore, John 111, 128, 150, 175
Wetwang, John 57, 72, 97
Whalley, Edward 53, 69, 95, 96, 113, 130
Whalley, Elias 114, 131, 149, 258
Whalley, Henry 95, 245
Whalley, Richard 95, 246
Whalley, XXX 95, 112
Wheatley, William 148, 172-3
Wheeler, Francis 179, 199, 202, 230, 241, 248
Whetham, Nathaniel 144, 165
Whetham, Nathaniel jun. 149, 174
Whichcott, Christopher 126
Whitby, Nicholas 78, 92, 108, 124, 126
White, Francis 43, 60, 84, 101
White, Stephen 51, 65, 67, 77, 87, 104, 112, 119
White, Thomas 60, 84, 101, 116, 133, 138, 151
White, William 133, 151
White, XXX 257
Whitehead, Richard 166
Whitelock, James 129, 220, 223, 235
Whiting, Nathaniel/Nicholas 213
Whitley, Roger 168
Whittle, Henry 180, 200, 215
Widdrington, Lord 153-4
Widdrington, Edward 154
Widenham, John 198, 228
Wiggan, John 78, 92, 109, 116, 125, 133
Wilkes, Anthony 75, 90, 107, 122, 139
Wilkes, Timothy 48, 65, 87, 104, 119, 136, 155
Wilkes, XXX 211
Wilkinson, Francis 56, 97, 114, 131, 148, 172-3
Wilkinson, Phillip 147, 171
Wilkinson, Robert 198, 228
Wilkinson, William 55, 71, 89, 106, 121, 138, 158
Willersley, William 201
Williams, Rice 124
Williams, Richard 58, 74, 122
Williams, William 232, 242
Williams, XXX 187-8
Williamson, Edward 93
Willoughby, Thomas 131, 153
Willoughby, XXX 97, 114
Wilmore, Nathaniel 205
Wilmot, Peter 147, 171
Wilson, Ralph 179, 198, 228, 238, 265, 269
Winsmore, Richard 145, 169
Winter, Edward 168
Winthrop, John/Fitzroy 106, 121,138-9, 159
Winthrop, Stephen 32, 50, 67, 94, 111
Wintour, Robert 123, 140, 161
Wisdom, Richard 54, 70, 89, 105, 120, 137, 157-8
Wise, Samuel 87, 104, 119
Wise, Samuel 261
Witter, Joseph 58, 74, 90, 106, 122, 139, 160
Wood, Thomas 219
Woodcock, John 185, 206
Woodcock, Sir Thomas 167
Woodley/Stoodley, Anthony 190, 219
Woodward, Benjamin 213, 233, 241, 262, 266
Woodward, Thomas 125, 142, 163
Woolf, Edward 183-4,
Worsley, Charles 77-8, 92
Wray, Sir Christopher 174
Wrench, XXX 78-9
Wrenn, Thomas 190, 219, 235
Wright, James I (14 H.) 97, 114, 131
Wright, James II (3 H.) 169
Wright, John I (9 H.) 69, 96, 113, 130
Wright, John II (14 H.) 97
Wright, Thomas 101, 126, 143
Wright, Thomas II (Fleetwood F.) 242
Wright, XXX 259
Wycliffe, John 148, 172-3
Wynn, Robert 216

Yardley, Anthony 146, 169
Yardley, Richard 143, 164
Yardley, William 106, 121, 138, 159
Yardley, XXX 73-4,
Yates, Roger 192-3, 221
York, Duke of 168, 169
Young, Arthur 45, 79-80, 93, 109
Young, Francis 138, 159
Young, John 137, 157

Zanchy, Jerome 191, 192, 220, 235, 244, 249, 262
Zanchy, Richard 191